Her Majesty's army, Indian and colonial forces
Richards, Walter.
London : H. Virtue and company, limited, [189-?]

Find this Book Online: https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Public Domain

We have determined this work to be in the public domain, meaning that it is not subject to copyright. Users are free to copy, use, and redistribute the work in part or in whole. It is possible that current copyright holders, heirs or the estate of the authors of individual portions of the work, such as illustrations or photographs, assert copyrights over these portions. Depending on the nature of subsequent use that is made, additional rights may need to be obtained independently of anything we can address.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT

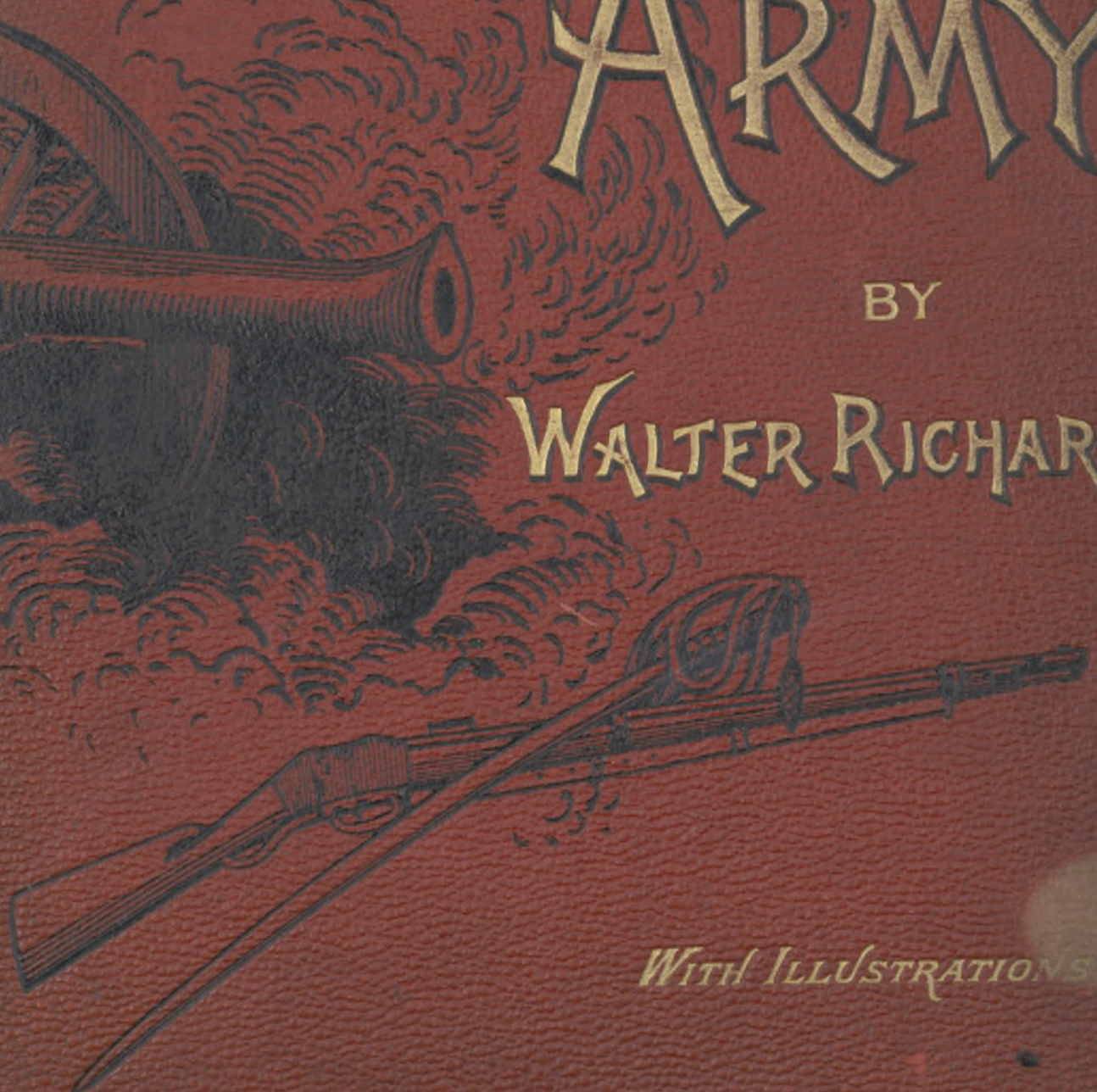
Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

HER MAJESTY'S ARMY.

B 336715

BY

WALTER RICHARDS



WITH ILLUSTRATIONS

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

In Memory of
STEPHEN SPAULDING
1907 – 1925
CLASS of 1927
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

HER MAJESTY'S ARMY

INDIAN AND COLONIAL FORCES

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S BODY-GUARD,

CALCUTTA.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

HER MAJESTY'S INDIAN AND COLONIAL FORCES

11th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY.

LONDON: J. S. VIRTUE & CO., LIMITED.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

HER MAJESTY'S ARMY

INDIAN AND COLONIAL FORCES

A DESCRIPTIVE ACCOUNT

OF THE

VARIOUS REGIMENTS NOW COMPRISING THE QUEEN'S FORCES IN INDIA AND THE COLONIES

BY

WALTER RICHARDS

With Coloured Illustrations

LONDON
J. S. VIRTUE & CO., LIMITED
294, CITY ROAD AND 26, IVY LANE

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

LONDON:
PRINTED BY J. S. VIRTUE AND CO., LIMITED,
CITY ROAD.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Introduction	1
West Indian Regiments	6
Indian Army. General Description	13
Bengal Cavalry	48
Bengal Artillery and Engineers	83
Bengal Infantry. Introductory	87
History of Bengal Infantry Regiments	96
Madras Army. Introductory	127
Madras Cavalry, Artillery, and Engineers	134
Madras Infantry	139
Bombay Army. Introductory	164
Bombay Cavalry	165
Bombay Artillery and Engineers	172
Bombay Infantry Regiments	173
Military Forces of Canada. Introductory	189
Lower Canadian Rebellion and Fenian Inroads	208
Red River Campaign	213
North-West Rebellion of 1885	217
Composition of Canadian Army	233
South African Forces. Introductory	283
Cape Mounted Rifles	288
South African Forces. General Description	300
Australasian Forces	331
New South Wales Forces	332
Victorian Forces	333
Queensland Forces	334
South Australian Forces	334
Western Australian Forces	335
New Zealand Forces	335

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

PAGE

TASMANIAN FORCES 336
COLONIAL CADETS 337
EARLY TROUBLES IN AUSTRALIA 339
NEW SOUTH WALES CONTINGENT 348
GROWTH OF VICTORIAN FORCES 352
SERVICES OF NEW ZEALAND MILITARY FORCES 355
WAR IN NEW ZEALAND 355
VARIOUS COLONIAL CORPS 370
KNIGHTS OF MALTA 370
MILITARY HISTORY OF MALTA 370
CONCLUSION 372

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

		PAGE
The Governor-General's Body Guard (Calcutta)	*Frontispiece*	
The 11th Bengal Native Infantry	*Vignette*	
The West India Regiment	*Facing Page*	6
The 13th Bengal Lancers	„	66
The 15th Sikhs	„	107
The 3rd Goorkhas	„	118
The 1st Madras Pioneers	„	142
The Bombay Artillery	„	172
The Halifax Garrison Artillery	„	193
The 6th Regiment of Cavalry (Hussars, Canada)	„	245
The 2nd Queen's Own Rifles (Canada)	„	251
The 5th Royal Scots of Canada (Montreal)	„	257
The Cape Mounted Rifles	„	288
The 1st Battalion (West Melbourne) Victoria Infantry	„	333
The Victorian Mounted Rifles	„	353
The Victorian Artillery	„	354

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE

INDIAN AND COLONIAL FORCES

OF

HER MAJESTY'S ARMY.

ONE of the happiest answers recorded of living statesmen was that in which a well known minister recommended to an alarmed interrogator "the study of large maps." The danger which seems so imminent, so ominous, when we read about it in a newspaper article or in the report of a speech, grows reassuringly distant when considered through the medium of a good sized chart. Somewhat converse to this, it will be found, is the map influence on our views of British Possessions. Expressed in print the figures or dimensions, from being trite and common form, have come to be but imperfectly realized, to be looked upon, in fact, as little more than algebraical symbols. But a glance at a map of the world, in which Her Majesty's Dominions are distinguished by a uniform colour, makes the magnitude of those Dominions at once evident and impressive. We look in vain for a quarter of the globe where the Imperial blazon is not; here an island, there a stretch of continent; on this side a frowning impregnable fortress, on that the wide expanse of virgin forest or the limitless stretch of fertile, unbroken plain. From the contemplation of these vast tracks let us cast our eyes quickly back to the tiny sea-girt isles, washed by the four seas which surround them, marked the British Isles, with an area of some 89,000 square miles, and reflect that from them have come the men who have conquered or colonized nearly *nine million* square miles of the earth's surface, comprising a sixth of the habited portion of the globe! A just pride may well be ours, and with that pride must ever be a growing shame and marvel that there should be found in our midst men who set slight store on this fair heritage, and with sickening cynicism profess to care not if it pass from our hands. Men worthy of their country's pride of place and of the sires who have made that country what she is, are they who picture—and strive to make the picture a reality—in no far future a

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

mighty Empire, with aims and interests in common, with one central seat of Government, with one Sovereign supreme over all, and with the local freedom, inseparable from the character of British subjects, fostered and strengthened for the weal of all.

Though our task is to sketch the histories of the local forces in India and the Colonies, it is impossible to give due emphasis to their importance without considering them first in their relation to the Empire as a whole, and as factors whose action has produced, as it ever must, results wider than its apparent sphere. For many years this wider action was scarcely perceptible. The raw native levies who fought by the side of the Fusiliers of Bengal and Madras, in the early history of British India, seemed entirely and exclusively local; the volunteer bands which in Canada and South Africa, in Australia and New Zealand fought against Frenchmen or natives, fought in a way as it seemed for their own hand. Yet these men were but the progenitors of the Native Cavalry that charged with Drury Lowe at Kassassin, of the Canadian Corps which fought side by side with the British Army in the Crimea, and gave such priceless aid in the passage of the Nile; of the Cape levies whose worth was shown in the savage Zulu War; of the stalwart contingent from New South Wales who earned such deserved praise in Egypt.

The period of isolated interests, if it ever in truth existed, may be said to have ceased; there are not wanting those who foretell that whenever Great Britain is engaged in war her sons from afar will fight, side by side with Sikh and Goorkhas in the ranks of the Queen's Army. The echo of

> "The cry to shame us
> 'So loyal is too costly,'"

is heard now only from those moral Acherons whence come by fits the cant of the pseudo cosmopolitan, the whine of political Stigginses, the howls of demagogues and the self assertive shriek of unscrupulous place hunters.

Amongst those who have made our Empire what it is, amongst those whose brave hearts and strong arms will aid in keeping it what it is, to whom we shall look—as they to us—when danger threatens the one or the other, are the Indian and Colonial Forces of Her Majesty's Army.

They offered the sword with one hand, but order and good government with the other, and hence they never had to fight a united people. It has been well said that at no period of the world's history, previous to the settlement of the Queen's Colonial Empire, has so large a portion of this earth been preserved from the horrors of war as has been sheltered from it by the rule of the British Empire. "How many of the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

250,000,000 in India have ever seen a shot fired in anger? How long is it since England has been invaded? How often has there been fighting in Canada? Where can you find a record of war between Europeans in Australia or New Zealand? And when we compare the answers with what can be said of Spain, France, Germany, Italy, Austria, and Russia, you will see that in the past the preservation of peace has been one of the greatest functions which has been fulfilled by the British Empire."

An examination such as we have referred to of that map of the world on which British territories—to use the term in a wide and untechnical sense—are shown, will suggest to us the necessity of recalling how and when these plots of land, with which to all appearance the small isle of Great Britain can have nothing to do, passed beneath her sway, and added fresh lustre to the glories of a Crown which long ago had been justly called Imperial.

We shall glance then at India, at Canada, at Australia, Victoria, New Zealand and the South African possessions. We shall notice too the smaller possessions of the British Crown, involving, as their notice will, an account of some of the best known and valued of the Colonial Forces.

A well known writer* describes very clearly the growth of the Colonial Empire, and the causes of that growth. As might be expected, he makes short work of the view that wars are caused by kingly ambition, holding the teaching of the Shelley-esque couplet that

> "War is a game that, were their subjects wise,
> Kings would not play at,"

to be misleading, to use the mildest expression. "If wars," he writes "were caused solely by the ambition of kings, we should find most wars when kings had most power. But how do you account for the fact that the times of the Tudors and Stuarts, when the kings had great power, were on the whole peaceful, while the times of Edward III. and Henry V., and of George I. and George II., when Parliament had very great power, so great, in fact, that the kings could not make war for a moment unless they could get Parliament to grant them supplies, were both times of war?

"Perhaps you will say that it was the ambition of the nobles and gentlemen. Facts answer that this was not the case. During a great part of this time the landowners had not the chief power in directing the policy of the Government. Indeed they opposed the war, and the advocates of fighting were the Whigs, who rested for support on the merchants and middle classes."

* Cyril Ransome.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

It would, indeed, be difficult to better describe the nature and origin of our Colonial Empire than in Mr. Ransome's words.

"Our present Colonies, excluding India, may be arranged under three heads.

"The first of these includes:—

(1.) The North American Colonies, of which the chief is Canada.

(2.) The West Indies, of which Jamaica is a type.

(3.) The South African Colonies, of which the Cape of Good Hope is the most important.

(4.) The Australian Colonies, in company with which we generally think of New Zealand.

"These are all Colonies to which emigration is more or less desirable.

"Next come a group of trading stations, scattered all over the world, often in very unhealthy places, where merchants settle for a time for purposes of trade. Such are Lagos on the west coast of Africa, and Hong-Kong in China.

"Thirdly, we have a class of positions which are neither Colonies for emigration nor settlements for trade.

"Our Colonies are like portions of a great army stationed many miles from one another; and it is, therefore, necessary to keep up their communications with the main body or mother country by means of a number of connecting links. Moreover, it is not thought well that ships should have to sail far without coming to some friendly port where they could escape the pursuit of an enemy, repair the damages done by storm, or replenish their stock of coal. Such links are the Isle of St. Helena, off the coast of South Africa, which was of great importance to us when the Dutch had the Cape of Good Hope; and Mauritius, at the other side of Africa, in the Indian Ocean. Then, on the road to India, we hold Gibraltar, at the entrance of the Mediterranean; Malta, Cyprus, Aden at the mouth of the Red Sea, the Island of Socotra, and the Seychelles. Beyond India, on the way to the Pacific, we hold Singapore; and on the other side of the world, near Cape Horn, we have the Falkland Islands, and a variety of other places of smaller importance in different parts of the ocean." Well may the writer ask with wonder if it is really contended that we have nothing to show for our National Debt. "Nothing to show for the National Debt! It is the price we pay for the largest Colonial Empire the world has ever seen." He then proceeds to summarize the results of our great wars on the Colonial Empire. This was the position at the close of William's wars:

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"The French and Spanish Colonies were not joined. Our Colonies were quite safe. We annexed what is now called Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, and secured Newfoundland. We acquired Gibraltar and Minorca in the Mediterranean. We gained a monopoly of the slave-trade, and the right to send one ship a year to trade with the Spanish Colonies.

"When the Seven Years' War terminated we found that we had gained Florida, the southern boundary of the English Colonies; the opportunity for our Colonies to spread inland, Grenada, St. Vincent, Dominica and Tobago, sugar islands in the West Indies."

The next great epoch of fighting was caused by the excesses of revolutionary France, and from the years of war in which we were engaged, Mr. Ransome points out that we emerged substantial gainers of "a new Colonial Empire, and a large dependency in Asia as well." The first part of the war gave us Trinidad, Ceylon, and Malta; in the second we secured Tobago, St. Lucia, the Isle of France, the Cape of Good Hope, Demerara, Essequibo, and Berbice.

Throughout the accounts of every acquisition and every conquest will be noticeable one dominant factor. What this was can be described as "stubborn audacity." But here and there from the writings of historians and masters of language we meet with phrases which describe far better than any exact verbal definition the characteristic which has placed the Empire where it is. "Nothing," wrote Napier, in describing the battle of Albuera, "could stop that astonishing infantry." "Then was seen," wrote the same brilliant historian, "with what enduring majesty the Anglo-Saxon fights." "But Clive pressed on through thunder and lightning and rain to the gates of Arcot." So wrote Macaulay of one of the most brilliant and resultful of military exploits. The saying that the English never know when they are beaten is exactly descriptive of the quality to which they owe the Colonial Empire of to-day; small wonder is it then that the sons of England who have their homes in those lands which the valour of their fathers won in times past should have military records of their own, the interest of which should reach a far larger circle than those who chance to be personally interested in the respective localities. But this argument, it may be urged, does not extend to India. Here the military forces though commanded by British officers are native; their traditions, if such are to be taken into account, are hostile rather than friendly to the ruling Power; they, too, can boast of great deeds in days gone by, before the masterful Anglo-Saxon took the lordship into his own hands. That this is so is undoubted, but the fact proves not only the pre-eminent power of conquest inherent in the British race, but the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

still more marvellous attribute of welding to their interest, of uniting with themselves, the valour of conquered races in such a way that the sting of conquest loses its effect, and victors and vanquished—each with a proud record of a glorious past—present to the world a spectacle of a loyal Empire and of a mighty army, imbued at once with the truest *camaraderie* and a chivalrous emulation in military prowess.

Before, however, we deal with the Indian troops, two forces which are borne on the English establishment claim mention. These are the West India Regiments—ranking at the head of all the Colonial forces of the Crown—and the Royal Malta Fencible Artillery.*

The First West India Regiment † is the first of the extraneous military bodies which are included on the establishment. It would be an uncalled-for reflection upon other dead and gone regiments to describe the West India Regiments as instances of the "survival of the fittest," but as a fact they are the only representatives of a goodly number of Colonial corps which were at one time borne on the Home Estimates. The 1st West India Regiment is fortunate in having an able and painstaking eulogist in the person of Major Ellis, whose interesting work gives an exhaustive review of the regiment.‡ The origin of the 1st West India might be sought for in two earlier corps—the South Carolina Regiment and Malcolm's (or the Royal) Rangers—raised respectively in 1779 and 1795, the latter only a few months before it was incorporated into the regiment now under notice. The 1st West India Regiment, as at present constituted, date from the middle of 1795, though they may well claim a heritage in the brave deeds and traditions of their predecessors; "the bravery of the West Indian soldier in action has often been tested," says Major Ellis, "and as long as an officer remains alive to lead not a man will flinch. His favourite weapon is the bayonet, and the principal difficulty with him in action is to hold him back, so anxious is he to close with his enemy." The history of the 1st West India proves that this is no mere friendly hyperbole, but an accurate statement of an admitted fact. The South Carolina Regiment fought in 1779 at Briar Creek; at the defence of Stono Ferry they were with the troops under Colonel Maitland that so splendidly held the position against the forces of Samuel Lincoln. Later on they served in the defence of the Savannah, and under Captain Henry were specially mentioned for their gallant defence of an important redoubt. In this

* The history of the Malta Force will be dealt with later on.

† The First West India Regiment bear as badge the letters "W. I." with the number (1), with the Carolina Laurel —though the latter is not authorized. On the colours are "Dominica," "Martinique," "Guadaloupe," "Ashantee." The uniform is that of the Algerian Zouaves—scarlet with white facings. The motto is that of the Garter.

‡ "History of the First West India Regiment"; A. B. Ellis. Chapman & Hall.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

WEST INDIA REGIMENT.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

exploit a hundred men were engaged, of which the South Carolina Regiment supplied fifty-four: Captain Henry was wounded, and four were killed. The following year they took part in the siege and capture of Charlestown, and in the famous defence of Fort "Ninety-Six" in 1781, advancing to the relief of Colonel Brown at Rugely Mills.

In 1781 the whole regiment were transferred into dragoons, in which capacity they did good service, though on one occasion some forty of their number were surprised and taken prisoners. After the battle of Eutaw Springs they went to Jamaica, and in 1782 were disbanded. Several of the regiment, however, retained their corporate character, and for the next few years were known as the "Black Corps of Dragoons, Pioneers, and Artificers," and under this name fought at Martinique, Trois Rivieres, Fort Bourbon, St. Lucia, and Guadaloupe. Malcolm's Royal Rangers, the other parent of the 1st West India, came into being probably in February or March, 1795, being raised by Captain Malcolm, who had achieved considerable repute as the organizer and commander of a body of riflemen. The following April saw the Rangers actively employed in the operations under General Stewart in St. Lucia. They had four days' severe fighting against the forces of Victor Hugues, and, as showing how hotly they were engaged, it may be observed that they lost no fewer than forty-eight out of the total of a hundred and twenty-one—the number of the regiment engaged.

Interesting as Major Ellis has made the "ancestral" history of the 1st West India, it is with that regiment itself that we have to deal, and we are unable to linger on the accounts of the struggles in St. Vincent and elsewhere, and must needs pass on to May, 1804, when the 1st West India Regiment had absorbed into their ranks the Carolina Corps and Malcolm's Royal Rangers, and found in the defence of Dominica against the French the opportunity of gaining the first "distinction" for their yet virgin colours. By means of a stratagem, the French fleet, consisting of ten vessels, having on board 4,600 soldiers, were enabled to effect their anchorage unopposed, and in the early morning began to disembark the troops. Captain O'Connell, with a company of the 1st West India and two of the 46th Regiment, occupied Point Michell, where the enemy concentrated his forces. "The attack commenced about 5 A.M. Four times the enemy were led to the assault, and as many times they were repulsed. At about 6.30 A.M. the remainder of the 46th and some local Militia arrived, and the struggle continued; but not without loss on our side, Major Nunn and Captain O'Connell, 1st West India Regiment, being wounded, the former mortally, and four men killed." Captain O'Connell, subsequently, "after a continued march of four days,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

through an exceedingly difficult country, during which that brave officer did not leave behind even one of his wounded men," effected a junction with the troops at Fort Rupert, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Broughton of the regiment; the enemy retired, and the House of Assembly at Dominica passed resolutions, under which a monument was erected to the memory of Major Nunn, and a sword of honour presented to Captain O'Connell. The next active service of the regiment was in 1807, when they formed part of General Bowyer's force for the reduction of the Danish West Indian islands, St. John, St. Thomas, and St. Croix, all of which, however, capitulated without resistance. In 1808, under Colonel Blackwell, three companies of the regiment, with some Marines, chased the French out of the island of Marie-Galante, pursuing them for five days and nights, "having during that period had four engagements with the enemy, in each of which the latter was repulsed and obliged to make most precipitate retreats, leaving behind him arms, ammunition, &c., at every different post that had been attacked." The officers of the regiment employed on this brilliant service, besides Colonel Blackwell, were Captains Cassidy and Winkler, and Lieutenant Nixon, and "on this occasion was captured the Drum Major's Staff of the French 26th Regiment, still in the possession of the First West India." Their next achievement was the conquest of Martinique, in 1809, under General Becknill, their own commander being Colonel Tolley; they fought at Morne, Bruno, and Surirey, and took an active and glorious part in the assault and capture of Fort Bourbon, receiving high praise from the General commanding, and "in token of their services, being permitted to retain two brass side-drums and five battle-axes which they had captured from the enemy." The following year they fought at Guadaloupe, and particularly distinguished themselves in the affair at the bridge of Vozière, Captain H. Downie of the regiment being mentioned in dispatches for his conspicuous gallantry. In 1814 they took part in the expedition against New Orleans, suffering intensely from the terrible weather that prevailed, and which proved vastly more fatal than the bullets of the enemy. The failure of the expedition is matter of history, and it would be useless to dwell upon the causes of such failure. It is sufficient for our present purpose to note that "the two West Indian Regiments (the 1st and 5th) distinguished themselves by their desperate valour, so much so, indeed, as to win encomiums from the American General Jackson," and that "Lieutenants Dalomel and McKenzie, the only remaining (unwounded) officers of the regiment with the Expedition, were publicly thanked for the courage they had displayed." They were employed a few months later in the third invasion of Guada-

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

loupe, to the successful issue of which they greatly contributed, fortunately without any loss, though in the desultory fighting which took place with the banditti, before the island was completely pacified, several men were killed and wounded. They were actively engaged in the formidable slave revolts in Barbadoes, in 1816, and in similar service in Demerara, in 1823, on both of which occasions they elicited warm thanks and praise from the authorities. In 1831 they were engaged in the Barra war, fighting against the warlike Mandingoes, and in the latter part of the following year a detachment under Lieutenant Montgomery was dispatched against the Acoos, a marauding tribe, who had caused some trouble in the Sherbro territory. In 1837 some slaves, who been injudiciously enlisted, attempted a mutiny, which, however, was not—though it might well have been—serious, and only showed up in clear relief the loyalty of the properly constituted regiment. In 1848, a detachment was sent against the rebellious king of Appollonia; the service was arduous and dangerous, and the Lieutenant-Governor in his dispatch wrote: "I cannot speak too highly of the detachment of the 1st West India Regiment." In 1848, they were sent to Honduras, to protect British interests which were imperilled by an internecine feud; and the same year, Captain Powell, with a detachment of about fifty men, acted as escort to the Lieutenant-Governor on his mission to Coomassie, which, before very many years had passed, they were to approach on another and less peaceful errand. In 1853, Lieutenant-Colonel O'Connor, the Commander of the regiment, being Governor of the Gambia, a detachment of the regiment under Captain Murray took part in the storming of the town of Sappajee, which was in the possession of some malcontent natives; and in September the following year, Lieutenant Strachan and Ensign Anderson, with some fifty-six men of the regiment, served in the expedition against Christiansberg.

In 1855 the 1st West India were engaged in an expedition differing fatally from the comparatively harmless undertakings in which for many years they had been employed. Owing to the utterly incomprehensible action of the acting governor of Sierra Leone, a force of 150 men only were dispatched against the King of Malagrah, despite the urgent representations of Captain D'Oyley Fletcher, who was to command, and who pointed out that on the former occasion 400 men had been found by no means too strong a force. Incredible though it may seem, the acting governor overruled these objections, insinuated that Captain Fletcher was actuated by fears for his personal safety (!), and finally peremptorily ordered the force he had mentioned to embark. Accordingly 69 men of the 1st West India Regiment, and a rather larger number of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the 3rd embarked, the officers of the 1st being Captain Fletcher and Lieutenants Strachan and Wylie. The result amply proved the justice of Captain Fletcher's misgivings. The little force was attacked by overwhelming numbers, the ship which conveyed them was deficient in rockets and shells, and despite the utmost courage on the part of soldiers and seamen alike, the expedition resulted in disaster. They fought their way back—such of them as survived—to the shore, and found there that their misfortunes had scarcely commenced. "The tide having fallen, the one boat available was lying out near the entrance of the creek, separated by an expanse of reeking mud from the shore. The men, seeing their last chance of safety cut off, threw themselves into the mud, in which many sank and were no more seen. Some few, however, succeeded in floundering along, half wading, half swimming, until they reached her and climbed in. She was, however, so riddled with bullets that she filled and sank almost immediately. Captain Fletcher, Lieutenant Wylie, Lieutenant Strachan, and Lieutenant Vincent (2nd West India), with some 30 men, endeavoured to make a last stand upon a small islet of mud and sand, near the left bank of the creek; but Lieutenant Wylie was shot dead almost at once, and Lieutenant Vincent, being shot through the body, jumped into the water to endeavour to swim to the ship. In a few seconds seventeen men had fallen out of this devoted band, and the survivors, plunging into the creek, swam down towards the river. The natives lined the banks in crowds, keeping up a heavy fire upon the men in the water; and Captain Fletcher and Lieutenant Strachan, who were the last to leave the shore, only reached the ship by a miracle, they having to swim more than half a mile to reach her." The result of this untoward attempt to the 1st West India was that 38 men were killed and 3 wounded, besides Lieutenant Wylie who was killed. It is satisfactory to learn that the acting governor was deprived of his post, severely reprimanded, and suspended from his other official duties. About the same time Colonel O'Connor, with Lieutenants Luke and Henderson, led a party of soldiers against the Mandingoes in Sabbajee, and encountered some very severe opposition. The resistance of the rebels was most determined, and the small force at the disposal of Colonel O'Connor were glad to avail themselves of the assistance of a detachment of French soldiers, placed at their disposal by the governor at Goree. Finally the town of Sabbajee was stormed at the point of the bayonet, and the rebellion crushed, not, however, without some loss to our troops.

Similar expeditions against insurgent tribes occupied the attention of the regiment for many years, amongst the more important being what Major Ellis calls the "Baddiboo

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

War of 1860-1." Six companies of the 1st West India under Colonel Murray were engaged in this, and arrived in the Swarra Cunda Creek in February, 1861. Here again the savage warriors were discovered to be no contemptible foemen, evincing not only courage, but strategy of no mean order. Shortly after the landing had with difficulty been accomplished, a force of some three hundred cavalry made a determined charge upon our men, who were hurriedly formed in square to receive them. So effective was the fire that, with one exception, the charge achieved nothing. "This one exception was that of a group of three men of the 1st West India Regiment and two men of the 2nd, who, having advanced too far in pursuit, had become separated from their comrades, and on the sudden appearance of the cavalry had not time to reach any of the squares. They stood back to back surrounded by the enemy, until overwhelmed by force of numbers and ridden down; being afterwards found lying where they had stood, surrounded by eleven dead Mandingoes whom they had shot or bayoneted." In 1863 the regiment was engaged in the second Ashanti War, with a result that they suffered most severely from the climate, half the officers and at least a tenth of the men having died or become completely invalided without exchanging a shot with the enemy. The rebellion in Jamaica in 1865 has, from being made a party cry, become familiar to most; it is therefore only necessary to say that to the 1st West India Regiment was principally due the fact that a rebellion which bid fair to surpass in its atrocities that in India was checked with comparatively little loss. As reflecting more immediately upon the credit due to the men of the regiment, we cannot forbear to quote Major Ellis's pregnant statement:— "The fidelity of the black soldiers of the 1st West India Regiment could hardly have been put to a more severe test. Nine-tenths of these men were Jamaicans born and bred, and in the work of suppressing the rebellion they were required to hang, capture, and destroy the habitations of, not only their countrymen and friends, but in many instances of their near relatives. Yet in no single case did any man hesitate to obey orders, nor was the loyalty of any one soldier ever a matter for doubt." Amongst others who were victimised by the "Exeter Hall party" in England for their share in saving the lives of their countrymen were Ensign Cullen and Surgeon Morris of the regiment. At the courtmartial by which the charges against them were examined, "it is needless to say that both were acquitted." After an uneventful sojourn on the West Coast of Africa for a few years a detachment of the regiment greatly distinguished itself in the defence of Orange Walk, British Honduras, which was attacked by a strong

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

body of Indians, the garrison numbering thirty-eight and the enemy being at least five times as many. Numerous and admirable were the instances of individual heroism during the attack. Space, however, forbids us to do more than refer to the high praise which those engaged received from the Commander-in-chief in a letter which was directed to be published in General Orders.*

We now come to the war which earned for the 1st West India the latest distinction on their colours, the Ashanti War of 1873-4. On the 29th of December, 1873, the regiment, numbering 575 strong, disembarked at Cape Coast, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Maxwell. While honour has been given unstintingly and justly to the British Regiments engaged in the war, sufficient attention is not always paid to the unobtrusive yet priceless service rendered by the West India Regiments. So great was the difficulty in obtaining carriers that the "23rd Regiment was even re-embarked. Sir Garnet Wolseley in this emergency called upon the West India Regiments, saying that the fate of the expedition was hanging in the balance, and in response to his appeal they both volunteered to carry supplies, in addition to their arms, accoutrements, and ammunition." Even after this difficulty had been in a measure surmounted, the duty imposed on the Regiment, though troublesome and important to the highest degree, did not bring them into open collision with the enemy. To them was entrusted the "holding of the detached ports from the Prah to the front, keeping open the communications, protecting the convoys, and constantly furnishing patrols and escorts, yet they felt it rather hard to have been deprived in their solitary field for distinguishing themselves, of the honours of fighting beside their European comrades at Amoaful and Ordahsu." Eight officers, including Colonel Maxwell, died from the effects of the deadly climate, and eight others were invalided. Meanwhile, others of the Regiment were employed at Orange Walk, where only the firmness of Captain White prevented an attack by the Indians, and in the following year they found plenty of active employment in quelling the disturbances in Sherborough. Since that time they have had no warfare of importance, but the position they occupy and the character of their surroundings compel them to act up to the motto, which their splendid record might well entitle them to claim as their own "Ready, aye ready."

The 2nd West India Regiment probably originated in Myers's Regiment

* Lieutenant Smith, who commanded, was ordered to be promoted to a company in the 97th; Surgeon Edge received a step in promotion; Sergeant Belizario, the distinguished conduct medal and an annuity of £10; Lance-Corporals Spencer and Stirling, the same medal and promotion to corporals; Privates Hoffer, Maxwell, Osborne, Murray, Morris, and Tell, commendation for good conduct.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of Foot, which is mentioned in the "Monthly Return" for September, 1795, as stationed at Martinique. The subsequent movements and achievements of the Regiment are the same in many cases as those of the 1st West India. They fought at Sherborough; at Sabbajee in 1853 under Captain Anderson; at Christiansborg, where their detachment was under Captain Mockler; at Melageah under Captain Rookes; Lieutenant Vincent of the Regiment was with the ill-fated expedition against Melageah in 1855 and was severely wounded. In June of the same year a party under Lieutenant Davis had a sharp encounter with the Mandingoes under Fodi Osumann, in which Lieutenant Davis lost his arm, and in the subsequent fighting they shared with the 1st West India the perils and honours of the siege of Sabbajee. In 1859 Captain Hill of the Regiment commanded one of the columns despatched against Kambia on the great Scarcies River, and in 1861 led four companies of the 2nd West India in the Baddiboo War. A detachment of about 180 took part in the Ashanti Expedition of 1864, and in 1867 a party under Lieutenant Bolton of the 1st West India was despatched to Mumford on the Gold Coast, to quell a disturbance which was assuming threatening proportions. In the Ashanti War of 1873-4 they were somewhat more actively engaged than their comrades of the 1st, "portions of the regiment having been" (to quote the language of Sir G. Wolseley's General Order) "in every affair in the war," and having invariably gained great credit for their courage and endurance. One instance of individual courage we may venture to quote.

"When it was reported that the Ashanti army had retired across the Prah, two soldiers of the 2nd West India Regiment volunteered to go on alone to the river and ascertain if the report were true. On their return they reported all clear to the Prah, and said they had written their names on a sheet of paper and posted it up. Six days later the paper was found as they had said. This voluntary act took place at a most critical time, when our forces had been repulsed, our influence seemed tottering, and our allies were in a panic—"It was under such circumstances as these that these two men advanced nearly sixteen miles into [to them] an unknown tract of solitary forest, to follow up an enemy that never spared life, and whose whereabouts was doubtful."

Since the Ashanti War no service calling for notice has fallen to the lot of the 2nd West India Regiment.

Let us now turn to India.

For a thorough knowledge of the position Her Majesty holds as Empress of India it will be necessary to go back to those old times of fierce warfare and savage reprisals

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

through which, holding their own through good report and evil report, the British armies wrested from the native princes the fairest domain on earth. But though it is necessary to glance at these times, anything like a continuous account of the various stages by which this pre-eminence was won would be impossible, and needless were it possible. There are probably few portions of the earth's surface whose history has been so persistently chronicled from all points of view and by writers of all shades of opinion as has the Indian Peninsula. But it is doubtful whether much more than a very vague idea of eastern potentates leading lives of irresponsible power in an atmosphere redolent of sensuous luxury or reeking with barbaric carnage—of wild herds of fanatical religionists in whose creed murder and extirpation were sure passports to a lustful heaven—of red gold and dazzling jewels heaped in bewildering splendour, and changing hands with each rapid rotation of the whirligig of time—of British heroism far outshining all that romance could dream or history tell—of massacres and rescues, of vengeance culminating gradually in a contented Empire under a British Empress of India—whether aught more than such scraps of knowledge as these is not totally excluded from the average knowledge of nine out of ten people who yet profess a fair familiarity with the history of India. Yet when it is remembered that previous to its occupation by the British the dominant power for the time being in India possessed authority, force, and wealth, which rendered it a bye-word amongst the nations; that, with perhaps one exception, the native races are warlike and courageous to a degree; that their numbers, compared with the conquering force, seem a realistic parallel of Gulliver and Lilliput, and that though there were internecine differences of religion yet all joined in regarding with hostility the creed of the invading Feringhee—when these things are thought of and pondered over, it must seem to any thoughtful student a matter little short of miraculous that the result is what it is. And perhaps the most wonderful feature of this result, the most incredible, considering the animosity which at one time was universal, is that amongst the most valued of the warriors of the British Crown are the Native Regiments of India.

"It is a common saying," writes a well-known authority on Indian matters, "that India is held by the sword, but the phrase is misleading, and in one direction it is absolutely untrue. The British army is not maintained to rivet a foreign yoke upon the subjected population; its main duty has been to keep the peace between rival princes, to put down fighting between antagonistic religions, and protect India against foreign aggrandizement." The following passage from Macaulay's well-known criticism on the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

history of Lord Clive gives an accurate notion of the state of constant friction and internecine warfare which the advent of the British rule has put an end to.

"A succession of ferocious invaders descended through the western passes, to prey on the defenceless wealth of Hindostan. A Persian conqueror crossed the Indus, marched through the gates of Delhi, and bore away in triumph those treasures of which the magnificence had astounded Roe and Bernier, the Peacock Throne, on which the richest jewels of Golconda had been disposed by the most skilful hands of Europe, and the inestimable Mountain of Light, which, after many strange vicissitudes, lately shone in the bracelet of Runjeet Sing, and is now destined to adorn the hideous idol of Orissa. The Afghan soon followed to complete the work of devastation which the Persian had begun. The warlike tribes of Rajpootana threw off the Mussulman yoke. A band of mercenary soldiers occupied Rohilcund. The Seiks ruled on the Indus. The Jauts spread dismay along the Jumna. The highlands which border on the western sea-coast of India poured forth a yet more formidable race, a race which was long the terror of every native power, and which, after many desperate and doubtful struggles, yielded only to the fortune and genius of England. It was under the reign of Aurungzebe that this wild clan of plunderers first descended from their mountains, and soon after his death, every corner of his wide empire learned to tremble at the mighty name of the Mahrattas. Many fertile vice-royalties were entirely subdued by them. Their dominions stretched across the peninsula from sea to sea. Mahratta captains reigned at Poonah, at Gualior, in Guzerat, in Berar, and in Tanjore. Nor did they, though they had become great sovereigns, therefore cease to be freebooters. They still retained the predatory habits of their forefathers. Every region which was not subject to their rule was wasted by their incursions. Wherever their kettle-drums were heard the peasant threw his bag of rice on his shoulder, hid his small savings in his girdle, and fled with his wife and children to the mountains or the jungles, to the milder neighbourhood of the hyæna and the tiger. Many provinces redeemed their harvests by the payment of an annual ransom. Even the wretched phantom who still bore the Imperial title stooped to pay this ignominious black-mail. The camp fires of one rapacious leader were seen from the walls of the palace of Delhi. Another, at the head of his innumerable cavalry, descended year after year on the rice fields of Bengal. Even the European factors trembled for their magazines. Less than a hundred years ago it was thought necessary to fortify Calcutta against the horsemen of Berar; and the name of the Mahratta ditch still preserves the memory of the danger."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

So early as 1612 was the first factory erected by English traders at Surat. This was soon followed by fortifications at Madras, then the property of the Hindoos. For many years the record of English settlement was one mainly of commercial treaties; further territories were acquired, and in their own masterful fashion the British ruled without fear or favour amongst the native populations. Before the close of the century, however, the great Mogul began to recognise that the British immigrants might become a disquieting factor in his realm; his quarrels with other princes prevented his devoting his attention entirely to them, and prudent temporising enabled the British to concentrate and augment their power while Moguls and Mahrattas were fiercely contending. It was more than a century after the erection of Fort St. George that the quarrels between English and French stirred the former to make a more vigorous assertion of their power. Events then followed with bewildering rapidity. The tragedy of the Black Hole at Calcutta is still remembered with shuddering; the splendid deeds of Clive are yet fresh in the minds of most. Calcutta was lost and taken. The battle of Plassey gave stern warning to French and to natives of what the British could do. The French were beaten: by fighting and by treaties the East India Company became practically the dominant power in the Indian Peninsula. Then followed the reign of Warren Hastings, which, the more it is considered the more wonderful appears the statesmanship which evolved order out of the chaos in which affairs were placed. It is needless to ignore the charges of unscrupulousness which were brought with more or less of justice against both Clive and Warren Hastings. It was no rose-water warfare in which they were engaged; the men with whom they had to deal were savage and vindictive, and thoroughly versed in all the subtleties of eastern cunning and chicanery. Of each was it true that "he had ruled an extensive and popular country, and made laws and treaties, had sent forth armies, had set up and pulled down princes. And in his high place he had so borne himself that all had feared him, that most had loved him, and that hatred itself could deny him no title to glory, except virtue." To Clive and Eyre Coote and Warren Hastings, and to their subordinates, are we of to-day indebted for the foundation of the Indian Empire, and the predecessors of the splendid native regiments of Her Majesty's Army in India fought under Clive, and were amongst the force to which Warren Hastings looked to enforce his measures of aggrandizement. "Moreover," writes the author before quoted, "even our battles were not won by English troops. The Sepoys usually outnumbered the English soldiers by three to one, and sometimes by five to one, so that really, as far as numbers are concerned, it would be right to say that we beat the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

native princes mainly by the aid of the natives of India." It is needless to follow in any detail the internal history of the Indian Empire from that date. There were wars against the Mahrattas, against Hyder Ali, against Tippoo, and against the French; the battles of Seringapatam, Hyderabad, Bangalore, Assaye, Laswarri, and other well-known victories consolidated the British power. In every one of these victories were the native regiments in the pay of the Company represented. From the golden mist in which the earlier history of British rule in India begins to be wrapped, names of statesmen and warriors shine out in lasting brilliancy. Wellesley, Munro, Pollock, Sales, Ellenborough, Dalhousie, Fitz-Gerald, Napier, Harry Smith, Hugh Gough—such are some of the men who fought and diplomatized to such good purpose in what we must now call "the brave days of old." Then came the time of the Mutiny.

In 1857 the army of the East India Company contained about 45,000 British soldiers and 200,000 sepoys commanded by European officers.

"The Sepoy army had been the pride and glory of the East India Company for more than a hundred years. It won its first laurels in the old wars against the French in Southern India; and from the battle of Plassey, in 1757, to the dawn of 1857, it had shared the triumph of the British army in building up the Anglo-Indian Empire. For perfection of discipline, and fidelity to their European officers, the Sepoys might for many years have been favourably compared with the soldiers of any Continental army. Hindus and Mohammedans fought side by side with Europeans, and one and all were bound together by that brotherhood in arms which grows up between soldiers of all races and climes who have been under fire together in the same campaign. On the parade ground and on the battle field all difficulties of race, caste, and religion were for the moment forgotten. Together Sepoys and soldiers fought, not only against the French, but against Nawabs and Sultans who were Mohammedans, and against Mahrattas and Rajas who were Hindus. Together they had crossed the Indus and the Sutlej to fight against Afghans and Sikhs; climbed the shelves and precipices of the Himalayas to punish the aggressions of the Goorkhas of Nipal; and ascended the waters of the Irrawaddy to chastise the arrogance of Burmese kings. When the Sepoys were called out by the British magistrate to repress riots between Hindus and Mohammedans, they put their religion into their pocket, and fired with the utmost impartiality on both parties, although in their hearts they must have sympathised with one side or the other. But the pride of the Sepoy, whether Hindu or Mohammedan, was to be 'faithful to his salt'—in other words, to be loyal to the master from whom he drew his pay.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"In the first place, the outbreak was strictly a military mutiny. It was not even a mutiny of the whole native army. The Sepoys of Bombay and Madras, with few exceptions, were true to their salt. Even among the Bengal Sepoys many remained faithful. The movement never was an insurrection of the people of India. At the critical time of the siege of Delhi, in the march of Havelock, at the siege of Lucknow, native servants were as usual fetching and carrying, tending the wounded, doing the cooking, even when exposed to the fire of the mutineers, who might be supposed to be fighting for the freedom of India. Nor was this all. Our latest conquests, the Sikhs of the Punjab, were only too ready to fight the Bengalees, whom they hated much worse than the English; so were the little Goorkhas from the hills, who had been such troublesome neighbours in times past. Many of the native princes sent us valuable aid, and by the united efforts of English soldiers, faithful natives, and friendly princes, this formidable mutiny was put down."

Into the history of the Mutiny we do not propose to enter. In the history of "Her Majesty's Army" the various more important incidents have been alluded to; in the following pages reference will again from time to time be made to the conduct of the loyal native regiments in this terrible crisis; but it may here be mentioned that there is no greater mistake than to imagine that all the Native troops mutinied. Even where they did it is remarkable to note, as recorded by Mr. Talboys Wheeler, that "the rebel Sepoys who had shot down their officers, and were in open revolt against British rule, were as proud as before of their exploits under British colours. At the battle of Serla the Company's medals were found on the red coats of the dead rebels, officers as well as men." No names are probably more familiar and honoured for their deeds in this terrible time than are those of Kerr, Deighton Probyn, E. E. Gough, and Watson—merely to mention one or two of those who won the Victoria Cross; yet Kerr was followed by his troopers of the South Mahrattas Horse; Deighton Probyn, of the 1st Bengal Cavalry, was saved from death by his orderly, an old Sikh havildar; E. Gough was an officer of the famous Guides; Watson won his Victoria Cross at the head of the Central Indian Horse.

The composition of the Queen-Empress's Native Army is as under. It will be at once apparent that the inexorable conditions of space prevent us from giving in every case even a *résumé* of the services of the different regiments. But in the accounts which will be given of those corps which we have selected as most typical frequent reference will be made to the share which other of the native troops had in the enterprises enumerated.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Each of the three Presidencies has its own army. Of these the Bengal Army stands first in priority.

BENGAL PRESIDENCY.

CAVALRY:—

The Governor General's Body Guard.

Nineteen regiments of Bengal Cavalry, of which the 6th, 10th, 11th, and 13th, are known as "The Prince of Wales's," "The Duke of Cambridge's Own," "The Prince of Wales's Own," and "The Duke of Connaught's," respectively. The 15th Bengal Cavalry are also styled "Cureton's Mooltance," and several of the regiments have the distinctive title of "Lancers."

ARTILLERY:—

No. 1 Bengal Mountain Battery.

No. 2 Bengal Mountain Battery.

Corps of Bengal Sappers and Miners (8 companies.)

INFANTRY:—

Fourty-four regiments of Bengal Native Infantry. Four Goorkha Regiments. The Bengal Native Infantry are numbered consecutively from one to forty-five, no regiment having the number forty-six. The 2nd Bengal Native Infantry is "The Queen's Own"; the 7th "The Duke of Connaught's"; the 12th "The Kohat-i-Ghilzie"; the 13th "The Shekhawattee"; the 14th "The Ferozepore Sikhs"; the 15th "The Loodianah Sikhs"; the 16th "The Lucknow"; the 17th "The Loyal Poorbeah"; the 18th "The Alipore." The 19th to the 32nd regiments are "Punjab" regiments, the 20th having the style of "The Duke of Cambridge's Own." The 33rd is the "Allahabad" regiment; the 38th the "Agra"; the 39th the "Allygurh"; the 40th the "Shahjehanpore"; the 45th "Rattray's Sikhs." The 2nd Goorkha Regiment has the title of "Prince of Wales's."

The PUNJAB FRONTIER FORCE:—

(1) The Kohat Mountain Battery.

(2) The Derajat Mountain Battery.

(3) The Peshawur Mountain Battery.

(4) The Hazara Mountain Battery.

(5) Garrison Battery.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

PUNJAB CAVALRY:—

The 1st Punjab Cavalry.
The 2nd Punjab Cavalry.
The 3rd Punjab Cavalry.
The 5th Punjab Cavalry.
*The Corps of Guides (Queen's Own).

SIKH INFANTRY:—

The 1st Sikh Infantry.
The 2nd (or Hill) Sikh Infantry.
The 3rd Sikh Infantry.
The 4th Sikh Infantry.
The 1st Punjab Infantry.
The 2nd Punjab Infantry.
The 4th Punjab Infantry.
The 5th Punjab Infantry.
The 6th Punjab Infantry.
The 5th Goorhka Regiment (2 battalions).
The Central Indian Horse.
*The Deolee Irregular Force.
*The Erinpoorah Irregular Force.
The Bheel Corps.
The Meywar Bheel Corps.
The Bhopaul Battalion.
The Mhairwarra Battalion.
The Hyderabad Contingent.
Four Field Batteries.
Four Regiments of Cavalry.
Six Regiments of Infantry.
The 1st Cavalry.
The 2nd Cavalry.
The 3rd Cavalry.
The 4th Cavalry.

* Cavalry and Infantry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 1st Infantry.
The 2nd Infantry.
The 3rd Infantry.
The 4th Infantry.
The 5th Infantry.
The 6th Infantry.

THE MADRAS PRESIDENCY:—

CAVALRY:—

The Governor's Body Guard.
The 1st Madras Lancers.
The 2nd Madras Lancers.
The 3rd Light Cavalry.
The 4th Light Cavalry (Prince of Wales's Own).
The Corps of Madras Sappers and Miners (6 companies).

INFANTRY:—

Thirty-three Regiments of Madras Native Infantry, numbered one to thirty-three. The 3rd is "The Palamcottah Light Infantry," the 23rd "The Wallahjahbad Light Infantry," and the 31st "The Trichinopoly Light Infantry."

THE BOMBAY PRESIDENCY:—

CAVALRY:—

The Governor's Body Guard.
The 1st Bombay Lancers.
The 2nd Bombay Lancers.
The 3rd Bombay Cavalry (Queen's Own).
The 4th Bombay Cavalry (Poona Horse).
The 5th Bombay Cavalry (Said Horse).
The 6th Bombay Cavalry (Jacob's Horse).
The 7th Bombay Cavalry (Belooch Horse).
The Aden Troop.

ARTILLERY:—

Two Mountain Batteries.
Corps of Sappers and Miners (5 companies).

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

INFANTRY:—

Twenty-four Regiments of Native Infantry, numbered consecutively, with the exception of the 6th, 11th, 18th, 23rd, and 25th, which are not represented. The 2nd is "The Prince of Wales's Own"; the 4th "The Rifle Corps"; the 21st "The Marine Battalion"; and the 29th "The Duke of Connaught's Own, or 2nd Belooch Regiment."

The 30th Bombay Native Infantry or 3rd Belooch Battalion.

Attached to the armies of each of the Presidencies are Ecclesiastical and Medical Staffs. The present system is to officer the Indian regiments from the Staff Corps of their respective Presidencies. The full establishment for a native cavalry regiment is generally as follows:—European officers—One commandant, four squadron commanders, and four squadron officers; Native—Four Ressaldars (squadron leaders), Four Ressaidars (troop leaders), one Woordie-major (adjutant), eight Jemadars (lieutenants), sixty-four Daffadars (sergeants). For an Infantry regiment there are of Europeans—One commandant, two wing commanders, and five wing officers; of Natives—Eight Subadars (captains), eight Jemadars, forty Havildars (sergeants), and forty Naicks (corporals). The troopers in a cavalry regiment are known as Sowars; the privates in an infantry regiment as Sepoys.

We have given the regiments thus fully because a tabular enumeration in this form conveys a much more accurate idea of the actual strength of the Indian army than a mere statement that there are so many regiments of cavalry and so many of infantry would do. The numerical strength of the native troops is, roughly, a hundred and forty thousand, to which must be added, as available in emergency and for frontier service, the Native Police Force, commanded by English officers, and numbering over a hundred and sixty thousand men. The British troops stationed in India number some seventy-two thousand, while the armies maintained by the quasi independent Native States may be estimated at about three hundred thousand. Taking the figures and nationalities apart from the qualifying circumstances, the somewhat alarming axiom that our position in India resembles a military encampment in the midst of an alien population seems justified. But the figures and nationalities are losing—have well nigh lost—their significance before the growing loyalty of the natives. Most convincing proof of this loyalty was given scarcely a year ago. Attention was called to the advisability of improving our military strength on the north-west frontier.

Any invasion of India must be through Afghanistan, and the only Power whose

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

possible action may give us anxiety is Russia. "No Russian can get into India without passing through Afghanistan. He may be helped through, or he may have to fight his way through; and it is the main object of English policy that he should have to do the latter. If the Russians find the Afghans friends, it means that they would bring with them 100,000 warriors, the descendants of those who have twice before conquered India. If they enter Afghanistan as foes, it means that all those wild warriors would be on our side, and that any Russian army trying to get through the passes would be forced to meet the English in front while their flanks and rear were subjected to the merciless attack of the Afghan hordes. That is why the maintenance of a strong, friendly, and united Afghanistan is so important. The possession of India therefore forces upon us the defence of Afghanistan."

The question was essentially—it might be supposed—a British one; the existence of a source of weakness to an intruding nation would be gratifying rather than otherwise to the conquered and hostile race. But, unsolicited, the most powerful of the Indian Princes offered money and troops to the Government of the Empress to aid in guarding against any possible danger.

Another aid for enabling us to estimate the value of the Native Indian Army as a whole will be a consideration of the more important of the engagements in which they have taken part. Since the time when, from that narrow strip of land, six miles in length and one mile inland on the coast just below Masulipatam, the English advanced to subjugate the million and a half square miles now owning the sovereignty of the Queen-Empress, native troops have fought shoulder to shoulder with their British comrades. We have seen how many of the British regiments bear on Standards and Colours the memorials of Indian victories, but the story of those victories will acquire a fresh interest if viewed from the standpoint of the native regiments.

To commence then with Plassey. Of the three thousand men whom Clive had to face the seventy thousand, directed by French officers, whom Surajah Dowlah brought against him, two thousand were Sepoys, and not even the 101st and 103rd regiments of the British Army look back with greater pride to that memorable twenty-third of June than do the 1st Bengal Infantry, the gallant *Ghillis-ka-Pultan*. At Wandewash and Pondicherry the Sepoys in Eyre Coote's army were in the proportion of two to one of the British soldiers; at Perambaucan Baillie's Sepoys vied with their brothers-in-arms in the stubborn defence, when, though worn out by forced marches and well-nigh sinking with hunger, the little band of three thousand men, surrounded by the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

whole of Hyder Ali's army, and fired upon by sixty pieces of artillery, held their own with heroic firmness, and poured a deadly fire into the dense bodies of Mysoreans; at Cuddalore sixth-sevenths of Coote's force were composed of native regiments; of the scanty four thousand men who fought so splendidly in Calicut under the brave Humbertsone two-thirds were Sepoys. At Mangalore, where the Bombay Native Infantry earned so high a reputation for valour, we read that the sufferings of the Sepoys were so great that "many of them became utterly blind, and others so weak that they fell down when attempting to shoulder their firelocks." At Seringapatam were seven battalions of native infantry, to the full as infuriated against their fiendish adversary, Tippoo Sahib, as were their British comrades; fifty Sepoys shared with Shelly's hundred Highlanders the glory of holding the Sultaun's Redoubt, and repulsing for a whole day the repeated onslaughts of thousands upon thousands of the enemy. In the final victory over Tippoo nearly twenty thousand of our native troops participated; two thousand were with the twelfth regiment which, under "brave old Colonel Shaw" fought so desperately in the wood before Seringapatam, and three corps of Sepoy grenadiers—picked men—were assigned to the storming party under Sir David Baird. In the combats which preceded the famous battle of Leswarree, as well as in that battle itself, both Native cavalry and infantry distinguished themselves, the former being brigaded with the Royal Irish Hussars—then Light Dragoons—and sharing in many of the brilliant exploits of that splendid regiment. Again, at Assaye Sir Arthur Wellesley's force was largely composed of both arms of the Native Army, and in the records of this splendid victory over the mighty hordes of Scindia we find passage after passage similar to the following: "During the whole action the native light cavalry emulated the bravery of Maxwell's Dragoons (the 19th). At the most critical moment of the battle the British troopers, when making their extremest efforts, saw their Asiatic fellow soldiers keeping pace for pace and blow for blow." At Deeg, of the six regiments which under General Fraser routed twenty-four battalions of Mahrattas, four were Sepoys; at Bhurtpore the native troops vied with the British in the desperate attempts to storm that formidable fortress. Three battalions of Madras Sepoys held their own bravely at Quilon till succoured by the Twelfth Regiment, and in the final battle well nigh rivalled in furious valour the men of the gallant Suffolk; half of our forces engaged in the "bloody battle of Cornelis" were Sepoys, many of whom fought their last fight in that sweet, deadly climate, "where sleep the brave on Java's strand"; when Ochterlony and Gillespie led their forces against the warlike

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Goorkhas, the Sepoys were again to the fore, and at Muckwanpoor charged side by side with the Royal Irish Fusiliers. They were with the army led by the Marquis of Hastings against the Pindarees; when Apa Sahib attacked the British at Nagpore it was a Sepoy Brigade which defended the Residency, and a troop of Bengal cavalry whose splendid charge retrieved the day when all seemed lost. At Maheidpore the Madras Native troops shared with the Royals and the 102nd Regiment the credit of a splendid victory; at Corregaum—"one of the most brilliant affairs ever achieved by any army, one in which the European and native soldiers displayed the most noble devotion and most romantic bravery under the pressure of thirst and hunger beyond endurance"—of the nine hundred men with whom Staunton resisted the whole Mahratta army by far the greater proportion were Sepoys. At Ashta it was with two regiments of Madras cavalry and two squadrons of British that General Smith routed the great force of the Peishwa Bajee Rao; later on, at Soonee, Adams, with one regiment of Native cavalry and some horse artillery, again gave to "the thousands of the Peishwa a most signal overthrow." Native regiments assisted in the reduction of Aseerghur; the first Burmese war recalls at once the gallantry of the Madras Infantry; at Bhurtpore the Native cavalry were conspicuous for their brilliant service; at Okamundel and Aden the expeditions under Stanhope, Thompson, and Smith owed their success, in great part, to the Native infantry.

During the present reign the services of the Native troops have been conspicuous. They took part in the Chinese War of 1840; Native cavalry and infantry were amongst the troops that perished to a man in the terrible retreat from Cabul, and with Pollock's army of vengeance; at Meeanee, Maharajpore, and Punniar, Beloochees and Mahrattas were worsted by armies composed in great part of the Native forces from Bengal and Madras. The "fiery torrent of men and horses" which turned the Sikh left at Moodkee owed the greater part of its fierce volume to the Bengal cavalry; at Ferozeshah, Aliwal, and Sobraon Native cavalry and infantry proved themselves right worthy comrades in arms to the splendid British regiments. When Dervan, the Moolraj of Moultan, murdered our political agents, Bengal and Bombay, and the loyal and warlike tribes of the frontier, aided Gough and Whish and Edwardes in the stern reprisals that were enacted. At Chillianwallah the Native regiments of both arms "nobly supported" the British troops; in the victory at Goojerat, which gained for the Empire the territory of the Punjaub, the Native outnumbered the British troops. The expedition against Burmah in 1852 afforded fresh opportunities for the Native regiments to prove their worth, and

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Bengal Madras Sepoys fought side by side with the Royal Irish, the 80th, the 51st, and the Royal Sussex; and the Golden Pagoda, Bassein, and Martaban owed their capture in no small degree to the valour of the Native soldiers. Bengal infantry and Madras sappers shared with H. M. 80th regiment the capture of Pegu and Frome, and the Native regiments marched with Havelock against the land of Cyrus. We do not here propose to refer to the Mutiny of 1857. We have before remarked that it is solely and exclusively military and confined, practically, to one Presidency. In treating more in detail of individual regiments frequent occasion will present itself for accounts of that terrible time, and of the splendid loyalty exhibited by many. It was not long after the Mutiny had been quelled that British and Indian troops were again seen fighting side by side in the cause of the Empire. The insolent treachery of the Chinese called for prompt and condign punishment, and accordingly a force under Sir Hope Grant was ordered to chastise the Celestials. With this force were two regiments of Indian cavalry and four of Indian infantry, and we shall note when we come to sketch their history how brilliantly they acquitted themselves. In the war which we had in Bhotan, from 1864 to 1866, there were four times as many Native regiments engaged as there were British, and the records of few campaigns show severer trials and greater courage and endurance than does that of this "little war." It will be our duty, too, to note the services of the Native regiments in the Abyssinian expedition, and to show of what incalculable value they were in humbling the haughty pride of Theodore, who vowed "by the power of God" that he would beat the Queen's army or deserve to be held *nidering* and feebler than a woman. In the fierce ambush fighting of the Lushai expedition of 1871 and 1872 the whole brunt was borne by Punjaubees and Goorkhas and native police, who through virgin forest and vast jungle, along ravines from whose beetling summits huge masses of rock were hurled by the lurking foe, up mountain sides where every step was hazardous, forced their way to victory and won submission to the Queen. In 1875 some of the same troops penetrated into the fever land of the Nagas to avenge the murder of our political agent, Lieut. Holcombe, and the same year saw British regiments and Goorkhas fighting the fierce Malays at Perak, and giving a lesson to the ferocious Jowakis. We shall have frequently to refer again to the struggle in Afghanistan as we chronicle how Sikhs and Punjaubees and Goorkhas, with cavalry and infantry of the Bengal army, fought under Roberts at the Peiwar Kotal, in the Khost Valley expedition, at Candahar and Matoond, at Khushi Nakad, Futtehabad, Cabul, Charasiah, Ahmed Kheyl, the Helmund and Maiwand. The still more recent operations in Egypt

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

fitly crown a long record of brilliant service rendered by Her Majesty's Indian Army, though much might be written of their prowess in the many local and smaller quarrels in which we are continually involved.

It may be well in this place to consider how it came to pass that an army which has now, and had then, so splendid a chronicle of fame could have acted as a great part did in the Mutiny. It is the more proper to treat of this before entering on a detailed history of the Native regiments, inasmuch as one result of the Mutiny was a reconstitution of the army. The connection of individual regiments with it will be noticed in due course; the attitude of the Native army as a whole must be appreciated if we would see this connection in its true aspect. The Bengal army then, as organized by Clive, was "recruited almost exclusively from the warlike population of the north-west, for the effeminate Bengalee shrank from entering its ranks; it was mainly composed of high-caste men who were ready to face any danger, but who disdained the humbler duties of the soldier." A reciprocal devotion between British officers and their followers was the marked and distinguishing trait of the early days of the Bengal army. The former were enthusiastic in praise of their troops; towards individual subalterns and men they were friendly and sympathetic. They found their reward in unswerving loyalty and profound and affectionate veneration. What though the first Native regiments had been raised by the French! Coote proved at Wandewash that with or without native help the British would hold their own against them or any other foe, and Clive had hurled the boastful tower of Victory—which, as was said of another column,

> pointing to the skies,
> Like a tall bully rears its head and lies—

to the dust, when he had marched victorious from Fort St George.

The fierce old legend,

> "Who checks at me to death is dight,"

not inaptly describes the position the British asserted for themselves, and there was something in this position which appealed with irresistible force to the warlike nature of the Native soldiers. They had long felt dimly and at intervals that under a masterful directing and governing Power they were themselves capable of great deeds. The metaphor attributed to Sir Colin Campbell happily expresses the relations between the two nationalities. "Take a bamboo and cast it against a tree, the shaft will rebound and fall harmless; tip it with steel and it becomes a spear which will pierce deep and

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

kill." The native bamboo was useless as a weapon; the British steel could, perforce, penetrate but comparatively slightly alone; together the quivering shaft became deadly and irresistible. The following pages will record countless instances of the loyalty above referred to, but the following example shows how *general* as distinguished from *personal* it was in those early days, surpassing, as Macaulay says, "anything that is related of the Tenth Legion of Cæsar or the Old Guard of Napoleon." Three hundred and twenty men, of whom two hundred were Sepoys, alone were left of the little band that had held the ruinous fort of Arcot against ten thousand of Chunda's army. A worse foe than Chunda's legions threatened the garrison. Starvation was a question of hours, and the murmuring born of desperation grew deeper and more sullen. Here was the opportunity for the Sepoys—and they availed themselves of it. Coming to Clive they proposed—not the surrender of the garrison, or that the British whose quarrel it was should extricate them from their terrible position, but—that all the grain, the only food left, should be given to the Europeans, asserting that the gruel strained away from the rice would suffice for themselves! Friendly and considerate as the British officers were, there was no doubt about the *main de fer* being under the *gant de soie*. Insubordination was promptly and sternly quelled, with the result that their power and influence increased. Then, when the British authority seemed scarcely established, red tapeists and faddists set to work with happy unconcern to alienate the Native soldier. He did not always get the pay he was promised; he was ordered to discontinue his caste mark and his earrings, to shave off his beard, to trim his moustache to a regulation length, and finally to wear a leather cockade in his turban! It needs but the most superficial knowledge of the Eastern character to convince us how difficult it would have been at that particular time to have devised any rules more absurd—or more fatally dangerous. There was a mutiny. Thanks to men like Gillespie it was crushed, and the reign of common sense again prevailed. But not for long. The authorities seemed unable to let well alone. They would not recognize that the Sepoy was susceptible and quick-sighted; they treated him as though he were pachydermatous and obtuse. Oblivious of the fact that the *raj* of the Company had been established by victories won by the devotion of men to officers, they did their utmost to render such devotion impossible. It would be impossible better to sketch the situation than by the following extract from a valuable work.

"The Sepoy's nobler feelings were aroused when he thought of the succession of victories which he had helped the great company to gain, and proudly identified his

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

fortunes with those of the conquering race. And when his active career was over he had stories to tell of the great commanders under whom he had fought, which inspired his children and his fellow-villagers to follow in his footsteps. The high officials who held his destiny in their hands might have attached him for ever to their service, for he was no mere mercenary soldier. But every change which they made in his condition, or in his relations with his officers, was a change for the worse. And yet they were not wholly to blame, for these changes were partly the result of the growing power of the English and the introduction of English civilization. As the Company's territory expanded there was a constantly increasing demand for able men to survey land, raise irregular regiments, or act as political officers; and when the ambitious subaltern saw the wider field for his powers which these lucrative posts offered it was not to be expected that he should elect to remain with his corps. Thus year by year the best officers were seduced from their regiments by the prospect of staff employ. Conscious of inferiority, jealous of their comrades' good fortune, those who remained lost all interest in their duties; and the men soon perceived that their hearts were far from them. Moreover, the authorities began to deprive commanding officers of the powers which had once made them absolute rulers over their regiments, and which they had used with the discretion of loving parents. The growing centralization of military authority at headquarters deprived the colonel of his power to promote, to reward, or to punish; and when he ventured to pronounce a decision, it was as likely as not that it would be appealed against and reversed. Finally, as if to destroy the more friendly relations which, after the crisis of 1806, had sprung up again between officers and men, a general order was issued, in 1824, by which the two battalions of each regiment were formed into two separate regiments, and the officers of the original body redistributed among its offshoots without regard to the associations which they had contracted with their old companies.

"The Directors resolved to retrench, and deprived the English officers of a portion of their pecuniary allowances. A few years before such a step would have been followed by mutiny; but these officers contented themselves with a temperate and ineffectual statement of their grievances. Their men noted the futility of their resistance, and learned to despise their already weakened authority still more. But, as if he had feared that the Sepoys might still retain some little respect for their nominal commanders, Lord William Bentinck thought fit, a few years later, to weaken the power of the latter still further by abolishing corporal punishment. What was the fruit of his

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

weak humanitarianism? The Sepoy ceased altogether to fear his officer; and it is hard for an officer to win the love of the honest unless he can strike terror into the base."

What the Native soldiers themselves thought of this step may be gathered from Seaton's work.

"The proposed abolition," he writes, "was universally condemned. The native officers, who had all risen from the ranks, ... were vehemently against it. When the letter reached my commanding officer he assembled all the most intelligent native officers, and asked their opinion on the subject. They expressed themselves very freely and strongly . . . . saying 'We hope the hazoor . . . . will not abolish flogging; we don't care about it, only the budmashes are flogged if they deserve it. . . . . If you abolish flogging *the army will no longer fear*, and there will be a mutiny.'" *

The Afghan War and the hostilities which followed, during which the Native Army covered itself afresh with glory, seemed to the authorities, by some inverted method of reasoning, to require that the Native Army should be again worried. Scattered attempts at mutiny became of frequent occurrence; fortunately men like Napier, Campbell, and Hearsey were qualified to cope with them. Warnings of the unsatisfactory condition came thicker and faster. Napier wrote: "We take no pains to preserve the attachment of the Sepoy. It is no concern of mine; I shall be dead before what I foresee will take place, but it will take place." Cotton records that months before the Mutiny his Native servants wished to leave him, on the ground that "there was about to be a general rising in the country, in which the Sepoy army was to take the lead." Yet no notice was taken; insubordination was pooh-poohed as inevitable in a Native army; no efforts were made to stem in its infancy the terrible flood which bid fair at one time to sweep away the British Power, and did engulf so many valued lives.

We have before referred to the numerical constitution of the Native Army on the eve of the Mutiny. Their moral composition is thus described by a well-known writer in his book on the Indian Mutiny. "On the eve of Lord Canning's arrival, the Native Army was a heterogeneous body, as in race, caste, and religion—so also in quality. There were a few superb irregular regiments, commanded by a handful of picked European officers. There were the useful troops of Bombay and Madras. There was the Bengal army, composed of stalwart men of martial aspect who had been, perhaps, better endowed by nature with soldierly qualities than the men of the other Presidencies, but who had under a corrupt system been suffered to become a dangerous mob."

* "From Cadet to Colonel."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

It seemed then as though the steel head was to be pitted against the bamboo shaft, the point of the latter having acquired a certain hardness and sharpness of its own from the past years of contact. In other words, our antagonists were soldiers whom we had trained ourselves, whom we had taught to conquer common foes, and of whose prowess in many a hard fought field we had seen—and been proud of—many examples. Fortunately, not only for us, but for India itself, many of the finest of the Native troops adhered to the raj of the English. There were many Englishmen who, on the outbreak of the Mutiny, saw in it a confirmation of the view that, as far as the Native officer was concerned, the system of promotion was a terrible failure. "In the Sepoy regiments," says a writer, "seniority carries the day over merit, and the consequence is that not only are most of the Native commissioned officers a set of worn out, puffy, ghee bloated cripples,* but their fellow feeling is wholly with the privates among whom most of their lives have been spent. A Subadar countenanced the first outrage of the insurrection, and in every station the Native officers seem to have been the ringleaders or the puppets of the rebels. . . . In the Irregulars the stimulus of merit—promotion, works well. The men are volunteers selected from a class very superior to any which furnishes recruits to an army in Europe. . . . A hundred instances might be quoted in which these troopers have shown a devotion to officers whom they really loved and esteemed that has few parallels in European history."

We have already seen that self-sacrificing devotion was not restricted to the Irregulars. It will be seen, too, that in some unhappy instances confidence in their loyalty was misplaced. But of many of the troops the writer's eulogy is moderate rather than excessive.

To find a parallel—and that not an exact one—to the nature and composition of many of the "Irregulars" in 1857, we must go back to the feudal times when many a proud baron had amongst the "stark" troopers that followed him scions of houses as lordly as his own, whom the fortune of war, the upshot of one day's fierce *mêlée*, might make leaders in their turn. "Younger sons of courtly noblemen, whose ancestors stood around the peacock throne of Aurungzebe, sons of Zemindars, Potails, Omrahs, and so forth, some from Rajpootana, but mostly children of Mahometan land-holders, came in and offered themselves, with horse, weapons, and accoutrements, to the recruiting agents of the Irregular Cavalry. Nothing would tempt these proud youngsters—most of whom were first-rate horsemen, familiar with arms from childhood—to shoulder a musket in the

* The above was written some six months after the first outbreak of the Mutiny.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

line or to take service in the regular cavalry. But in the Irregulars—where they retained their eastern dress and saddle, and associated only with their equals—they were so willing to engage that often, at a month's notice, the then existing force could have been trebled. Every man was required to prove his power to manage a horse at full speed, with a saddle or without, to strike a spear into a tent peg at full gallop and to draw it from the ground, to hit a mark with carbine and pistol, and to cut through a roll of felt lying on the ground as he dashed by at the full stride of his horse, and bent over the saddle-bow to use the razor-like sword." Worthy foes such men as these, whether they fought for or against us, men who rode perhaps only twelve or thirteen stone, whose horses were trained to wheel off well-nigh at right angles when charged, and some of whom yet wore the old chain mail which turned many a shrewd thrust and slashing stroke.

Let us now glance at the characteristics of the Bengal army. Writers of undoubted authority, such as Sir John Malcolm, express a high opinion of them. The cavalry were stouter and stronger even than were the Madras troops, the majority being Mahometans. In the infantry, on the other hand, the number of Hindoos was three times that of the followers of the Prophet. "They consist," wrote Sir John Malcolm as early as 1834, "chiefly of Rajpoots, who are a distinguished race among the Khiteree, or military tribe. We may judge of the size of these men, when we are told that the standard below which no recruit is taken is five feet six inches. The great proportion of the grenadiers are six feet and upwards. The Rajpoot is born a soldier. The mother speaks of nothing to her infant but deeds of arms. . . . If he tills the ground his sword and shield are placed near the furrow and moved as his labour advances." After irritating the Native soldier, the officials proceeded to caress him with an excess of indulgence. It was quite in vain for military men to write till they were weary, to protest in season and out of season, to warn with all the solemnity of experience and all the passion of patriotism; the native was to be petted—the system of "caste" to be reverenced till it rendered discipline impossible. Sir Charles Napier had written so lately as 1851 that "treachery, mutiny, villainy of all kinds, may be carried on among the private soldiers unknown to their officers . . . where the rules of caste are more regarded than those of military discipline." "It had even come to pass," declares a writer in the *Quarterly*, that "for fear of offending the Brahmins, a Bengal Sepoy was unable, or rather refused, to picket or groom his own horse, to strike the gong at his own quarter-guard, or to take his own musket on sentry duty." Even Lord Dalhousie

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

recorded his opinion that "the Sepoy has been overpetted and overpaid of late, and has been led on by the Government itself into the entertainment of expectation and the manifestation of a feeling which he never held in former times." Bengal officers, writes the reviewer above quoted, had been known to boast that their men would not perform subordinate duties which the armies of the other Presidencies willingly undertook. The Bengal Sepoy had become the fine gentleman, the swaggerer, the swashbuckler, and the bully of the Native population, and the terror of his own officer. It should, moreover, be remembered that the Bengal army was by far the strongest in the three Presidencies, having ten regiments of cavalry, and seventy-five of infantry, as against eight regiments of Madras and two of Bombay cavalry, and fifty-four of Madras and only twenty-nine of Bombay infantry. And the Europeans as a whole were perfectly at ease. A graceful writer of *vers de société* has graphically described the state of the body politic in France when Louis Quinze was king—

> "These were yet the days of halcyon weather,
> A Martin's summer, when the nation swam
> Aimless and easy as a wayward feather
> Down the full tide of jest and epigram—
> A careless time, when France's bluest blood
> Beat to the tune of 'After us the Flood.'"

Doubtless there was plenty of jest and epigram in those last days of the grand old Company's rule; it is certain that on many lips the self-deceptive answer came but too glibly in reply to warnings—"Matters will last our time." "Dazzled by the brilliant facility of their past triumphs," wrote an Indian newspaper, "the English brought themselves to believe in a peculiar mission, like the Ancient Hebrews; and blindly trusting in their special providence, they neglected all ordinary human precautions for securing the safety and permanence of their position. They knew that there was an evil spirit abroad, but they took no steps to disabuse men's minds until the mischief was done. They made no preparations against the coming tempest; though the sea-birds on the shore were shrilly screaming; though a black murky spot was already visible on the horizon; though the hoarse murmur of the storm was breathing heavily on the darkening waters; so no one armed himself against the day of battle. Suddenly a spark was applied to the train laid by many hands, and in a moment of time all was death, desolation, despair." *

* The metaphor of this otherwise striking passage is, to put it moderately, rather mixed, but the picture it gives of Anglo-Indian Society on the eve of the mutiny is clear and graphic.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

For some years past a rumour had been whispered about amongst the Natives in market place and barracks, in palaces and temples and country villages, that the term of the British Rule was reaching its limit, that in the hundredth year after the hosts of Surajah Dowlah "were dispersed, never to reassemble," on the plains of Plassey, the Feringhees should be swept from the land they had so insolently seized, and the sons of the former Lords of India should rule supreme once more. The annexation of Oude had brought about a reconciliation between the Soonees and the Sheeahs—the Mohammedans of Delhi and Oude; the Hindoos were, or affected to be, apprehensive of danger to their religion. Then from hand to hand, station to station, regiment to regiment, was passed the mysterious emblematic chupatty, and sedition mongers went to and fro amongst the Native troops. One of these, a low caste Pariah, supplied, as it were, the spark to the powder. Accosting a Brahmin Sowar of the 2nd Bengal Grenadiers, he begged for a drink of water from the vessel the latter was using. As he doubtless calculated, the Brahmin indignantly refused. Was it likely he should soil his sacred caste by such contamination as the Pariah's touch of the lotah would give! Then the mutineer agent took the surest way to sow the seeds of rebellion. He deprecated the necessity of such excessive nicety about losing caste by the use of a water vessel, when the Government were actually greasing the cartridges, which the Brahmin had to bite every time he fired, with *cow's fat and hog's lard*. Opinions have differed as to whether the greased cartridge grievance was the *cause* or the *excuse* for the Mutiny; the general view tends to regard it as the latter. The authority and discipline which once could have checked it at the outset had, as we have seen, been destroyed; within a few days after the Brahmin had spread the terrifying tidings amongst his fellows, the 19th Native Infantry had mutinied and been disbanded; before three months had passed rebel bayonets were dyed to the socket in English blood.

It is not our purpose here to dwell upon the incidents of the Mutiny, but we must again observe that the appalling blackness of the treachery and cruelty which were so general throws into more brilliant relief the instances of loyalty and courage on the part of some Native regiments and individuals, which will in due course be chronicled. The Mutiny was crushed, the rule of the Queen substituted for that of the Company; in the summer of 1860 the re-constitution of the Indian Army was decided on, and the principle on which that re-constitution was to proceed was given in the words of the wise Prince Consort—"Simplicity, unity, steadiness of system, and unity of command."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"In the next two years the work of amalgamation was carried out. Nine new regiments of Royal foot, three of horse, new brigades and companies of artillery and engineers, absorbed the residue of the Company's European troops. At the same time a new Native Army, made up partly of loyal Sepoys, mainly of Sikh, Gorkha, Pathán, and other levies, with only six English officers to each regiment, took the place of the old Native Army of Bengal. Its officers were furnished from the new Indian Staff Corps, which absorbed the great mass of those who had served on the general staff, civil or military, of their respective Presidencies. A certain number of old officers were invited to retire on special pensions suited to their rank and length of service. It was natural that the new arrangements should fail to satisfy every member of a body several thousand strong; but a fair attempt at least was made to treat the old services in liberal agreement with the spirit of recent Parliamentary votes. In the Native Armies of Bombay and Madras no organic change was deemed necessary."

From this period too dates the Indian Police Force, whose name is so justly honoured for the splendid services it has performed.

"A Native Army on a reduced scale involved the transfer of some of its former duties to an improved body of police. In most parts of India the Native police had never been trusted to furnish guards for treasuries, court-houses, and jails, or to escort prisoners, treasure, and public stores from one station to another. All such duties had devolved on Sepoys, to the loss of their proper discipline, at much needless cost to the State. The task of remodelling the police of his own Presidency had been vigorously begun by Lord Harris, and carried on with like spirit by Sir Charles Trevelyan, before Wilson summoned the head of the Madras Police, Mr. William Robinson, to aid him in establishing a reformed police-system over the rest of India. A Commission sitting in Calcutta wrought out the details of a scheme which, framed on the Irish pattern, promised not wholly in vain to secure the highest efficiency at the lowest possible cost. The reformed police, under skilled European leading," has proved, as has been before observed, an undoubted success.

It seems strange, but none the less reassuring, after the gruesome accounts of the conduct of the Bengal soldiery during the Mutiny, to read the recorded opinion of one whose position entitled him to speak with authority. But in 1876, Sir Richard Temple, for some years Lieutenant Governor of Bengal, wrote in his Administration Report: "At heart and in the truest sense the Bengalis are thoroughly loyal. In this respect there are not in British India better subjects of the Crown. Under all circumstances,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

adverse or propitious, they evince a steady, industrious, and law-abiding spirit. . . Their sentiments of reverence for the British Crown and respect for the British nation have been enhanced by the State ceremonies instituted for proclaiming the Imperial title."

As has been before observed, one great secret of our dominant position in India is the heterogeneity of the various nationalities. These nationalities are represented in their due proportion in the Native Army, and it may be of interest, before treating of the regiments individually, to consider the distinguishing traits of the components.

The Sikhs, or Khâlsa, the chosen people—who supply so large a section of the Bengal Army as now constituted—were at one time our most formidable opponents. At Ferozeshur and Chillianwallah he gave—for our interests—somewhat too good an account of himself; in the force which Nicholson led from the Sutlej to the Jumna, none were more eagerly loyal, none hailed with more soldierly enthusiasm the flash of colour through the clouds of smoke which told to British and Native alike that the meteor flag of England once more blazed in triumph from the revolted minarets of Delhi. All through the Punjaub, indeed, the population is sturdy and warlike, and contributes most valuable contingents to the Native Army of India.

The Goorkhas, who somehow seem the most familiarly known of the Native regiments, present a strange contrast in many ways to their Native brothers in arms. They are by no means punctilious in habit or devotional religiously; they are short and active and merry amongst so many tall, sedate warriors; their appearance is the reverse of prepossessing, while many of the Sikhs and other Native regiments are exceptionally handsome men. "They despatch their meals in half an hour, merely doffing the puggrie, and washing face and hands. They laugh at the other Hindoos who bathe from head to foot and make prayer and offering before eating. . . The Goorkha soldier is willing to carry several days' provisions, to which the Hindoo would object on pretence of losing caste. They have great energy of character and love of enterprise, absolutely fearless, adroit in the use of the rifle and their national weapon the kookrie (a curved, heavy-bladed, truculent-looking knife), and when their British officers have once won their respect and regard, evince a dog-like yet manly fidelity that is unique in its way." Thirty thousand of these fierce, merry, formidable little warriors marched "with rifle, kookrie, and umbrella! to our aid at Lucknow."

The Rajpoots are warriors by birth, of high lineage from Rama, the demi-god, and early in the national history earned the reputation of being the "most chivalrous,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

intrepid, and heroic" of the foes that disputed the passage with the Mohammedan invaders. The Jâts, also hailing from the Punjaub, have been identified with the Getæ mentioned by Herodotus. Our armies under Lord Lake and Lord Combermere experienced their prowess, which is now enlisted in the service of the Queen-Empress. Then there are the Pathâns, "brave, hardy, and warlike, but difficult to control," who supply some of our finest troopers, and the Mahrattas, whose "wild cavalry" gave us such stern work before we reconciled them to our sway.

The present Bengal Army is in many respects, as has been said, a new one, dating from the Mutiny. The Bombay and Madras Armies were on the whole but little tainted with rebellion, and on the reorganization of the whole Force they remained to all intents and purposes intact. But of the seventy-four regiments of Bengal Infantry which were on the establishment at the beginning of 1857 only eleven—exclusive of the Goorkhas and two composite regiments—now remain. Of the eighteen regiments of Irregular Cavalry attached to the old Bengal Army only eight remain. The invaluable Punjaub Irregular Force, after doing splendid service during the Mutiny, was rechristened the Punjab Frontier Force; of the contingents from Gwalior, Oude, Kotah, Hurrianah, Ramghur, Assam, Sylhet, Shekhawattee, Ferozepore, Loodianah, Alipore, and the Kelat-i-Ghilzie Regiment, many survive and bear high place and fair fame amongst the Native regiments; others dropped out of existence during the turmoil of the Mutiny, and their names are no longer found in the Army List.

A most important change, moreover, took place at the period of reorganization in the officers of the regiments. We have seen incidentally how the system adopted in the early years of our conquests in India endeared men to officers and officers to men. As has been said, this healthy system gave place to another that worked prejudicially. "The first Sepoy battalions were officered by Natives under the general control and superintendence of three or at the most five picked Englishmen. Force of circumstances gradually increased the complement of white officers until, in 1887, a regular Native infantry regiment mustered a lieutenant-colonel, a major, seven captains, eleven lieutenants, and five ensigns." A very different arrangement from the old! Unfortunately this goodly supply of officers was available for all sorts of other duties, so that the regiment was as often as not denuded even of a sufficiency. As a result the reciprocal feeling between the British officers and their men was destroyed, while other causes tended to give the Sepoy too high an opinion of his own strength. Whenever war broke out the scattered officers quitted in haste the various quasi civil

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

appointments they had been filling, and returned to a regiment to whom they were practically strangers. "Long absence from military work and associations had often utterly disqualified these gentlemen for the performance of any regimental duty except that of leading their men under fire, which they did pretty straight." The authorities were determined that this evil system should cease; henceforth the allowance of combatant officers to each regiment of Cavalry and Infantry should be seven, and the staff corps was instituted from whence the necessary officers should be supplied.

The occasions in which the Native regiments have been employed since the Mutiny seem to prove that the new system is a wise and good one, and that the relations between British and Natives are established on a firm basis. An enthusiastic Indian officer * (whose name is still held in respect and remains perpetuated in the title of one of the Cavalry Regiments) once wrote that under the circumstances he had pointed out, "the Native Army of India would be fully capable of going anywhere and doing anything. It would be equal to the encounter with equal numbers of any troops in Continental Europe, and of course far superior to any Asiatic enemy." "To cite," declares another writer, "all the instances when the Native troops of the three Presidencies, under their British officers, have distinguished themselves by good service, would be merely to write a history of the gradual growth of the British Raj for a hundred years. With Sepoys mainly we broke the Mahratta power and dispersed the Pindarries. At Laswarree, where the Mahratta battalions trained by De Boigne, Perron, and other foreign adventurers, were routed, there was only one European regiment present. In Nepaul, where the brunt of the war fell on Ochterlony's columns, that General had no European troops whatever. At Meeanee and Hyderabad, where Sir Charles Napier annihilated the power of the Said Ameers, there was only one white regiment in the field."

The mention of Sir Charles Napier recalls that fiery old warrior's own opinions about the Native troops. "The personal conduct of the Sepoys in quarters is exemplary. . . . No army ever possessed better behaved soldiers than the Sepoys." Sir Charles, in his appreciation of the Native trooper, does not admit his intrinsic superiority to the British. "The active vigour of the dark Eastern horseman is known to me; his impetuous speed, the sudden vaults of the animal, seconding the cunning of the swordsman, as if the steed watched the head of the weapon, is a sight to admire; but it is too much admired by men who look not to causes. The Eastern warrior's eye is quick, but not quicker than

* Major Jacob.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the European's; his heart is big, yet not bigger than the European's; his arm is strong, but not so strong as the European's; the slicing of his razor-like scimitar is terrible, but an English trooper's downright blow splits the skull. Oh, no! there is no falling off in British swordsmen since Richard Cœur de Lion, with seventeen knights and three hundred archers at Jaffa, defied the whole Saracen army and maintained his ground."

It is worthy of remark, as bearing upon the reason once given for the disaffection of the Native troops—viz., their reluctance to endanger caste by crossing the black water—that the services of the armies of all three Presidencies over seas have been very numerous. That this has been so lately their employment in the Egyptian War and occupation of Malta attests, but there were many instances belonging to a much earlier period. A few names occur at once as having witnessed their valuable achievements—Amboyna, Ceylon, Java, the Isle of France, the Mauritius, China, Burmah. And the recent operations in Egypt were not the first of a similar nature in the land of the Pharaohs in which the Native army of India participated. When, in 1801, Sir Ralph Abercrombie was entrusted with the task of driving the French out of Egypt, an Indian contingent under Sir David Baird was ordered to co-operate with him. Baird's force consisted of between five and six thousand men, of whom half were Sepoys. "They landed at Kosseir on the Red Sea, June 6, and, marching 120 miles across the desert to Keneh on the Nile, dropped down that river in boats. On arrival, however, at the mouth of the Nile the Indian contingent learned to its chagrin that it was too late for any fighting, as the French general had surrendered. In May, 1802, the expedition returned to India, the Indian army having attracted much surprise and admiration. The Turks were astonished at the novel spectacle of men of colour being so well disciplined and trained."

Enough has been said to show how, not only India but the great English-speaking colonies and dependencies have, especially now, a most engrossing interest, particularly from the point of view of their military organisation. It is difficult, indeed, to overrate the growing importance of the question, or the bearing which the history of individual forces has upon its due appreciation. Let it be once more repeated, that the joint military enterprises of the mother country and her children have not been few or unimportant in the past, though the tendency undoubtedly is—owing to the want of accurate information—to look upon the part borne by the latter as to some extent merely incidental. A writer* who himself has occupied one of the governorships whose dignity may well be thought

* The Marquis of Lorne.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

to outshine many a throne, has tersely and ably called men's attention to this. Speaking of Australia he says that she has "never for one instant displayed any feeling but that of eagerness to defend herself as part of the Empire, and a readiness to play her part in any storm of war." In speaking of Canada he recalls the heroic devotion shown when the terrible threat of an invasion from the south was actually carried into execution, and when victory crowned their bravery on several well-fought fields. "Since those sad but glorious days the same spirit has been constantly shown." When, during the American War of 1861, the action of the Northerners in violating the neutrality of the British flag brought hostilities terribly near, the Canadians were undeterred—their enthusiasm not for a moment damped—by the reflection that it was round their own homesteads that war, should it come, would rage, a personal consideration which the Guards and other British troops which were dispatched were spared. "There has, indeed," writes Lord Lorne, "hardly been a single occasion of probable war that has not called forth eager expressions of martial and patriotic spirit, and desire to share in the peril and glory of the old country," even though, as was the case in the Egyptian War, the homes of the colonial volunteers were in no way menaced, whatever the result of the strife might be. "The offer was echoed throughout Australasia, each community being anxious to show its sympathy in the Imperial fortunes. From Canada came the same note of patriotism, a note not emanating from the English-speaking races alone, for French Canadian officers were resolute in volunteering. Thus, for the first time in history, had great self-governing colonies the opportuning of showing, at a time of no deadly pressure, but when there was a shadow of real danger, how willing they are to form one battle line with us. If such results can spring from the death of one hero contending with Arabs, what may not be expected from our colonies if an enemy were ever able to fly at Britain's throat?"

Before commencing a detailed account of the various regiments now constituting the Indian and Colonial forces, it will be of interest if we glance at a few of the old corps which once were borne upon the British establishment, and who did in their time good service, but whose place knows them no more. There were formerly eight West India Regiments, one of which, the 3rd West India, had been formerly known as the Royal African Colonial Corps. The home list showed four Ceylon Regiments, a "Gold Coast Artillery Corps," a "St. Helena Regiment," a "Falkland Island Company," a "Newfoundland Company," and a Cape Corps of somewhat different constitution from the famous regiment familiar to us of to-day. In many cases we shall see that the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

successors of these various bodies are in existence under altered circumstances and conditions amongst the local forces to be mentioned.

In treating of the Native Indian Cavalry regiments we shall perforce have to leave unrecorded many of their most brilliant feats, as having been performed before, in any sense, they could be said to belong to the Army of the Queen. Few histories would be richer in exciting incidents than the one which should narrate the deeds of those fierce horsemen in the earlier days of the history of India, when the pictures of every battle-field between Afghans and Mahrattas, liegemen of the Mogul and fierce marauding tribes, show wild scenes of warring cavaliers, whirling, charging, men and horses alike imbued with the lust of carnage, passing in a whirlwind of blood and gleaming swords and sheen of mail. Very early in the history of British India do we find accounts of the services rendered by the Native Horse. Mir Jaffer's hundred troopers charged after their English comrades at Biderra; at Buxar there were nearly a thousand Mogul Horse to share in Munro's splendid victory; at Assaye, even, the 19th Dragoons scarcely excelled in valour the Native Cavalry. Together they charged the splendid Mahratta troopers of Daolat Rao; together they cleared the village of Assaye, and silenced the dangerous guns playing on the British rear. Later on, at Argaum, "the enemy's Cavalry in dense masses directed a charge towards the left of the British line. Before, however, they could reach it, the three regiments of Native Cavalry, led by Wellesley in person, galloped from the rear and met them in full shock. The contest was neither long nor doubtful. The famed Mahratta horsemen recoiled disheartened and in disorder before the British-led troopers of Madras." Again, at Laswarree, Dragoons and Native Cavalry together charged brilliantly and with eventual success the enemy's guns. The Cavalry which formed part of the gallant Edwardes' band of sixteen hundred men were all Natives; when the 14th charged under Havelock at Ramnuggar, a Native regiment charged with them; at Sadulapur Thackwell was ably served by his Native Horse; when Unett charged so brilliantly at Chillianwallah three squadrons of Native Cavalry rode side by side with the splendid 3rd Dragoons; in the crowning victory of Goojerat they bore no unimportant part. In all the more recent battles the Native Cavalry have once more exemplified the truth of the opinion, that led by British officers there are few mounted troops in the world—perhaps only the matchless British Cavalry itself—that they do not equal. It was said many years ago, when the good service of the Cossacks in the Crimea was the subject of general remark, that the fierce warriors of the Don would have found more than their match

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

in a few regiments chosen almost at haphazard from the Native Horse of the Indian Army.

Very notably was this the case in the Afghan campaigns of 1878-9, where the Native Cavalry of India met again their traditional foes of Afghanistan, and a very competent authority has given us a graphic account of a representative force of Indian troopers. "The men," he records, "were splendid specimens of the race from which they came: long limbed, lean, and sinewy, with not an ounce of superfluous weight, and a muscle well developed by constant sword and lance exercise. And I was struck with such an evidence of breeding as well as substance in the horses. The men as a rule ride well, depending, however, less upon the balance than our British troopers, and riding more with the knees and calf, while I particularly noticed that they did not hang upon the bridle. The bamboo lance in the hands of these fellows is a most deadly weapon, and their constant practice at tent-pegging has made them as certain of their mark as a well-aimed bullet from a rifle . . . while the keen and razor-like edge of the native tulwar enables its owner to lop off a head or a limb as easily as cutting a cabbage." Some of the feats of the Indian Cavalry in this respect recall the dictum of Sir C. Napier above quoted, suggestive as they are of the prowess of Saladin in "The Talisman," while the downright heavy cuts of the British horseman bear no remote resemblance to the shrewd blows of the English King.

The BENGAL ARMY may be said to have first assumed the constitution it now bears in 1765. In that year the Directors of the East India Company authorized Clive to remodel the Military Establishment, and with characteristic energy he set himself to fulfil the task. The army was divided into three separate brigades of equal strength, the artillery was to be increased from three to four companies, two additional battalions of Spahis were also ordered to be raised, completing the total number to twenty-one. The company of Pioneers and the troop of European Cavalry were broken up, and the men composing them transferred to the European Infantry and Artillery. A small body-guard was, however, maintained for the Governor General. The Native Cavalry, "the Mogul Horse," were reduced to three Russallahs. In Broome's history of the Bengal Army the composition of the force as remodelled, on the lines indicated above, by Lord Clive, is thus stated: "Each brigade was now ordered to consist of one company of Artillery, one regiment of European Infantry, one Russallah of Native Cavalry, and seven battalions of Spahis; the remaining company of Artillery being reserved for the duties of Fort William and the redoubts on the banks of the river." The head-quarters

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of the brigades were at Mongheer, Allahabad, and Patna, respectively; the command being vested in the Colonel of the European regiment. The European body guard of the Governor General consisted of "one subaltern commanding, two Sergeants, two corporals, two trumpeters, and twenty troopers." Each of the Native Russallahs, or troops of Cavalry, had one English officer and five non-commissioned officers, twelve Native officers, and a hundred sowars. Each battalion of Spahis had ten companies, of which two were grenadier and eight battalion companies; and the establishment is stated to have been, "one captain, two lieutenants, two ensigns, three sergeants, three drummers, one Native commandant, ten subadars, thirty jemadars, one Native adjutant, ten trumpeters, thirty tom-toms, eighty havildars, fifty naicks, six hundred and ninety privates." The army by the new regulations was thus placed on a much more efficient footing, each brigade was in itself a complete force, capable of encountering any Native army that was likely to be brought against it; the proportion of officers was considerably increased, especially as regarded the higher grades and the staff; the divisions of staff officers was also better arranged, a more efficient check upon abuses was established, and the good effects of the change were soon rendered generally apparent.

From Captain Williams's work we learn that within a very few years several further alterations took place. In 1780 the "Government of Bengal deemed it requisite to augment the army," in consequence of the threatening demonstrations of Hyder Ali into the Carnatic, and the untoward defeat of the force under Colonel Baillie. "Every battalion in the service, except the six at Bombay, was increased to a thousand men, and formed into a regiment, consisting of two battalions, each battalion of five companies." Six years later another new departure was taken. "The two battalions of each regiment were doubled up into a single battalion of ten companies, and the number of battalions reduced to thirty, and all the Independent Corps were reduced." Scarcely —to use a familiar metaphor—was the ink dry upon the Orders carrying the new arrangement into effect, when the tidings arrived that the Authorities in London were going to make a fresh disposition altogether. The three brigades were changed into six, each consisting of "a battalion of Europeans and six battalions of Sepoys of eight companies each, which increased the number of battalions to thirty-six." Five years later the aggressions of Tippoo Sahib caused the Native corps to be increased to ten companies each. In 1796—the intervening years having disclosed somewhat ominous signs of friction—the whole Native Infantry Establishment was—to quote Captain Williams—"condensed into twelve unwieldy regiments of two battalions each." In

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

1797 the Native corps were put on a war establishment, and two new regiments added, and during the following years the Native army was still further augmented. It was undoubtedly an era of intense activity—the one which was heralded by these changes—and the Native Indian Army was not to be singular in its transformations. It has been remarked that, simultaneously with the ever-varying directions of "John Company" for their Indian Army, changes which to some must have seemed well-nigh revolutionary were at work in the Home Army. The sugar-loaf hat of the Grenadiers had become a relic of the past; flour and pomatum and three-cornered hat had alike vanished. 1800 saw the "Kevenhuller" replaced by the more familiar peaked and numbered cap. "For the sergeants a short pike was substituted for the ponderous old halberd. Troopers were to have an epaulette of copper wire to guard the whole of the arm from sword wounds, and soldiers serving in the East and West Indies were to wear round, broad, Cromwellian-shaped hats."* In Europe the splendid drama of the Peninsular War was to be enacted. In India the last year but one of the eventful and warlike eighteenth century saw the British flag covered with glory in the distant East, the fall of the terrible Tippoo, and the final conquest of Mysore. Very unequal—unequal even to the verge of absurdity—were the forces about to contend for mastery in the arena of "Distant Ind." We have seen above the strength of the Indian Army, and in the earlier portions of this work we have touched on that of the Royal troops. Opposed to them were the vast legions of the "Tiger Lord," who, on the death of the warlike Hyder Ali, "found himself in possession of vast territories, of enormous wealth, and at the head of an army which had more than once measured its strength with that of Britain in the field. Tippoo was inspired by a flaming zeal that bordered on fanaticism for the religion of the Prophet; his only other emotion was an invincible hatred of the English." Yet before the British and their Native comrades Seringapatam fell and Tippoo was slain; the well-nigh impregnable fortress of Allyghur was stormed and taken; at Delhi Lake's wearied troops were to rout twenty thousand of the brave Mahrattas, disciplined and led by Frenchmen; Laswarree and Assaye were to demonstrate to the warlike Scindia that his numberless array, his "active, fleet, and toil-enduring Cavalry, most of whom were helmeted, with tippets and shirts of shining chain-mail," his powerful Artillery, could avail him nothing against the British and Native regiments of the Company. All these triumphs were gained within less than ten years after the change

* It is noteworthy that the wire epaulette was advocated by the dashing sabreur Captain Nolan, of Balaclava memory, in his work on "Cavalry."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

in the constitution of the Native Army which we have above referred to. We do not propose to dwell here on the various organic changes which have occurred from the eventful year of Clive's re-arrangement to the present. As we have before observed, the most complete change was after the Mutiny, and it is the more desirable to bear this in mind as in every history of the army's deeds the Native regiments are referred to by numbers now in use, but which in very many cases designate regiments which date their existence from the maelstrom of rebellion in which their numerical predecessors were lost. As Sir John Strachey tersely puts it, "Before peace was certain the old Bengal Army had ceased to exist. The whole military organization was altered, the local European army was abolished."

Another feature in which the change wrought by the reorganization is most strongly marked is in the different nationalities which now compose the Bengal Army. Up to the time of the Mutiny the Bengal Infantry, for instance, was composed mainly of Brahmans and Rajputs of Oude and the North Western Provinces. The ruinous consequences of this system of recruiting from one class—and that class the most susceptible to caste traditions—were terribly proved, and that system has for ever disappeared. It will be impossible to give a clearer notion of the present *personnel* of the Native Army than by quoting the official report of the Indian Army Commission. "The systems of recruiting for the several armies are diverse. Regiments of the Madras and Bombay Armies draw their recruits from many tribes and castes over the several recruiting grounds of those Presidencies, and the Bombay regiments have an admixture of Sikhs and Hindustanis from Northern India in their ranks. These armies are thus composed of what are called mixed recruits, that is to say, of corps in which men of different races, several religions, and many provinces are thrown together into the same company or troop. In the Bengal or Punjab Armies the majority of the corps are what are called 'class company regiments,' that is to say, the regiments draw recruits from three or more different races and recruiting grounds, but the men of each class or race are kept apart in separate companies. Thus, an Infantry regiment may have two companies of Sikhs, two companies of Hindustani Brahmans and Rajputs, two companies of Punjabi Mohammedans, one company of Trans-Indus Pathans, and one company of Dayras from the Káugra or Jamu hills: such a regiment would be a 'class company' regiment; the Native officers of each company would ordinarily belong to the race, tribe, or sect, from which the company was recruited. In the Northern Army are a limited number of 'class regiments,' which are composed of men belonging to one caste or tribe. Such for instance are the Goorkha

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Corps, recruited entirely from the hardy, short-statured Highlanders of the Nepál hills, the Pioneer regiments, which consist exclusively of men of the Muzbi tribe, who in the early days of Sikh rule were despised outcasts, whose noblest calling was thieving, but who are now among the flower of the Northern Army."

The Bengal army, which first claims our attention, is, undoubtedly, the most important, numbering more than the armies of the other two Presidencies together, and being composed of the flower of the fighting populace of India. As Sir John Strachey says, the term Bengal Army is, and has long been, a misnomer, as there is not a single native of Bengal proper in its ranks, and only a small portion is ever stationed in Bengal, the regiments composing this being stationed along the route to the northern provinces and the Nepál frontier. Calcutta accounts for about five thousand. In the rest of the Lieutenant-Governorship of Bengal, with its population of 69,000,000, there are no troops. Sir William Hunter is well within the mark when he says that probably 40,000,000 people go through life without once seeing the gleam of a bayonet or the face of a soldier. Taking the estimates roughly, of the Bengal and Punjab force, nearly two-thirds come from the Punjab and the north-western frontier districts. The other proportions are thus given:—About fifteen thousand from the north-western provinces, Oudh, and other countries, and seven thousand from Nepál and other districts of the Himalayas. The Mohammedans numbered in 1885 more than eighteen thousand, the great majority of them coming from the Punjab, the frontier districts, and the Delhi territory. Nearly one-half of the Cavalry were Mohammedans; there were nearly twenty thousand Sikhs, or men belonging to other warlike classes of the Punjab and the frontier districts. About three thousand Brahmans, five thousand Rajputs, and five thousand Hindoos of other castes came from Oudh and the north-western provinces, and belonged to the classes from which the Bengal Sepoy Army before the Mutiny were chiefly made. The remaining seven thousand men were chiefly Goorkhas from Nepál—for fighting qualities one of the most valuable parts of the Native Army, and hardly to be surpassed by any troops in the world.

It is not to be wondered at, then, that in our account of the regiments of which this splendid army is composed we shall, not once or twice, but frequently, come across instances of individual and collective valour, of loyalty, of chivalrous self-abnegation which well deserve to be more widely known.

Here, again, we shall be struck with the seeming incongruities of the occurrence of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

these splendid deeds and the red record which in many cases terminates the annals of the regiment which could boast them. It is a new and evil reading of the *vos non vobis* adage. Happily, as we shall see in many cases, the continuity of heroic descent has not been always broken, and regiments, no less than individuals, can look back with pride to deeds of by-gone days. It has been well said that, "in the perusal of public despatches for records of deeds of bravery by Native soldiers of India one is somewhat surprised at the constantly-recurring notices of these deeds by British officers who have commanded Sepoys and Sowars. One can also scarcely fail to observe the strong recommendations for some special mark of acknowledgment in the form of distinction or other reward.

"During the horrible Indian Sepoy Mutiny of 1857-8, although many—very many—Native officers and soldiers fell away from their allegiance, and butchered in cold blood all the English they could lay their hands upon, there were large numbers of men, even of the very same caste as the mutineers, who showed extraordinary devotion to many who had ruled them. These shewed heroic conduct beyond all praise—this, too, when it would have been easy, without the actual deed being fastened upon them, to have destroyed those whom by their constancy they saved from a cruel and dreadful death.

"In all the military operations, great or small, especially during the late Afghan war, the conduct of Native troops—officers, and soldiers alike—showed a spirit of the firmest faith toward the British Crown, and established the fact that they possessed a hardy courage, scarcely, if at all, exceeded by the best of their British brethren in arms. The bravery and endurance of those splendid soldiers, the Sikhs, shone conspicuously upon every occasion in which they were engaged. Curiously enough, too, those so opposite in every characteristic but one, that of firmness in combat—those blithe and merry little men, the Goorkhas—invariably carried themselves forward well to the front, and ever were foremost in the fight. Well may their officers have felt proud to lead them on to victory."

It is with reminiscences such as those words excite that we shall best approach the history of the Native Army of India.

It would be difficult to find anywhere a more picturesque body of men than are the Bengal Cavalry—a picturesqueness which, as we have seen, in no way detracts from their magnificent fighting qualities. Fortunately artists have not been slow to realise this, and the general appearance of the Indian Cavalry is consequently much more

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

familiar to us than is that of most other branches of the Service, either Indian or Colonial.

The first named are THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S BODY-GUARD, and in appearance—dissimilar as uniform and personality is in many ways—they remind one not dimly of the stately corps of Gentlemen-at-Arms and Yeomen of the Guard, who, in her native kingdom, form the Body-Guard of the Empress of India, save that the Indian Guard is mounted. The physique of the men is splendid, their status dignified, and their uniform and accoutrements magnificent.

It seems probable that in the earlier period of their history the Governor-General's Body-Guard were composed of Europeans exclusively, but this restriction did not long obtain. Their military records, too, belong rather to the past than the present, as many years have passed since they have seen the tented field—at least in the capacity of combatants. But formerly this was far otherwise. In the earlier battles their fierce struggles in which oftentimes it was not only victory but existence which the British Army had to contend for, the Body-Guard from time to time signally distinguished themselves. Governors-General not seldom took the field in person, one notable instance of which was afforded by the Pindaree War of 1817, when the Marquis of Hastings, as Commander-in-Chief and Governor-General—a gallant soldier, eloquent senator, and popular statesman—a veteran of much hard service, took the field in person, and at the head of the Grand Army of Bengal, which numbered some 40,000 men, advanced, in conjunction with the armies of Madras and Bombay, to crush the terrible hordes of Pindarees and Mahrattas. Naturally well-nigh forgotten now, the campaign was of the most severe nature. The Pindarees and their allies eluded crushing like quicksilver: a formidable army might seem to be annihilated, but its component parts would reappear, apparently as numerous as was the aggregate. The expedition was entirely successful, despite the dogged perseverance of the Pindaree chief Cheetoo, whose adventures, though troublesome enough to us, were to the last degree romantic. Pursued into fastnesses of rocks and forests, "his horses kept constantly saddled, his men hunted and famished, sleeping with bridles in their hands ready to mount and flee at a moment's notice," he was at last deserted by his sole remaining adherent. There was no escape for him now: his track was being followed unswervingly and unpityingly by men of our Native army, whose skill and subtlety excelled his own, yet for all that he disappeared. At last his horse was found quietly grazing, saddled and accoutred in full with the chief's belongings. "A further search was made

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

in the jungle, and then, at no great distance from the lonely horse, were found the clothes clotted with blood, some fragments of gnawed human bones, and lastly, Cheetoo's head, entire, with the features still in such a state as to be distinctly recognisable. The forest at Aseerghur was much infested by tigers, so some of these ravenous animals had given the fierce chief an appropriate death and burial.

"Such was the fate of the last of the Pindarees, a chief who but lately had ridden with 20,000 horsemen under his standard. Their name is now all that remains, for even the traces of their atrocities have long since passed away."

Yet despite the fact that the Body-Guard have no record of active service later than Sobraon, their standards bear names which tell of a glorious past. In the early part of 1811 they accompanied the Earl of Minto on the important expedition to Java; the word "Ava" commemorates their share in the conquest of an Indian empire by a literal handful of British troops and their native comrades. Again, when Lord Ellenborough accompanied the army commanded by Sir Hugh Gough to support the infant Scindia, he was attended by his Body-Guard, who at the battle of Maharajpore were of great service. "The Governor-General," we are told, "being mounted on an elephant, watched the battle close at hand, and freely exposed himself to cannon and musketry alike." With the Body-Guard on that occasion was an officer whose name is still familiar to all, General Sir Neville Chamberlain, G.C.B. At Moodkee, in 1845, the Body-Guard, commanded by Major Bouverie, took part in that splendid charge under Brigadiers Gough and White, of which it has been said that "seldom in war has a more brilliant and successful flank movement been executed." Major Bouverie's horse was shot under him, and the action was a stern and fierce one. At Ferozeshah, where Sir Henry Hardinge, Governor-General, acted as second in command to Sir Hugh Gough, the Body-Guard were again hotly engaged, many of their number swelling the list of casualities; at Aliwal the "noble charge" made by the Light Cavalry and Body-Guard holds a high place even in that day of brilliant deeds; at Sobraon they shared in the magnificent services rendered by the Cavalry.

We get yet one other glimpse of the Body-Guard. On the 31st March, 1857, the 19th Bengal Infantry, which had been sentenced to disbandment, were marched into Barrackpore. There they found arrayed, in stern evidence, the warriors of the Government they had defied. The grim field-pieces of the European batteries were pointed at them, and in menacing force stood the 53rd and 84th British regiments, supported by the "Governor-General's Body-Guard, a corps of whose fidelity, though Indians, there was never a doubt."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The chronicle of the Body-Guard since then shows rather participation in State pageantry than in the sterner glories of war, but little doubt need be entertained of the fighting qualities of the hundred and thirty men who guard the person of the Empress' Vice-regent.

The BENGAL CAVALRY have undergone a complete reorganisation since the Mutiny. Of the regiments of Bengal Light Cavalry, many of which dated from the close of the last century, not one remains, their names and places being occupied by the regiments which before 1857 had been called "Irregular Cavalry."

It will be impossible to avoid occasionally, when treating of a regiment in the army as now constituted, glancing at some of the famous achievements performed by their predecessors in title, even though to us those achievements, glorious as they were, are tinged with the hideous crimes of 1857. It may, perhaps, be as well to describe *generally* the uniform of the Cavalry, the distinctive features being mentioned when necessary. It consists, then, of a loose turban head-dress and long easy blouse with chain shoulder straps, a cummerbund or waist girdle, loose riding trousers worn with long boots or "putties," and ammunition boots. The arms, except in the case of the Lancers, are the Snider carbine and sword.

The 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, and 8th Bengal Cavalry* were formerly known as the 1st, 2nd, 4th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 17th, and 19th Irregular Cavalry, the change being effected by order of the Governor-General in 1861.

The 1st BENGAL CAVALRY, raised in the early part of the century as the 1st Irregulars, fought gallantly at Bhurtpore, vying with the 16th Lancers in the splendid charges which did so much to obtain the victory, "which confirmed the supremacy of Britain over the whole of India," and wiped out the remembrance of our unsuccessful efforts

* The 1st Bengal Cavalry have on their standards "Bhurtpore," "Candahar, 1842," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is yellow with black facings.

The 2nd Bengal Cavalry have "Arracan," "Sobraon," "Punjaub," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir." The uniform is blue with light blue facings.

The 3rd Bengal cavalry have "Afghanistan," "Ghuznee," "Khelat," "Maharajpore," "Moodkee," "Ferozeshah," "Aliwal," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is drab with blue facings.

The 4th Bengal Cavalry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80," and the additional distinction of an honorary standard for service in Scinde, 1844, with the device of a lion *passant regardant*. The uniform is scarlet with facings of blue.

The 5th Bengal Cavalry have "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is scarlet with facings of dark blue.

The 6th (Prince of Wales's) Bengal Cavalry have "Punniar," "Moodkee," "Ferozeshah," "Sobraon," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir." The uniform is blue with red facings.

The 7th Bengal Cavalry have "Punjaub." The uniform is red with dark blue facings.

The 8th Bengal Cavalry have "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is blue with facings of scarlet.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

twenty years before. After a period of comparative peace we find them again earning victors' laurels in the war of 1840-42. The gallant deeds commemorated by the distinction of "Candahar, 1842," are well known; it is only needful here to say that few of the regiments engaged can refer to them with greater pride than the 1st Bengal Cavalry. In the Afghan war of 1878-80 they were engaged and well upheld their reputation. They were one of the regiments detailed to join the Kurrum column after the commencement of hostilities during what is called the second Afghan war, and during all the subsequent proceedings rendered sterling service in the duties that fell to their share.

The 2nd BENGAL CAVALRY, formerly the 2nd Irregulars, date, like their predecessors in number, from the early years of the century. Passing over the history of the first few years we find them in 1875 engaged at Arracan, a province which Nature had rendered well nigh impregnable by towering forests and impervious jungles which impede access and render—especially at the rainy season—the atmosphere heavy with poison germs. Round Arracan itself rises a lofty range, and an idea of the place may be gathered from the description given by a historian. "The houses," he says, "are all built on piles above the mud and ooze which the river deposits around them. On the summit of these hills 9,000 Burmese troops were strongly stockaded." Yet swamp and stockade and fastness and Burmese warriors failed to stop General Morrison's force with which were the predecessors of the 2nd Bengal Cavalry. Arracan was captured and the province ceded; yet before the troops could withdraw, scarcely a soldier remained fit for duty, and three-fifths of the entire force found their graves amidst the rank deathful vegetation. Again passing over some years we note that amongst the distinctions worn by the 2nd Bengal Cavalry is Sobraon, where they formed part of the Native Army under Sir Hugh Gough. For some time it seemed, says the Governor-General in his despatches, that the fire kept up by the Calsea troops would prove too hot for our forces, but at length the enemy were routed. Then came the charge of the Cavalry, and the 40,000 of the enemy were routed with the loss of 14,000 men and 220 pieces of cannon. But it was not only at Sobraon that the 2nd Bengal, as they now are, distinguished themselves. The official despatches and the general orders of Sir Charles Napier and Sir Hugh Gough bear eloquent testimony of the services of the Irregular Cavalry during the whole of the Punjaub Campaign. The charges of Colonel Pattell at Meeanee and Hyderabad, the forward advance of Cavalry and Artillery at Moodkee; and the fierce fighting at Ferozeshah gave proof of their value as troopers. Their next campaign of note—for we are compelled

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

unwillingly to pass over the intervening period—was in Egypt in 1882, when they were amongst the native regiments which fought side by side with the matchless cavalry of Britain. Kassassin, Tel-el-Kebir, Cairo, these were the actions in which they were engaged and in which, amongst others, Colonels Knowles and Salkeld, and Captains Stockley, Martin, and Steele distinguished themselves.

The 3rd BENGAL CAVALRY, formerly the 4th Irregular Cavalry, were raised in December, 1814, and for the first years of their existence rendered valuable service in various lesser campaigns. The first distinction that they bear is that of Afghanistan, and the name Ghuznee which follows tells of their participation in Keane's victory. On the capture of Khelat they were amongst the troops which remained under Cotton, and shared in the fierce and sometimes disastrous fighting which followed. They fought most gallantly throughout the campaign, which included Maharajpore, Moodkee, Ferozeshah, and Aliwal amongst their principal victories, in the latter of which, especially, the services of the Irregular Cavalry were inestimable. At Maharajpore the present Sir Orfeur Cavanagh, then serving with the 4th Irregulars, had his left leg carried away by a cannon shot. The record of the following years shows the same military excellence. During the Mutiny some of the most notable instances of loyalty are to be found amongst the ranks of the 4th Irregulars. On the 19th of June, 1857, a fierce combat took place outside Delhi. Sir Hope Grant was in command, and his orderly was a sowar of the 4th Irregulars. An account of the conflict thus describes what ensued:

"The General's remaining orderly, a sowar of 4th Irregulars, had kept his eye on his fine old chief, and had somehow managed to keep close to him in the charge. He and his horse were unhurt, but like Sir Hope were surrounded by the maddened rebels. But not one instant did this brave man hesitate to sacrifice his life for the great Sahib. He rode up to the unhorsed chief and thus addressed him: 'Sahib, you are in great danger. I am unhurt; they will kill you, Sahib, if they see you here.' He then threw himself from his charger, saying, 'Here is my horse, take him, Sahib, and save yourself; it is your only chance.'

"Sir Hope grasped the horse's tail with a firm hold, and at once the sowar begun to urge the animal forward and guide him out of the fighting throng around them, ever keeping a watchful eye upon the struggling combatants, some of whom he actually cut down while in the act of discharging their muskets or aiming sword blows at the general."

As was inevitable, a wholesale disarming of many regiments took place, and in July Sir Hope Grant could count only ninety men of the gallant 4th Irregulars in his brigade.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Some had mutinied, and it was thought well that even this remnant should be disarmed. When the order was read out, writes the General, "they seemed surprised, but every man came forward and respectfully laid down his arms upon the ground." Well might the General assure them, as he did, that they had been deprived, not by reason of any disaffection attributed to them personally, as their conduct had been perfectly honest and loyal, and that when order was re-established they would be re-engaged by the Governor. After this several of them, knowing that their lives would be valueless amongst the rebels, were formed into a police guard for camp duty. The General's two orderlies, Rhoopa Khan and Peer Khan, were allowed to retain their swords and horses.

In the Oude Campaign of 1858-59, the regiment was in the column commanded by Brigadier Troup, and rendered brilliant service; amongst their officers being Colonel Cadell, who during the Mutiny had gained a V.C. for an act of the most heroic courage. When, twenty years later, war broke out in Afghanistan, the 3rd Bengal Cavalry were amongst the regiments under Gough, and had their share in the hard work and hard fighting of the war. In the pages of one of the best accounts of the Kandahar Campaign we find many a mention made of this splendid regiment. Writing from Cabul in August, Major Ashe describes the Cavalry Brigade under General Hugh Gough, which consisted of the "3rd Bengal Cavalry, the 3rd Punjaubi Cavalry, and the Central India Horse, troopers recruited nearly all in the north-western border of India—tall, lean, muscular-looking fellows, whose sabres and bamboo lances have ploughed through many an Afghan squadron, and made many a turbaned foe bite the dust in the shock of the *mêlée*." They are as fine a mass of horsemen as any army could produce. Later on the 3rd Bengal took part in the important cavalry reconnaissance outside Kandahar under Gough and Chapman. On the 31st of August they were paraded with two mountain guns, the 15th Sikhs, and a few of Macpherson's Brigade. "We moved quietly out of camp," writes Major Ashe, "the cavalry and guns bearing away under some low hills to our right, while Macpherson took his infantry steadily to the front. Our plan was to drive the enemy from the first range of low hills, which acted as a sort of glacis to the Pir Paimal range to the south-west of Kandahar, while Gough and Chapman took their handful of cavalry along the Herat road, in the hope of getting the enemy to show his strength in that direction. All turned out admirably." After the victory of Baba Wali, the services of the cavalry were again called into requisition, and Gough's "splendid little clump of spears" left the camp early in the morning, "with a sort of skeleton instruction from the chief, but with *carte blanche* to use his own discretion as events came on." At first there

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

was no opportunity to utilise cavalry on our left, as the village of Gandigan was only assailable by infantry, the ground intervening being one mass of jungle, nullahs, water-courses, and other impediments, where cavalry are practically out of place and useless. Gough had with him the 10th Hussars, the 9th (Queen's Royal) Lancers, 3rd Bengal Cavalry, 3rd Punjaub Cavalry, and two squadrons each of the 1st Central India Horse and the 2nd Central India Horse. "These may be taken roughly to represent not more than 1000 sabres, but the quality of the troops was unexceptionable.

"Recrossing the river by a ford in rear of Baba Wali, Gough had scarcely formed his leading squadrons on the bank, when he was assailed by two guns posted on a ridge, and a heavy mass of Afghan horse, who came on with wild yells till they heard in ringing tones from the Brigadier in command—'In column of squadrons! walk! march! gallop! charge!' In one instant he had burst through the swarm of Afghan horsemen, and drove a number of them into the river, where, even with the water up to the girths, a hand-to-hand combat took place."

We will quote once more from Major Ashe his description of the dashing pursuit of the enemy early in September, in which the 3rd Bengal Cavalry played so distinguished a part.

Two squadrons of the regiment under Colonel Cracroft were ordered forward to encounter the Afghan cavalry, which were "demonstrating" somewhat forcibly. Sooner than was expected these two squadrons found themselves opposed by a strong body of Herati horsemen.

"All at once an orderly galloped up to our column, where the General was riding in front of the 9th Lancers, and informed us that Colonel Cracroft was engaged with a large cavalry force of the enemy, and was driving them back into the river.

"'Walk! March! Trot! Draw swords! Form squadrons!' (the plain would not allow a wider front), were given by the commanders in obedience to the chief, who had told them to take the time and pace from him. In about seven or eight minutes we were in the plain, and on fairly good ground. We saw, on our right, Cracroft having a very pretty little 'mill' with about 300 Heratis. Our fellows, it seems, were hidden in a mango tope, and, allowing them to cross the ford, had caught them in flank and *en flagrant délit*, as they were coming up the bank in column. However, they managed to wheel into line, and took the initiative, charging down upon Cracroft's handful of sabres, as they knew it was their only chance. As fast as each man reached the bank he galloped after his comrades, and the two lines met at a good pace about

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

300 yards from the bank. Our fellows, however, were better under hand, and having the impetus, went through them with unbroken files, rolling the Afghan horsemen down the hill and many of them into the river. A hand-to-hand encounter then ensued, our men laying their lances in the socket and taking to their swords. Meanwhile we had no idle time. A much larger body of horsemen had crossed at a ford we knew not of, and came round the brow of a small hillock on our right. Fortunately for us the ground was in our favour, and General Gough, leaving the 9th in reserve to cover us if necessary, formed his remaining men in columns of squadrons, and went steadily at them."

Since the Afghan war the 3rd Bengal Cavalry have not been engaged in any of our larger operations, but we may well be content to take leave of so distinguished a regiment with the graphic account above quoted of their achievements in Roberts' conquering army.

The 4th Bengal Cavalry, late the 6th Irregular Cavalry, dating from the earlier half of the present century, have not many "distinctions," but can boast of the exceptional honour of their "Scinde" standard. The enterprise they were engaged in was one of intense difficulty; the neighbourhood was one infested by fierce tribes—the Jackranees, the Doomkees, the Bhootgees, the Muzarees, and others—"whose boast it was that no foreign foot had ever traversed their rocky defiles." It was on this occasion that one of the first Camel Corps of modern warfare was organised; "each camel carried two men, clad in turbans, short tunics, and long boots, one armed with a musket and bayonet slung over the left shoulder, the other with a carbine and sword. One guided the camel and fought from its back, the other acted as an infantryman on foot." In the event of an assault by overwhelming numbers, the camels were to kneel in a ring with their heads inward and pinned down, so as to form a bulwark for the men. The 6th Irregulars supplied not a few of this contingent, and the main body of the regiment was under the command of Colonel Salter.

Amongst other brave deeds we read:—"In one of the skirmishes of that campaign a charge was made by Colonel Salter at the head of some Irregular Cavalry. The fighting was, for a few minutes, rather sharp, and Salter himself engaged in single combat with a foeman who was pressing him hard. Fortunately at the critical moment a sowar, Mahomed Buckshee by name, came up and slew Salter's opponent. Sir Charles Napier, who established the precedent of naming all, however low in rank, who specially distinguished themselves, gave Mahomed Buckshee a sword, and wrote him a letter as a

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

reward for his gallantry. This brave sowar afterwards rose to be a Ressaldar. In the same charge another sowar greatly distinguished himself. He was named Azim Khan, and was a native officer of the 6th Irregular Cavalry, to which Mahomed Buckshee also belonged. Azim Khan fought most gallantly in the action in which he was mortally wounded. Sir Charles Napier coming up found him lying on the ground. Dismounting, the General went up to him and tried to give him hopes. Azim Khan knew, however, that his minutes were numbered, and calmly addressed his commander in these noble words, 'General, I am easy, I have done my duty. I am a soldier, and if fate demands my life, I cannot die better. Your visit to me is a great honour.' Hardly had he uttered these words when he expired."

During the troublous times of the Mutiny the 6th Irregulars rendered good service, notably at Moultan in August, 1858, when a troop under Colonel Jarrett pursued the rebels. The distinction of "Afghanistan, 1879-80," commemorates their participation in that campaign, the incidents of which we forbear to recapitulate here, so familiar by now are the services rendered therein by the Native Cavalry.

The 5th Bengal Cavalry, formerly the 7th Irregular Horse, dates from 1841, and gained a distinguished reputation by their services in the Punjaub War. In July, 1848, they formed part of the force under General V. White which set out for the reduction of Moultan, and throughout the operations, which terminated in January, 1849, rendered signal service. In 1864-5 a detachment of the regiment took part in the Bhotan war, an enterprise of some importance, but fortunately not attended with much loss to our army. They were attached to the right column under General Mulcaster, and rendered excellent service whenever opportunity offered for the employment of Cavalry. The Bhotanese were a strange mixture of cunning and simplicity. Undoubtedly brave, they were absolutely helpless against our disciplined troops, and their strange country, with its Buddhist monasteries, huge temples, and vast sacred libraries, was soon at our mercy. As indicative of the childish simplicity which characterised them may be quoted the letter sent by the Deb Rajah of Bhotan, who styled himself—in quite European style—the brother of our Queen. "If you wish for peace and do not disturb our peasantry, it will be best for you to go back to your own country without doing any more harm to ours. But if you will take possession of my country, which is small, without fighting, and attach it to your own kingdom, which is large, I shall send the divine force of twelve gods, as per margin, who are very ferocious ghosts. Of this force 7,000 stop at Chamoorchee, 5,000 at Doorma, 9,000 at Buxa, and 102,000 at Dhalim

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Dooar." * Passing over the intervening years, we find them serving during the latter part of the war in Afghanistan in 1879-80, the various details of which have been so often given. Their principal duty here was garrison duty at Jamrud and Ali Musjid, after which, under Major Shakespear, they took part in the action of Mazaia in May, 1880.

The 6th (the Prince of Wales's) BENGAL CAVALRY date from 1842. As the 8th Irregular Cavalry they early saw plenty of service, and distinguished themselves in many a well-fought field. Under General Grey they shared in the brilliant victory of Punniar in December, 1843; at Moodkee they charged the threatening advance of the Sikh right; at Ferozeshah they gave a good account of the vast array with which Tej Singh hoped to wrest victory from the British; at Sobraon they charged after Thackwell through the wavering hosts of the enemy. Brilliant as their record had been, the 8th Irregulars did not emerge unscorched by the fierce blast of the Mutiny. Indeed, their continuity is due to the stainless loyalty of a faithful few. The then commandant of the regiment, Captain Mackenzie, could scarcely credit the report brought him by a Ressaldar that they were about to mutiny. They had given so many proofs of unswerving fidelity, had been foremost in subordinating caste prejudices to military discipline, had on one occasion volunteered for service over sea when another regiment had refused to go. But it was too true; the majority of the regiment mutinied on the 31st May, 1857, and scarcely more than twenty—of whom twelve were native officers —accompanied Mackenzie to Bareilly. This loyal remnant formed the nucleus of the present corps, which was raised by Mackenzie, and before long—at the fierce conflict at Harhà—more than re-established its former prestige. A chronicle of deeds of native courage and fidelity† says that, "one Ressaldar, Mahommed Nazim Khan, abandoned not only all his property, but also three children, to follow his leader; and Mackenzie's orderly, also a Mahommedan, rode all through the retreat his Commandant's second charger, a splendid Arab, on which he could easily have made his escape. Before the retreat was at an end Mackenzie's horse dropped dead from fatigue, on which the orderly dismounted, handed the horse he was riding to Mackenzie, and accomplished the remainder of the march on foot." At Huldwaine, in September, 1857, under Captain Beecher, they repulsed a large force of rebels, and during the campaign in Oude—1858-9—under Captain Campbell performed most efficient service.‡ They were

* See the interesting work on the Bhotan Campaign by Dr. Rennie.

† By Major Elliott and Colonel Knollys.

‡ When Col. Sartorius gained his V.C. in Ashantee he was an officer of the 6th Bengal Cavalry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

amongst the Indian troops despatched for the Egyptian Campaign, when they were commanded by Colonel Oldfield. In General Wolseley's despatch after Tel-el-Kebir, he said, "The squadron of the 6th Bengal Cavalry, attached temporarily to General MacPherson, did good service in pursuing the enemy through the village of Tel-el-Kebir." The special correspondent of the *Standard*, describing the seizure of Zagazig, writes: "Among the most brilliant and spirited incidents of this brilliant little war, the capture of Zagazig takes a foremost place. It was effected by the acting commandant of the 6th Bengal Cavalry, Lieutenant Murdoch of the Engineers, and five troopers of the 6th Bengal Cavalry. The rest of the corps had been thrown out in the headlong gallop from the battle-field. The little party dashed through the crowd assembled round the station and found there four trains laden with soldiers and the steam up, and at the point of departure. They reined up in front of the first engine and with levelled pistols ordered the driver to dismount. He refused and was at once shot; the rest bolted, as did the passengers. . . . . Our cavalry came up half an hour later." The Hon. Colonel of the regiment is the Prince of Wales, an honour conferred upon it on the occasion of His Royal Highness's memorable visit to India.*

The 7th and 8th BENGAL CAVALRY, formerly the 17th and 18th Irregulars respectively, date from 1846, and the former, immediately after their formation, took an active part in the war then raging. They bear the distinction "Punjaub," since which date they have not participated in any of the more important wars in which we have been engaged. The 8th Bengal Cavalry have as their distinction one of a later date, namely "Afghanistan, 1878-80," where they were principally employed in the Lughman Valley.

The 9th and 10th† BENGAL CAVALRY, otherwise respectively the 1st and 2nd Hodson's Horse, are very distinguished Lancer Regiments. One is naturally inclined to dwell with some fulness on the history of such a corps as Hodson's Horse, both on account of the personality of the founder and the character of the corps, but we are unable to do

* Amongst the Indian soldiers who came to England on the termination of the war were some of the 6th Bengal Cavalry, and few attracted more attention than Ressaldar-Major Tahour Khan, of the 6th, a veteran of forty years' service, whose tunic blazed with medals, amongst them the Punniar Star of 1843.

† The 9th Bengal Cavalry bear "Delhi," "Lucknow" (relief and capture), "Suakin, 1885." The uniform is blue with white facings.

The 10th (The Duke of Cambridge's Own) Bengal Cavalry have "Delhi," "Lucknow" (relief and capture), "Abyssinia," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is blue with scarlet facings.

The 11th (Prince of Wales's Own) Bengal Cavalry bear as badge the plume of the Prince of Wales, and on their standards the names "Lucknow" (capture) "Taku Forts," "Pekin," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is blue with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

more than indicate some of the more interesting features of their history. In a previous chapter of this work we have glanced at one or two incidents—and those the closing ones—of Major Hodson's career; probably the best account we can give of the raising of Hodson's Horse will be in the words he himself employed in his correspondence.* After his wonderful ride from Umbâla to Meerut and back he wrote: "The pace pleased the Commander-in-Chief, I fancy, for he ordered me to raise a corps of Irregular Horse, and appointed me to the command. . . . My commission is to raise a body of Irregular Horse on the usual rates of pay and the regular complement of Native officers." Later on he writes: "For officers I hope to have permanently Macdowell, Shelbeare, Hugh Gough of the 3rd Cavalry . . . and young Craigie, who promises very well indeed." Not long after they came into action, and Hodson was able to write of them that they behaved admirably, in the trying duty of "enduring a very hot fire without acting." Soon after this he was obliged to give up the Guides, his own men requiring and desiring all his attention. Their uniform at this time was settled at a dust-coloured tunic with a scarlet shoulder sash and turban of the same colour, a vivid *tout ensemble* which procured them the soubriquet of the "Flamingoes." The following description of the *personnel* of the corps was given by an officer:—"The corps raised by that very gallant officer, Captain Hodson, is composed, more than anything we have hitherto had, of the old sirdars and soldiers of Runjeet Singh's time, in consequence of which, and the skill of their commander, they are already an extremely efficient corps. I was talking this morning to a very independent-looking Ressaldar, who seemed to be treated by his men much more as they do a European officer than is ever seen in our service, and who bore himself as the inferior of no one, and I found that he had been long a colonel of artillery in Runjeet Singh's service, and very openly went through the part he had taken against us in the revolt of 1849."

At the assault of Delhi the Brigadier wrote of the Native Cavalry that their behaviour was admirable, and that nothing could be steadier, nothing more soldier-like than their bearing.† The eulogy was well deserved; Hodson himself—whom a friend described as sitting "like a man carved in stone, and as calm and apparently as unconcerned as the sentries at the Horse Guards . . . though in deadly peril and the balls flying about us as thick as hail"—wrote:—

"A pleasant position we were in, under this infernal fire, and never returning a

* See "Hodson of Hodson's Horse," by the Rev. S. H. Hodson

† Despatches.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

shot. Our artillery blazed away, of course, but we had to sit in our saddles and be knocked over. However I am happy to say we saved the guns. The front we kept was so steady as to keep them back until some of the Guide infantry came down and went at them. I have been in a good many fights now, but always under such a heavy fire as this with my own regiment, and there is always excitement, cheering on your men, who are replying to the enemy's fire; but here we were in front of a lot of gardens perfectly impracticable for cavalry, under a fire of musketry which I have seldom seen equalled, the enemy quite concealed, and here we had to sit for three hours. Had we retired, they would at once have taken our guns. Had the guns retired with us, we should have lost the position. No infantry could be spared to assist us, so we had to sit there. Men and horses were knocked over every minute. We suffered terribly." It was noticeable all through the conflict of the Mutiny that Hodson's Horse, when engaged, generally managed to have two or three single combats. A remarkable instance of this occurred during the siege of Lucknow. Just after Banks of the 7th Hussars had been cut down, and when his infuriated regiment had taken a terrible revenge on his assailants, it was found that the two leaders of the rebels, men of remarkable strength, by undeniable

". . . . merit
Raised to that bad eminence,"

remained, one being the Daroga, and the other his comrade in arms.

This was work congenial to the troopers of Hodson's Horse. "Two gallant Sikh sowars now rode up, one of whom at once attacked the Daroga; his companion tackled the other. A tremendous blow straight down upon the Sikh's left shoulder was delivered by the Daroga with such force that, received as it was by the sowar upon his shield, it made him reel in his saddle. A sweeping return cut was given by the Sikh at the Daroga's head, but he sprang out of the way and aimed a stroke at the sowar's side. This the Sikh parried with his sword, and then, finding he was at a disadvantage by fighting on horseback, he flung himself from the saddle, and rushed at the maddened Daroga. Another well-aimed blow by the infuriated man, which would have cleft the sowar's skull, was received again upon his shield; yet such was its force, that it sent him backwards to the ground; but springing to his feet before the Daroga could get at him, he renewed the combat. For some minutes this kind of fearful work went on between the two. Once more was the Sikh struck down, his life being again saved by the receipt of the blow upon his trusty shield. Three times altogether was he dashed

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

to the earth, from which he sprang up with rapidity, or he would have been slain in an instant. On the last occasion, quickly rising from his prostrate position, he made a desperate effort to end the combat. He leaped well to the left, and as he did so he gave a sweeping backward cut at his adversary's head. The Daroga with the quickness of lightning saw his danger, and jumped aside to avoid the blow, but the keen edge of the sowar's tulwar near its point reached the back of his opponent's neck. The Daroga staggered to the ground, his head fell forward, and he was instantly despatched by a well-directed point from his Sikh antagonist. Whilst this was going on a similar combat took place between the other Sikh soldier and the remaining enemy. This brave Sowar, after many narrow escapes, also succeeded in killing his man."*

It would be interesting—the temptation is well nigh irresistible—to follow the gallant Hodson's Horse throughout the Mutiny, to picture the stirring scenes in which they participated, to watch the ever-growing fame of the chivalrous leader to the moment when, with a cheery laugh and the old reckless courage, he received his death-wound in an undertaking in which he had joined from a spirit of sheer daring—to watch the last moments of one of England's bravest sons as—with God's name and his wife's on his lips—he died like a knightly gentleman, and found, elsewhere than here, a fitting companionship "with loyal hearts and true." But we must, of necessity, content ourselves with noting very briefly the bare record of the corps now represented by the 9th and 10th Bengal Cavalry. Before long their numbers admitted of division.

We read of one detachment, under Lieutenant Hugh Gough, being sent with Colonel Greathed's column towards Agra, and afterwards joining Sir Colin Campbell's force, and sharing, with much distinction, in the final relief of Lucknow. The main body, with their Commandant, accompanied Brigadier Showers, and rendered most valuable service in harassing and cutting off the retreat of the flying enemy, as well as in the equally important duty of bringing in supplies. "Their rapidity of movement and dashing courage made them a terror to the rebel forces, who had, on more than one occasion, painful experience of the keenness of their sabres."

We have before † referred to the execution of the Princes of Delhi by Hodson, but any reference to the corps raised by him would be incomplete without giving his own account of the transaction. It is necessary, first of all, to realize the estimate he had formed—and few men could form a juster—of the critical position in which the British Power was placed.

* Elliott. † Vol. ii. p. 23.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"None but those," he wrote, "who fought through the first six weeks of the campaign know on what a thread our lives and the safety of the Empire hung, or can appreciate the sufferings and exertions of those days of watchfulness and combat, of fearful heat and exhaustion, of trial and danger. I look back on them with a feeling of almost doubt whether they were real or only a foul dream. This day* will be a memorable one in the annals of the Empire; the restoration of British rule in the East dates from the 20th September, 1857." His reference to the execution of the princes is as follows:—

"I was fortunate enough to capture the King and his favourite wife. To-day, more fortunate still, I have seized and destroyed the King's two sons and a grandson (the famous, or rather infamous, Abu Bukr), the villains who ordered the massacre of our women and children, and stood by and witnessed the foul barbarity; their bodies are now lying on the spot where those of the unfortunate ladies were exposed. I am very tired, but very much satisfied with my day's work, and so seem all hands. . . . . In twenty-four hours, therefore, I disposed of the principal members of the house of Timur the Tartar. I am not cruel, but I confess I did rejoice at the opportunity of ridding the earth of these wretches. I intended to have had them hung, but when it came to a question of they or us I had no time for deliberation."

This was the man whose action "superior" critics have condemned. The verdict of this country is well expressed in the words which appeared in the leading journal when the news of his death reached our shores.

"The country will receive with lively regret the news that the gallant Major Hodson, who has given his name to an invincible and almost ubiquitous body of cavalry, was killed in the attack on Lucknow. Major Hodson has been from the very beginning of this war fighting everywhere and against any odds with all the spirit of a Paladin of old."

In the latter part of the Egyptian War the 9th Bengal Lancers (1st Hodson's Horse) were engaged, Colonels Palmer and Clifford being respectively first and second in command. At the battle of El Teb Lieutenant Probyn was severely wounded in one of the desperate charges made by our cavalry. The 10th Bengal Lancers (2nd Hodson's Horse) took part in the Abyssinian Campaign and in the Afghan War of 1878-80; amongst their more brilliant achievements in which may be mentioned the charge which rescued Captain Creagh's sorely tried little force at Dakka. During the first part

* The day previous to the execution of the Princes.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of the campaign they were chiefly occupied in guarding the Pass from Jamrud to Basawal, and subsequently as a rear guard in the retreat from Jellalabad. In April, 1879, while in garrison at Dakka,* the 10th, under Captain Strong, made a most successful charge against a strong body of the enemy who were severely pressing a body of our infantry. For some time after the main body had retired, the 10th remained in the Khyber, suffering, says a record, "great privation from the inadequacy of the supply of forage and water, and performing much hard work with convoys." On the fresh outbreak of war in 1879, the Duke of Cambridge's Own were with General Gough's column, and were the first corps of the army to pass through the celebrated defile since 1842. There was certainly no lack of fighting in this campaign; the Ghilzais were no contemptible foes, and at Jagdalak and Kam Daka, the 10th rendered most efficient service. Their sojourn in the Khyber, and the privations of all sorts from which they there suffered, rendered it necessary for the regiment to return to India in February, 1880. And with this brief mention of their later career we must take leave of one of Her Majesty's most distinguished regiments of Indian Cavalry —Hodson's Horse.†

The 11th (Prince of Wales's Own) BENGAL CAVALRY, formerly the 1st Sikh Cavalry, date their present formation from 1858. They were amongst the first fruits of our conquest of the Punjaub, and proved that the men whose prowess we had tested in many a desperate field were henceforth to be relied upon as amongst our most valued warriors.

The story of the capture of Lucknow, and of the occurrences which immediately preceded and followed it, is everywhere coloured by brilliant instances of Sikh devotion; and immediately after the capture, the command of the 1st Sikh Cavalry was given to Dighton Probyn who, with other regiments of their race, had done such splendid deeds.

When the Chinese War broke out, it was undoubtedly a goodly brotherhood of horsemen that accompanied the force invading the Flowery Land—the King's Dragoon Guards, and the troopers of Probyn and Fane. It is easy to fancy the stalwart Sikhs, encamped on the right of the camp, "with their fine Arab horses picketed in rows hoof deep in slush notwithstanding that straw is spread under each, the gay pendant-topped spear belonging to each standing fixed in the ground by the side of his horse." But before the war was over these picturesque horsemen were to be seen in more

* Major Barnes of the regiment was in command of the garrison.

† The Hon. Colonel of the 10th Bengal Cavalry is H.R.H. the Duke of Cambridge.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

terrible guise, faces aflame and sabres instinct with the fury of revenge. Amongst those treacherously captured with Mr. Parkes was one of Probyn's sowars, and from that time woe betide the unfortunate Celestial who encountered any of those terrible Sikhs. It will, perhaps, give the best idea of the services rendered by them in the China War if we quote extracts from Sir Hope Grant's despatches, bearing upon the 11th Bengal Cavalry.

"On one occasion," writes the General, "Sir John Michel encountered such heavy masses on his left that he had some difficulty in holding his position, and was attacked by a large body of Tartar cavalry. Probyn, who had only a hundred of his regiment with him at the time, was ordered to charge to the front, which he did in most gallant style, riding in amongst them with such vigour and determination that they could not withstand his attack for a moment, and fled in utter consternation."

On another: "I ordered Probyn, with the 1st Irregular Cavalry, to make another reconnaissance, and to ascertain the whereabouts of the Tartar camp, a task which this excellent officer performed with great judgment. He came upon their pickets, drove them in, and discovered their camping-ground to be on the north-east of the town."

When the seizure of Mr. Parkes became known, Sir Hope Grant's movements were prompt. The enemy were attacked there and then and utterly routed. "On the left Probyn's Horse (with whom were the King's Dragoon Guards) pursued the foe for miles upon miles, cutting down on every hand the conical-hatted matchlockmen. . . . Led on by their officers the Sikhs did great execution. One grim old trooper was heard to describe the Chinese Army as like so many *moorgee*,* very difficult to overtake, and quite harmless when caught."

At Kaowle, we again hear of Probyn's Sikhs distinguishing themselves. Making a long detour—so long that men began to wonder where they were—they suddenly appeared on the enemy's flank, and then "the gallant major at the head of seven hundred Sikh warriors came thundering in headlong charge upon the Tartars, who wheeled about and fled." When peace was concluded, Probyn's Horse returned to India, having amply earned the praise and distinctions awarded them for their share in the China War.†

The 11th Cavalry formed part of the Cavalry Brigade of the Peshawur Field Force, which they joined in November, 1878, in time for the capture of Ali Musjid. They then remained on the line of communications, and for about a month had plenty of work, the rest of the cavalry having gone on to Jellalabad. The 11th followed,

* Wildfowl.

† See *post*, 19th Cavalry, Sir Hope Grant's Despatch.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

however, in the following January and took part in most of the "affairs" which enlivened Sir Samuel Browne's sojourn there. Under Lieutenants Money and Heath they served with much distinction in General Tytler's expeditions against the Shinwaris, and in the action of Deh Sarak.

The 12th Bengal Cavalry,* formerly the 2nd Sikh Cavalry, date, like Probyn's Horse, from the period of the Mutiny, during which, however, they were not so actively engaged. To come to the year in which they won their first distinction, we find that when the camp was formed at Antalo at the commencement of the Abyssinian War the 12th Bengal were attached to the second Brigade under General Wilby. During the march on Magdala they were in the rear, and at the storming were disposed with the bulk of the other cavalry to cut off the retreat of the fugitives.

Eleven years were to elapse before they again drew the sword in any campaign of magnitude, and then it was the Afghan War. They were attached to the Kurrum Valley Force, and took part in the earliest skirmishes; Lieutenant Lynch with some twenty troopers being with General Roberts in the affair of the 28th November. They were present at the storming of the Peiwar Kotal a few days later, and the admirable behaviour of a squadron which had been sent forward under Captains Green and Moore was much remarked. It may perhaps be mentioned that a party of the 12th escorted the fated Cavagnari as far as the top of the Shutargardan on his way to Kabul. After the terrible news of the massacre the regiment occupied Kushai, and went on with the rest of the cavalry to Charasiah. They rendered admirable service in the capture of Kabul, shortly after which they took part in MacPherson's operations in the Khoord Kabul, on one occasion giving timely assistance to some of the 67th Foot who were being pressed by the enemy. On the 22nd December an important and dangerous piece of work fell to their lot. Sir F. Roberts directed them to move out of Sherpur shortly after midnight to effect a junction with the garrison at Lataband. Issuing in single file under command of Major Green, they managed to elude the vigilance of the enemy, but nearly encountered a serious mishap in crossing a deep gully, the frozen sides of which proved

* The 12th Bengal Cavalry bear "Abyssinia," "Peiwar Kotal," "Charasia," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is blue with blue facings.

The 13th (Duke of Connaught's) Bengal Cavalry bear "Afghanistan, 1878-80," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir." The uniform is dark blue with scarlet facings.

The 14th Bengal Cavalry bear "Charasia," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark blue with scarlet facings.

The 15th Bengal (Cureton's Mooltanee) Cavalry have "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is blue with scarlet, facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

fatal to some of the horses. The riders, however, managed to get back safely to Shupur. They had some sharp fighting before they could reach Lataband, having seven men killed or wounded, but the rest of the campaign was comparatively uneventful, and they returned to India in April, 1880.

The 13th (the Duke of Connaught's) BENGAL CAVALRY used formerly to be known as the 4th Sikh, and date from the same period. Passing over the earlier years we find that when the Afghan Campaign commenced the 13th were early in the field. They were attached to the Peshawur Valley Field Force, and under Major MacNaughton did some good work in the Bazar Valley, in cutting off the enemy's retreat from the China Hill, and in the affair in the Sasobai Pass. It was on this last occasion that Lieutenant Murray performed an act worthy of the Victoria Cross in rescuing a sowar whose horse had been killed. Some of the regiment under Major Thompson were with General Tytler when he defeated the enemy at Deh Sarak. During the second campaign the 13th were nearly exclusively occupied in escort duty; on the 10th and 14th of December taking an important part in the skirmishes at Kandoh and Zawa respectively.

Under Colonel Pennington they served in the Egyptian War of 1882, and rendered most valuable service. One of the most important reconnaissances of the Tel-el-Kebir entrenchments was made by Major MacDonald with a dozen troopers; and at what is known as the second engagement of Kassassin the regiment greatly distinguished itself. "Our troops were very nearly being surprised," writes Mr. Grant in his history of the war; "for the first intimation that General Graham had of the coming attack was when Colonel Pennington, of the 13th Bengal Lancers, rode out at five in the morning to post vedettes, and found himself, to his astonishment, in the presence of three squadrons of cavalry and a column of infantry, advancing in regular attack formation.

"The former were coming on, firing from their saddles as usual, and making no attempt to charge. Through the misty morning air a second and stronger line of cavalry could be observed advancing, while far across the level desert the smoke of several trains coming on from Tel-el-Kebir could be seen, thus showing that something more serious was on the *tapis* than the usual exchange of morning shots at long ranges. Sending two of his lancers back to camp at a gallop to give warning of the approaching attack, Colonel Pennington, with great coolness and judgment, dismounted his remaining twenty-eight men and opened fire from behind a sandy ridge. The hostile cavalry continued to advance steadily, and eventually surrounded him, on which he gave the order

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE 13th BENGAL LANCERS.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

to mount, and charge home to the British camp. "His Lancers—clad in dark blue, faced with red—did so gallantly, with the loss of only one, while under lance or tulwar ten Egyptians fell in the dust; and thanks to his cool courage, and the promptitude of other cavalry and mounted men, the infantry and artillery had time to form line of battle."

The 13th were with Drury Lowe in his daring ride to capture Cairo, and were in advance of the force. It may also be of interest to note that on the occasion of the return of the Khedive to the city his escort was furnished by the same splendid regiment, concerning whose appearance an interesting writer remarks, "I hear that the Khedive's reception was very respectful, if not cordial, and the escort of the 13th Bengal Lancers, of course, produced an effect upon the people. These troopers, with their rolling eyes, fierce up-curled moustaches and beards, their long bamboo lances with red and blue pennons, big-turbaned, jack-booted, and much be-belted, are admirable in the way of a picturesque body-guard, and have established themselves as a feature in the varied scenery of the Alexandrian streets."

The 14th BENGAL date practically from November, 1857, though the official date is June, 1858. It was, however, certainly in the former month that Captain Murray—who had served as a trooper at Shahgunge the previous July, and in August commanded a troop of Rajah Gobind Singh's Cavalry at Allyghur—received orders to raise, from the ranks of his comrades of the latter engagement, a troop of Jât Horse. One of the first operations in which the newly-raised regiment, now the 14th Bengal Cavalry, were engaged was the defeat of three times their number of rebel horse at Kutchla Gaut. After that Murray's Jât Cavalry kept in check the whole of the Rohilcund rebels till March of 1858, and during the three following months kept successful ward over the Ghauts in the Allyghur and Etah Districts. During the second Oude campaign, at Bootwul, in the fierce hill fighting, at Darriahpore, and during the final conflicts on the Nepal frontier, which gave the death blow to the rebellion which had threatened to be so fatal, the Jât Horse were the theme of constant and well deserved praise. We must reluctantly pass on with this very short notice, and take up the thread of the record in the Afghan War of 1878. Under Major Mitford* they joined the Kurram Field Force, and took part in the fighting in the Kohat Valley. They suffered more from fever than from the enemy, and marched on foot from Peiwar Kotal, their horses carrying provisions, arriving in time to share in the battle of Charasiah. Captain Neville of the regiment made a daring reconnaissance

* Major Mitford's work is one of the best amongst the many written about the Afghan Campaign.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

along the Chardeh Valley road, during which his company of twenty sowars was fired upon, and during and after the battle the regiment was actively engaged. During one of the engagements outside Kabul, wherein we read, "all fought valiantly, but none more so than Captain Neville's squadron of the 14th, numbering forty-four lances all told." Lieutenant Forbes was killed, Lieutenant Hardy of the Artillery chivalrously choosing certain death to "deserting that poor youngster."* When the ever-encroaching masses of the enemy rendered the position precarious, it became necessary to communicate with Gough, and for this enterprise a non-commissioned officer and three men of the 14th were let down over the walls and in momentary peril of their lives effected the task. The regiment, during their sojourn in Afghanistan, were incessantly employed, and well deserved the "distinctions" and the official praise that they have received.

The 15th Bengal Cavalry (Cureton's Mooltanee) were raised in the early part of 1858. Previously, however, to that date the Mooltanees had earned for themselves a splendid name under Edwardes in the Sikh War of 1848, when, in conjunction with the troops of the Nawab of Bhawulpore, they drove Dewan the Moolraj before them, defeating him with ease and rapidity. The following account of the actual formation of the present regiment may be taken as accurate: "When the Mutiny broke out Herbert Edwardes bethought him of his trusty comrades of 1848, and wrote to invite them to join his standard. His letter reached Dehra Ishmael Khan on the 20th of May, and on the 1st of June Gholam Hussan Khan (subsequently the Native Envoy of Chamberlain's Kabul Mission) appeared at Peshawur followed by three hundred horsemen. When the Sepoys broke out into mutiny in the Peshawur District Gholam Hussan Khan and his followers did good service, and on the restoration of tranquillity beyond the Indus he petitioned to be allowed to form a regiment of six hundred sabres. His request was granted, and a few days later Captain Cureton arrived to take command."

The second in command was Lieutenant Dixon, and the other British officers were Lieutenants Williams, Gosling, and Smith. The strength of the regiment was six troops, five of Mooltanee Pathans, and one of Mooltanee Beloochees, numbering altogether some six hundred sabres.

As "Cureton's Horse" they did splendid service in Brigadier Jones's Field Force, and in the engagement of the 17th April it is said that "one of their officers† slew eight men with his revolver, every other man in the regiment disposing of at least three men

* See the accounts by Mitford, Grant, Hensman, and Shadbolt.

† Lieutenant Gosling, who was killed in action shortly after.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

each with sword, lance, carbine, pistol, or matchlock." The next day a Native officer, Jemadar Emam Buksh Khan, with only forty men of the corps, captured a fort held by a vastly superior force; three days later they charged and routed a strong force of rebel cavalry; and about the same time two hundred of them, under Cureton, charged some fifteen hundred of the enemy, and dispersed them with heavy loss.

"On one occasion, Lieutenant Dixon, with a weak squadron of Mooltanees, supported by some police cavalry, found a large body of rebel infantry with two guns drawn up in his front; charging down upon them he discovered as he approached that a nullah intervened between him and the enemy. The sight of the obstacle was powerless to check the boiling courage of the Mooltanees and their gallant leader. Onward they sweep with unavailing ardour. A gallant attempt to cross was made, but the enemy maintained a heavy fire on the spot, and the horses became entangled in the quicksands; Dixon himself was shot through the left shoulder and his charger killed, while men and horses fell rapidly around him. Success being clearly impossible a retreat was ordered. Nothing like a panic, however, ensued, and in spite of a hot fire the Mooltanees carried off all their wounded. Thus, for the first time since becoming a regiment, did the Mooltanees suffer a repulse—but not a dishonourable one."

At Bareilly and Shahjehanpore, at Bunai and Shahabad they very greatly distinguished themselves; at Biswa in the following December they charged the enemy's cavalry, under the leadership of Feroze Shah, and entirely defeated them after an encounter which has been described as "one of the finest instances of the shock of cavalry which occurred during the Mutiny."*

"It was a curious sight," says the writer before referred to, "to behold these wild looking horsemen performing the duties of rear guard on the line of march. On both flanks, riding along in a very *dégagé* manner, might be seen couples of this ragged border cavalry, supported by a disorderly-looking clump or so, from amongst whose ranks a lance with its bright-coloured pennon would here and there emerge. Suddenly a neilghei or a black buck, disturbed in its lair by the advancing soldiery, makes a rush across the line of march. Immediately the soldier disappears in the hunter, discipline is thrown to the winds, spurs set to their horses, and a dozen or twenty eager horsemen dash furiously after the game." Their participation in the recent Afghan Campaign will be found referred to in the accounts of other regiments.

* An interesting account of Cureton's Mooltanees appeared in the *Cornhill Magazine* for January, 1863.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 16th* Bengal Cavalry may be said to have gained their principal laurels in the Hazara Campaign, in which they rendered very valuable service. That campaign, and the more familiar development of it known as the "Black Mountain Expedition," may be taken as typical examples of much of the warfare in which the Native army is from time to time engaged—harassing, fatiguing, often perilous, and seldom known much of in the western portion of the empire. Yet they both make and test splendid soldiers, and, as in this case, have proved the occasion for both regiments and men to earn distinction.

The 17th Bengal Cavalry served during the Jowaki expedition of 1877, and afterwards in Afghanistan. During the first Afghan campaign they formed part of the Peshawur garrison, and were employed in guarding the Khyber line of communication. In January of 1880, some fifty of their number took part in the fighting on the Gara Heights. Another detachment subsequently accompanied Colonel Walker on his expedition into the Lughman Valley. Though busily employed during the campaign, the 17th were not engaged in any of the more familiar actions.

The 18th Bengal Lancers, formerly the 2nd Mahratta Horse, date from August, 1858. Previously to that time the name of the Mahratta Horse had become a household word, associated as it was with one of the most brilliant exploits performed during the Mutiny, namely, the rescue of the British at Kolopore by Lieutenant W. A. Kerr of the South Mahratta Horse with fifty of his troopers. Under Captain F. H. Smith they fought at the action of Ferozeshah in December, 1858, and materially contributed to the severe castigation inflicted by Sir R. Napier upon the rebels. The first "distinction" that they bear is that of "Afghanistan, 1879-80." In September of the former year they joined the force, and under Majors Davidson, Marsh, and Wheeler rendered from time to time most valuable service. For some time their principal duty was the important one of guarding the line of communication. Subsequently they took part in the Zaimusht Expedition, the storming of Zawa, the combat at Thal, and the Wazin Expedition.

The 19th Bengal Cavalry, formerly Fane's Horse, date from 1860, and are one of the most distinguished regiments in the army. Raised by the officer whose name they bear they soon found more congenial work than that of crushing out the last remnants

* The 16th Bengal Cavalry have a blue uniform with blue facings.
The 17th Bengal Cavalry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is blue with white facings.
The 18th Bengal Lancers have "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with blue facings.
The 19th Bengal Cavalry have "Taku Forts," "Pekin," "Ahmed Khel," "Afghanistan, 1878-80."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of the Mutiny. In the China War they vied with that other famous cavalry regiment—Probyn's Horse—in daring and brilliant exploits. The services of the former we have referred to before, but the two are so closely identified that we shall not err in quoting here the despatch from the Commander-in-Chief in which he refers to the services of the two regiments.

"My Lord,—The 1st Sikh Irregular Cavalry, under Major Probyn, and Fane's Horse, under Captain Fane, have performed their work most admirably. On more than one occasion these regiments have been opposed to, and have successfully charged, a vastly superior force of the enemy's cavalry; and their conduct in the field excited the admiration of the French as well as of the English troops. It is not only on the field of battle that their services have been so important during the recent campaign, but in performing the numerous other duties required of them of an infinitely more harassing nature—patrols, escorts, reconnaissances, as well as the task of carrying letters almost daily between Tien-tsin and Pekin (a distance of 75 miles) for upwards of a month, during which they were frequently fired upon—their services have been of the utmost value to the expedition. I beg to recommend Major Probyn and Captain Fane to your Excellency's most favourable notice. . . . I have, &c. J. Hope Grant, *Lieutenant General, Commander of the Forces.*" *

In the attack on Sinho, Lieutenant Macgregor with thirty troopers greatly distinguished themselves. They had been left as an escort to a small battery of fieldpieces, when a large force of the enemy appeared. Sir Hope Grant thus describes the incident:—

"A body of about 4,000 Tartar cavalry attacked us in the most gallant style, very nearly captured Stirling's three 6-pounders, and surrounded the whole of our column in the manner customary with Eastern horsemen; but the Armstrong guns opened, and our own cavalry was let loose upon them with great effect. The Sikhs understood this style of warfare, and committed great havoc amongst the Tartars—driving them eventually off the field."

The attack was so sudden that it was all Macgregor could do to arrange his men in time, but the victory, as we have seen, was decisive, though Macgregor had two severe wounds. When our envoy, Mr. Parkes, was sent forward to treat with the treacherous enemy, the greater part of his escort consisted of troopers of Fane's Horse under Lieutenant Anderson, who were taken prisoners. It may well be imagined that the fate of their comrades acted as an additional incentive to the

* Despatches: 21st November, 1860.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

gallant troopers in the engagement which followed. They pursued the enemy with great slaughter through the village they occupied, and a squadron of the regiment under Lieutenant (afterwards Colonel) Upperton was placed at the disposal of the French general, whose army was entirely deficient in cavalry. A very severe combat took place in which, at one time, it seemed as though the French would lose their guns, but our gallant little force of cavalry now charged the Tartars, and, though a handful compared with them, used their sharp swords with such effect that the enemy was compelled to retreat. On the occasion of another very brilliant charge outside Kaowle the King's Dragoon Guards and Fane's Horse again distinguished themselves. Fane's men closely followed their British comrades in pursuit, "and on reaching the margin of a road jumped into it over an interposing high bank and ditch. The front rank cleared it well; but the men in rear, unable to see before them owing to the excessive dust, almost all rolled into the ditch." Nevertheless, as Sir Hope Grant reported, the Tartars had but a poor chance, and suffered severely.

The concluding scene of the war was a sad one for the brave regiment. After countless excuses and falsehoods, Mr. Parkes and his fellow prisoners were grudgingly liberated. Amongst them were some of Fane's troopers whose terrible plight showed too plainly the fearful torture to which they had been subjected. One day when the present Lord Wolseley was reconnoitring with a few cavalry he came across a body of Tartar horse escorting some carts. We have before mentioned* the ghastly burden they carried—the bodies of our gallant soldiers. Decomposition had set in so that none of them were recognisable, but their garments proved them to be (amongst others) Lieutenant Anderson Hawes, and eight of his troopers. On the conclusion of the war the 19th were amongst the troops left to garrison Tien-tsin. When the Afghan War broke out, the 19th were amongst the troops to participate; being ordered to join Stewart's army, they marched 260 miles in fifteen days. They were present at Khelati, Ghilzie, and performed much arduous service in reconnaissances. Very distinguished were they at Ahmed Khel, where for a time it seemed as though the whole force of the Afghan Army was concentrated over their destruction. They asserted their predominance, but at a loss of some sixty killed and wounded. They fought outside Ghazni, with Sir J. Hills in the Logan Valley, and at the brisk combat of Patkao Sharra took a prominent part, losing two killed and fifteen wounded.†

* Vol. i., p. 24.

† There were no fewer than seventeen decorations of the Order of Valour assigned to the rank and file of the regiment.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The PUNJAUB CAVALRY, which consists of the Guide Cavalry, and the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 5th regiments of Punjaub Cavalry,* rank, when acting with other Bengal troops, immediately after the 8th Bengal Cavalry, and in the order named.

The GUIDES date from 1846, in which year they were raised for "general service," and it would be difficult to name any body of soldiers whose service has been—in the untechnical sense of the word—more general, and still more difficult to name any by whom this service has been more splendidly performed. A goodly sized volume of stirring incident might well be filled with the records of the Guides; it is not too much to say that since their formation they have been constantly and actively employed. The Corps of Guides was raised towards the conclusion of the Sutlej Campaign to act as soldiers as well as in the capacity indicated by their name.† The men were all selected for their sagacity and intelligence, without reference to race, caste, or creed, and most of them were warlike mountaineers from the tribes of Upper India.‡ The later doings of the corps are so full of interest that we will merely mention concerning their earlier records that for their participation in the Punjaub Campaign they bear the three first distinctions on their colours of "Punjaub," "Mooltan," and "Goojerat." In the Khuttuck Campaign of 1852 they gained great distinction, and more than one of their number attracted individual attention by his courage. The following account is given in the useful work of Major Elliott and Colonel Knollys of an incident in the war. The enemy had taken up a very strong position at the foot of a hill. "Captain Turner of the Guides, with a company of his regiment, was ordered to dislodge

* The corps of Guides (Queen's Own) bear the Royal cypher within the Garter, and "Punjab," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Delhi," "Ali Musjid," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is drab with facings of red (piping).

The 1st Punjaub Cavalry bear "Delhi," "Lucknow" (relief and capture), "Ahmed Khel," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark blue with red facings.

The 2nd Punjaub Cavalry bear "Delhi," "Lucknow" (relief and capture), "Ahmed Khel," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is scarlet with dark blue facings.

The 3rd Punjaub Cavalry bear "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is blue with red facings.

The 5th Punjaub Cavalry bear "Delhi" (relief and capture), "Charasia," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark green with scarlet facings.

The 1st Central India Horse bear "Afghanistan, 1879-80," "Kandahar, 1880." The uniform is drab with maroon facings.

The 2nd Central India Horse bear "Afghanistan, 1879-80," "Kandahar, 1880." The uniform is drab with maroon facings.

† The well known regiment in the French Army bearing the same appellation will immediately suggest itself. In that army the Fusilier Guides consisted of twenty-five men, twelve being mounted. In 1796, a body of cavalry received the same name and were employed as a sort of bodyguard to the Commander-in-Chief.

‡ See *Allen's Indian Mail.*

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

them. After a gallant struggle he succeeded in driving them out of the village. They then retreated by a path only broad enough for one man at a time, which led to the top of a cliff, which broke the ascent of the hill. Having reached the summit, they threw themselves flat on the ground and opened a heavy fire on Turner and his men. Turner followed them till he reached the bottom of the cliff. Here he was safe, but he was in an awkward, not to say critical, position. The Khuttucks could not touch him, but he could not climb the cliff, nor could he retire without suffering serious loss." From this predicament he was rescued by Dr. Lyell, with some Goorkhas. Two other men also joined the little band, though they had no business to be with it. One was Koer Singh Subadar, of the Goorkha company of the Guides. Koer Singh was a quiet, gentle little fellow, always smiling, but in battle a very lion. The other was Dal Singh, a trooper in the Guide Cavalry, who jumped off his horse, and, without asking anyone's leave, strode after the doctor, notwithstanding that his long boots were quite unsuited for climbing hills." At length twenty-four men reached the top of the hill, among them being Koer Singh. At that moment Dal Singh, who had been impeded by his long trooper's boots, rushed in, and, "taking in the situation at a glance, said, 'Sahib, we mustn't lie here all day. I'll jump on the top of this sungur, the enemy will fire, and we can rush on them before they can reload.' Without waiting for an answer, and before Lyell could stop him, he jumped upon the sungur, waved his sword, and abused the Khuttucks in the most voluble manner. The Khuttucks fell into the trap; every man fired and missed. Dal Singh shouted, 'Now, Sahib.' Lyell sprang over the wall, accompanied by Koer Singh and Dal Singh, and followed by the Goorkhas, and charged the foe, who immediately fled. Turner with his men then climbed the cliff, and the two parties uniting, pressed so rapidly in pursuit that the Khuttucks had no time to load."

Ever memorable in the history of the Guides will be their splendid march to Delhi at the outbreak of the Mutiny. They were at Meerut when the news reached them, and under Captain Daly accomplished the journey, 750 miles, and in the hottest season of the year, in *twenty-eight days !* Well may we believe that the cheers in the British camp were long and loud when Captain H. Daly marched in at the head of his three troops of cavalry and six companies of infantry. Sir Hope Grant has left it on record that throughout the whole of his Indian and China experiences he never saw a similar rapidity of march.* In the assault on Delhi Captain Daly was shot through the shoulder,

* *Incidents in the Sepoy War:* Hope Grant.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and Major Gough, Lieutenant Hawes, Lieutenant Mackenzie, and Captain Montgomerie all greatly distinguished themselves. It was said that during the subsequent operations before Delhi these famous Punjaub irregulars lost the whole of their officers three times over. On the occasion of the sortie of the 9th of June, which the Guides materially assisted in repelling, they "displayed a valour that ended in rashness; they pursued the flying rebels close under the walls of Delhi, and exposed themselves to a dreadful fire, under which they suffered severely. Maddened to delirium with bhang, opium, and churries, many of the sepoys here acted, looked, and fought like incarnate fiends. Daly, the gallant Irishman who led the Guides, and Hawes were wounded; and Quentin Battye, a young lieutenant, commander of the cavalry, described as a joyous, boyish, but noble fellow, whose every thought was honour, was struck in the stomach by a round shot," and died twenty-four hours after, with the old schoolboy jest on his lips—"*Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori.*"

The Guides and Hodson's Horse worked very much together in those Mutiny days, as was but natural when we remember Hodson's connection with the former corps. Charles Gough—who may be said to have four times gained the Victoria Cross—was in the Guides when two of the achievements were performed. On the 14th of August in a sharp skirmish at Khurkemdah he rescued his brother, who was wounded and about to be killed, and three days later, at the head of a troop of the Guides, "displayed conspicuous gallantry, cutting down two of the enemy's horsemen, with one of whom he had a desperate hand-to-hand conflict." But we must pass from the honour-crowded page of the Mutiny to mention briefly some of the other campaigns in which the Guides have been employed. Previous to the Mutiny they had been engaged in the Eusofzaie Campaign of 1851, under Sir Sidney Cotton. Scarcely had our power been established over the rebels when the Cabool Kheel Wuzerees claimed their attention, and later years saw them engaged in the Hazara, Black Mountain, and Jowaki expeditions, and distinguishing themselves at Skhakat and the Utman Kheyl villages. Amongst the officers who served with credit during these years are Colonels Ward, Campbell, and Hammond, and Majors Battye and Cooke Collis. The Afghan War again brought this splendid corps to the front. They shared in General Browne's action on the 21st of November, 1878,* and the following March it was a troop of the Guides under Lieutenant Hamilton that came to succour the gallant Captain Leach in his heroic

* Space prevents our distinguishing between the services of the cavalry and the infantry. In the action above noticed it was the cavalry that were engaged, the infantry being told off to occupy the Kata Kushtia heights.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

defence of a wounded brother officer. The next month saw them in the thick of the fight at Futtehabad. At the most critical moment they charged; in the very moment of victory their gallant Battye fell dead, pierced by three bullets. The catastrophe seemed to transport Hamilton, the second in command, with the fury of vengeance, nor were the Guides whom he had led so long slow to avenge "one of England's best officers and worthiest soldiers." Then, writes a chronicler, "these magnificent and intelligent Native soldiers rushed fiercely forward. At every stroke of their swords was a death. Eagerly they pressed on and spared not; their leader's death was amply avenged." Impetuous as was the lead made by Lieutenant Hamilton, a Sowar, Dowlat Ram, kept ever at his side, till his horse fell and a band of exulting Afghans rushed forward to slay their prostrate foe. But they reckoned without that stubborn factor, a British officer. Between the threatened death and Dowlat Ram was Lieutenant Hamilton, who, at infinite peril, kept the foe at bay till with a rush the body of the Guides swept onward; the Afghan warriors lay dead upon the plain, while still side by side, foremost in that charge for vengeance, rode the Lieutenant and Sowar of the Guides. Before the war ended a somewhat similar instance of the *camaraderie* between officers and troopers occurred. It was in one of the combats on the Asmai heights that Captain Hammond, who with a few of his men had been keeping the foe in check, saw one of his followers fall as the order to retire was given. The Afghans were pressing forward, but Captain Hammond faced them and, regardless of their continued firing, assisted his wounded Guide out of danger.

Eighty men of the Guides, of whom a third were cavalry, formed Cavagnari's escort, and of these eighty all, with the exception of eight, fell in defence of the Residency on the fatal 3rd of September, 1879. In the battle on the Siah Sang Ridge, the cavalry under Colonel Stewart again distinguished themselves, vying with the 9th Lancers in their impetuous charges, and losing twenty-one in killed and wounded. The infantry formed part of the advance column under Colonel Jenkins of that corps, which on the 14th of December carried the Asmai Heights. Sixteen were killed, including two native officers, and twenty-six wounded, amongst the latter being Captain Battye, two of whose relatives had, as we have mentioned, died while serving in the corps. At the battle of Charasiah five were killed, and twenty-one wounded. On the return march to India the corps occupied the honourable position of rear guard.* They fought in the Umbeyla Campaign, and still more recently against the Bonerwals, in

* During the campaign no fewer than twenty-two orders of merit were received by men of the Guides.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

which service Colonel Hutchinson was mortally wounded. In concluding our sketch of the Queen's Own Corps of Guides, we cannot do better than quote the Order of the Brigadier, when—after Delhi—the Guides returned to their quarters, the troops there being paraded in their honour: "Great and important to the British Government have been the services of this gallant body now before you—these gallant Guides, covered with glory."

The four other cavalry regiments of the Punjaub Force next claim our attention:—the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 5th Punjaub Cavalry. We will take the first-named of these as typical of the others.

The 1st Punjaub Cavalry was raised in 1849 by Lieutenant Daly, with whom were associated Lieutenant Nuthall and Cornet Forbes, and consisted principally of Sikhs and Pathans. The newly raised regiment had not long been in existence before so keen a soldier as Charles Napier was able to report that "Daly had brought his wild horsemen into excellent order." For the first six years of their career they were engaged in the many "hill wars," which then, as now, constantly engaged the attention of the Government, particularly distinguishing themselves at Pranghur, Nardund, and Pakkot in the Ewsufzie Campaign of 1852. During the Mutiny they rendered splendid service. They assisted in the disarming of the 62nd and 69th Regiments, and in the following July a squadron under Lieutenant Watson started for Delhi. The others fought at Belleh, where Lieutenant Millett and Dr. Tuson particularly distinguished themselves. At Thannah Boan ten troopers belonging to the regiment were murdered by rebels, and another body fought most valiantly under the temporary leadership of two civilians—Messrs. Malcolm Low and Melville. They fought in Rohilcund, at Chaidah, Mugeetia, and Rankee, and throughout the whole of the campaign. The part of the regiment under Watson—afterwards Sir John Watson, V.C., K.C.B.—has a glorious record. To the histories of that time we must refer for a detailed account of this, but must mention here one or two of the most remarkable of the many gallant deeds they performed. During the siege of Delhi a party of the mutineers attacked one of our pickets. Lieutenant Watson gathered some of his men together and charged the enemy, completely routing them after some desperate fighting, himself engaging in single combat with the rebel leader, whom he killed after being severely wounded. On another occasion Watson again distinguished himself in a hand-to-hand fight, again being wounded, and gaining the Victoria Cross. Subjoined is the official report from Sir Hope Grant.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"Lieutenant Watson, on the 14th November, 1857, with his own squadron (of the 1st Punjab Cavalry), and that under Captain, then Lieutenant, Probyn, came upon a body of the rebel cavalry. The ressaldar in command of them—a fine specimen of the Hindustani Mussulman—and backed up by some half-dozen equally brave men, rode out to the front. Lieutenant Watson singled out this fine-looking fellow and attacked him. The ressaldar presented his pistol at Lieutenant Watson's breast at a yard's distance, and fired, but most providentially without effect; the ball must, by accident, have previously fallen out. Lieutenant Watson ran the man through with his sword, and dismounted him, but the Native officer, nothing daunted, drew his tulwar, and with his sowars renewed his attack upon Lieutenant Watson, who bravely defended himself until his own men joined in the melée and utterly routed the party. In this rencontre, Lieutenant Watson received a blow on the head from a tulwar, another on the left arm, which severed his chain gauntlet glove, a tulwar cut on his right arm, which fortunately only divided the sleeve of the jacket, but disabled the arm for some time; a bullet also passed through his coat, and he received a blow on his leg, which lamed him for some days afterwards." Nor was the 1st Punjab Cavalry the only regiment of its name that gained unfading laurels in the Mutiny. The 2nd were well to the fore under that "brilliant, dashing, daring, irregular officer Lieutenant Probyn," as Sir Hope Grant calls him, and the 5th, under Younghusband, performed many a dashing feat. It would be hopeless to attempt within our present limits to even enumerate the various engagements in which the Punjab Cavalry took part; to dwell on their prowess at Roorki, Bareilly, Shahjehanpore, and Allahabad; or to tell how Hughes, Best, Mohammed Zerrian, Mackenzie, Atkinson and Cunninghame, of the 1st; Browne, Campbell, Craigie, Graham, Maxwell, Morice, and Robinson of the 2nd; and Basden, Gillespie, and Plowden of the 5th, made their names memorable in the annals of brave deeds. Sir Samuel—then Captain—Browne, commanding the 2nd Punjab Cavalry, gained the Victoria Cross for his brilliant courage at Seerporah, in August, 1858, when with only one sowar accompanying him he attacked a gun which was checking our advancing infantry. He received two most severe wounds, one of them severing the left arm at the shoulder.

We must now take up the thread of the narrative of the Punjab Cavalry in the Afghan War, premising that the intervening years were by no means idly or ingloriously spent. At one time or another all the Punjab Cavalry regiments were engaged in the campaign, and the records are eloquent in their praise.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The Cavalry were under the command of General Gough, and on more than one occasion he expressed himself in the highest terms of their efficiency. An officer present wrote: "I have had many opportunities of studying the interior economy of these Native cavalry regiments, and I have been greatly impressed with the eminently workmanlike manner in which all details are carried out. Arms, horse equipment, saddlery, uniform, and drill, are excellent, and even our own cavalry might take an occasional hint from the system employed by these turbaned spearmen. Formerly the sowar carried a pistol in his wallet, but now these are available for spare kit or provisions, as a beneficent Government issues to him a Snider carbine! In addition to this weapon he carries a curved and uncommonly sharp sword and a lance. His uniform consists of a dark-blue *bunghi*,* or turban, wound deftly round a red wadded skull-cap; his frock, or *koorta*, of coarse blue serge, shaped something like a Norfolk shirt, and bound into the waist by a red cummerbund; wide, yellow pyjamas, tucked into long boots of brown untanned leather; brown leather pouch and sword-belt, the former carrying twenty rounds, and a very long bamboo lance with bright steel point and blue and white pennon; make up a neat, workmanlike, and most picturesque set of 'fixings,' as an American gentleman, Colonel and Journalist, called them. The sowar would, of course, be incomplete without his *choga* (cloak), and this he carries strapped over his wallet, while he has a lance-socket at each stirrup, a grain-bag on the near side behind the saddle, with the horse's blanket and pegs fastened behind. On the off-side is the carbine in its bucket, as also his shot-case. These men are, for this country, the perfection of Light Cavalry; they have taken kindly to the Snider, and, since its issue, some of them make excellent practice." Taking the greater engagements in order of date, we find the 1st and 2nd Punjab engaged at the storming of the Peiwar Kotal in December, 1878. They fought at Matoond, and both regiments contributed to the gallant band which under Major Luck charged a body, more than double their number, of the enemy in the Tukt-i-Pul Valley, and on that occasion Captain Atkinson, Jemadar Huknewaz Khan, and Sowars Mahomed Takhi, Ram Rukha, and Akhmat Khan, all distinguished themselves by acts of individual bravery. At Charasiah the 1st Punjab Cavalry were present under Colonel Hammond, and in the interesting account given by one of the officers† present, the important part taken by the regiment is fully described. The following September Major Vousden gained the Victoria Cross by his gallantry in charging with but a handful of his

* The Writer—Major Ashe—was referring more particularly to the 3rd Punjab Cavalry.

† Major Mitford: "To Kabul with Cavalry."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

men * into a dense mass of the enemy, whom he routed, having killed five of their number in single combat. The next month the 2nd Punjab Cavalry, under Colonel Kennedy and Captain Broome, made a magnificent charge against a large body of the enemy. At the taking of Kabul the 5th Punjab were busily engaged; at one time serving as infantry, at another charging the discomfited enemy, anon escorting the ousted military governor to his place. Both the 1st and 2nd Punjab Cavalry bear Ahmed Khel on their standards; the charge of the former under Colonel Maclean was much eulogised, and the excellent service of the latter was also duly recognised. Lieutenant Stuart of the 2nd was amongst the severely wounded. In the battle at Padkhao Shana the same two regiments again participated, and Major Ashe thus epitomises the action: "General Hills ordered the cavalry brigade to move out at 3.30 a.m. Brigadier-General Palliser's instructions were to reconnoitre the enemy's position, and if an opportunity occurred, to attack them in the open. His force was made up of 231 sabres of the 1st Punjab Cavalry, 158 of the 2nd Punjab Cavalry, and 188 lances of the 19th Bengal Lancers. Small parties of the enemy were soon seen, and the advanced cavalry scouts, on gaining some rising ground from which Padkhao Shana could be seen, reported the main body to be in full retreat in the direction of Altimore Hills. Their strength appeared to be about 1,500 footmen and a few cavalry. General Palliser detached a troop of the 2nd Punjab Cavalry to watch the village, and with 502 sabres and lances went in pursuit of the enemy. The latter, seeing the cavalry bearing down upon them, broke into detached knots, and took advantage of the difficult ground to make good their flight. The cavalry, however, followed them up very quickly, in spite of the stony and difficult nature of the ground, and the two squadrons of the 1st Punjab Cavalry and the 19th Lancers in the front line were soon hotly engaged. The enemy fought with desperation, and tried to reform their line, but without success. They sheered off to right and left and were cut down by the supporting squadrons of the 1st and 2nd Punjab Cavalry. The pursuit continued for two hours. The ground was such as to give many opportunities for severe hand-to-hand fighting, in which Major Atkinson, 1st Punjab Cavalry, and Captain Leslie Bishop, 2nd Punjab Cavalry, are specially mentioned by those present as having displayed determined bravery."

The 3rd PUNJAB are the only regiment of the four which have the distinction of Kandahar, and it will be gathered therefrom that they were engaged in the pursuit

* Twelve in all.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

by the Cavalry under Gough—a pursuit which resulted in the death of some four hundred of the enemy, and in which a slight wound suffered by Lieutenant Baker of the 3rd Punjab was amongst our very few and slight casualties. "The 3rd Punjab Cavalry killed over seventy men in one charge alone."

The more official record given by Shadbolt of the doings of the separate regiments in the Afghan War may be thus epitomised: In October, 1878, the 1st Punjab Cavalry found themselves at Dera Ghazi, and immediately took part in the operations of General Biddulph's Division, under General Palliser. They served with credit at Takht-i-pul, where, amongst others, Captain Atkinson greatly distinguished himself. They remained during the spring and summer of 1879 at Kandahar, and were on their way back to India when the homeward movement was arrested by the news of the massacre. They were then attached to Barter's Brigade, and were hotly engaged at Ahmed Khel and Arzu. The almost daily warfare in the Logar Valley district occupied them during the summer of 1880, during which they added to their high reputation by their conduct in the battle of Padkhao Shana.

The 2nd Punjab Cavalry also formed part of Biddulph's force, and the famous march to Takht-i-pul was led by Colonel Kennedy of the regiment, the immediate command of which fell to Major Lance. On the recurrence of the war they occupied Khelat-i-Ghilzie, and in the subsequent battles distinguished themselves as above mentioned.

The 3rd Punjab Cavalry reached Kabul in 1880, and joined General Ross's column, and afterwards that under General MacPherson. They were represented in the second engagement at Charasiah, and were subsequently employed in the Logar Valley and Maidan districts. They fought under Colonel Vivian in the battle of 1st September, 1880, at Kandahar, and greatly distinguished themselves, Lieutenant Baker and six others being wounded.

The 5th Punjab Cavalry joined the Kurrum Valley force in October, 1878, and fought at Matun and Charasiah, performing the onerous duties of rear-guard during the march on Maidan. They fought at Beni Hissar and Siah Sang, at which latter place it was that Captain Vousden gained his V.C. They returned to India in March, 1880, having gained deserved commendation for their conduct during the campaign.

There remain of the cavalry force connected with the Bengal Presidency the Central Indian Horse, the Deolee Irregular Force, the Erinpoorah Irregular Force, and the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Cavalry of the Hyderabad Contingent.* Our notice must of necessity be brief, but the annals of Indian history supply evidences in plenty of the services rendered by these corps. The Central Indian Horse was one of those magnificent bodies of irregular cavalry which the genius of individual Englishmen called into being at or shortly after the time of the rebellion. Always associated with the Central Indian Horse must be the regiments raised by Beatson and Meade, and which, till their incorporation, were known by their names. Beatson's Horse may almost be said to claim a connection of affinity with the Hyderabad Contingent, inasmuch as it was in the service of the Nizam of the latter state that Colonel Beatson showed his exceptional aptitude for organising cavalry. Passing over the first years of their existence, during which they numbered amongst their commanders the gallant Watson of Victoria Cross fame, we find the Central Indian Horse engaged in Afghanistan, and distinguishing themselves at Charasiah. In the same campaign the Deolee Irregular Force were engaged.

Under Colonel Martin the 1st and 2nd Central Indian Horse reached Afghanistan in February, 1880, and operated on the Khyber line. In the following May they were hotly engaged under General Doran against a large body of the enemy, in order to cross swords with whom they had to swim a swollen torrent. With the loss of only three men they put *hors de combat* between twenty and thirty of their foes. They reached Kandahar by forced marches, and took a brilliant share in the battle. Amongst those who particularly distinguished themselves may be mentioned Colonels Martin and Buller, Major College, and Lieutenants Chamberlain,† Martin, and Ravenshaw.

We can but notice very shortly the remaining Cavalry regiments. The DEOLEE IRREGULAR FORCE is composed both of cavalry and infantry; the strength of the former, who are Lancers, being about a hundred and seventy of all ranks.

The ERINPOORAH IRREGULAR FORCE is recruited in Rajpootana, and has a similar strength to the cavalry establishment of the Deolee Force.

The HYDERABAD CAVALRY CONTINGENT has a nominal total strength of some 2,200. They are strictly speaking "corps under the orders of the Government of India," and recall—notably in the distinction of Central India—the loyal support rendered to the British Government during the Mutiny by the Nizam of Hyderabad.

* The 1st and 2nd Central Indian Horse bear the distinctions "Afghanistan, 1879-80" and "Kandahar, 1880." The uniform is drab with facings of maroon. The Deolee Irregular Force bear "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is dark green with facings of scarlet. The Erinpoorah Irregular Force has also a dark green uniform with scarlet facings. The 1st, 3rd, and 4th Hyderabad Cavalry have the distinction "Central India." The uniform is dark green.

† Lieutenant Chamberlain (subsequently Lieutenant-Colonel) was slightly wounded.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The BENGAL ARTILLERY is, with the exception of the Punjab Frontier Force, now represented by the two Bengal Mountain Batteries. But prior to the Mutiny, shortly after which they were incorporated with the Royal Artillery, they had a record which few military bodies could surpass.* It will, therefore, not come within our province to do more than give a very brief sketch of the origin of the force. To the famous 39th regiment ("Primus in Indis") the Bengal Artillery was undoubtedly indebted for many of its earlier recruits; the Royal Artillery also contributed; while we learn from Broome that it was also recruited from "the Company's ships, on board of which it was occasionally employed." In 1748 the East India Company directed that a company of artillery should be formed for each of the three Presidencies, each company to consist of "one second captain, one captain-lieutenant and director of the laboratory, one first lieutenant-fireworker, one second lieutenant-fireworker, one ensign-fireworker, four sergeant-bombardiers, four corporal-bombardiers, two drummers, and one hundred gunners." The following year Benjamin Robins was appointed "Engineer-General and Commander-in-Chief of Artillery," and from that time the development of the force went on apace.† Appropriate work soon fell to their lot in strengthening the defences of Calcutta, a hopeless task, but one rendered imperative by the threatened attack of Surajah Dowlah. The results of that attack are but too well known; the sufferings of the terrible Black Hole, where perished nearly all the new-born artillery; the heroism of some, the incredible cowardice and selfishness of others, are too familiar to need mention.‡ The next leading date of importance in the history of the Bengal Artillery is August, 1765, when the Native Army was re-organised under the supervision of Lord Clive. The whole of the Artillery was then placed under Major Jennings, who was more especially connected with the 1st Company. The whole strength, however, even then, was under 500 men, divided into four companies, though to each company a large but indefinite number of Lascars was attached to assist in working the guns belonging to the Company. "A couple of European Artillerymen belonging to the Company were also attached to share battalion gun details, and the ordnance with the company appears to have consisted of six light six-pounders and two howitzers, forming a battery or field

* See the exhaustive works on the subject by Colonel Buckle and Major Stubbs. See also Orme's "Military Transactions," Broome's "Bengal Army," and Major Otley Perry's useful book.

† The earlier history of the Bengal Engineers is intimately connected with that of the Artillery, and will, therefore, be included in the following pages.

‡ It is terrible to reflect, that while their countrymen and women were thus hideously done to death, the governor and commandant of the troops, other officers, and the captain of a British ship were near at hand, and refused assistance on the ground that it was dangerous (!), though a dozen men could have rescued the prisoners.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

train, as it was then termed, of eight pieces." * The four companies of Artillery were divided between the three Army Brigades then formed—one to each brigade—the remaining company being reserved for duty at Fort William.

On the outbreak in 1789 of hostilities with Tippoo Sahib commenced a period of most active service for the Artillery and Engineers. "Lieutenant-Colonel Patrick Duff was appointed Commandant of the whole artillery of the force, including a large portion of the Madras and two companies of the Royal Artillery. Aided by these last, the Bengal Artillery manned the Siege Train, which consisted of fifty-six pieces, and also furnished the field artillery of the right wing. During the whole of this campaign, in which the number of sieges brought the Artillery into more than usual employment, the Bengal companies maintained their reputation, and elicited the highest encomiums from Lord Cornwallis. Majors Montague and Woodburn were specially distinguished."† In the report of Lord Cornwallis of the losses in the battle of Seringapatam, in February, 1792, we find the following respecting the Bengal Artillery: "Lieutenant-Fireworker Alexander Buchan, two first tindals, six lascars killed; one gunner, one matross, one first tindal, thirteen lascars wounded; eight lascars missing." Lieutenant Stewart, of the Bengal Engineers, was also killed.

The Bengal Artillery was represented in the Egyptian campaign of 1801 by some of the Horse Artillery, which had been first raised the previous year, and the composition of the force is not without interest. "One conductor, four sergeants, four corporals, ten gunners, one farrier, and twenty-two matrosses; with two havildars, two naiks, and twenty-four golundaz, to which were also added one jemadar, two havildars, two naiks, and twenty-two troopers of the Governor-General's Body-Guard, to ride the troop horses in harness; a detail of three tindals and forty lascars was also added. With a battery of four light six-pounders and two three-pounder guns, this detail embarked for Egypt. . . . A Foot Artillery detachment . . . also accompanied this expedition." The Horse Artillery was further developed in 1803, and under Captain-Lieutenant Clements Brown did excellent service in the army under Lord Lake. By little and little the Bengal Artillery was increased, reorganised, and improved, till it became practically on the same footing as the Royal Artillery. But its subsequent history is of too voluminous a nature to permit of its being entered on here. From the time of their respective formations till their amalgamation with the Royal Regiment, it may be fairly said that no inci-

* Broome.

† See the article "The Bengal Artillery," by Col. Broome and Sir N. Staples, in *The Calcutta Review* for June, 1848.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

dent in the military history of India can be recorded in which the Bengal Artillery—horse and foot—have not played a leading, often the leading, part. The distinctions borne by the old Horse Artillery were "The Sphinx with 'Egypt,'" "Ava," and "Bhurtpore"; the badges of the Foot Artillery were "'A gun,' superscribed with 'Bengal Artillery,' surrounded by a laurel wreath, surmounted by a crown; below, the word 'Ubique.'" Amongst the battles in which the Horse Artillery took part were—exclusive of the campaign signalised by "Egypt"—Deig, Ava, Bhurtpore, Ghuznee, Kabul, Maharajpore, Punniar, Moodkee, Ferozeshah, Sobraon, Punjab, Aliwal, Chillianwallah, Guzerat. In addition to these must be mentioned the priceless services rendered by them during the Mutiny. The Foot Artillery can naturally boast in addition to the above of participation in the earlier struggles identified with the names Carnatic, Mysore, Seringapatam, Plassey, Buxar, Allyghur, Delhi, Laswanee, Java, as well as with Arracan, Mooltan, Ava, and Pegu. Foremost amongst the names of those who have done good service in our Indian empire are those of artillery officers; in the "gilded book" of honour wherein are inscribed those who have won the Victoria Cross for acts of signal courage, full many a one is described as of the Bengal Artillery. The present Commander-in-Chief in India was Lieutenant Frederick Sleigh Roberts of the Bengal Artillery, when on that memorable 2nd of January, 1858, he captured a standard in single combat with the rebels. The splendid valour evidenced in the blowing up of the magazine at Delhi is to be credited to Lieutenants Willoughby, Raynor, and Forest, with Conductors Scully and Buckley of the Bengal Artillery; at Jhelum Gunner Connolly of the Horse Artillery received three shots, and even then refused to quit his gun, from which at last Lieutenant Cookes bore him insensible. At Bolundshuhur Sergeant Diamond and Gunner Fitzgerald, B.H.A., when all their comrades were either killed or wounded, continued working their gun under a withering fire; Major Tombs and Lieutenant Hills both belonged to the Bengal Horse Artillery when they gained the Victoria Cross for their valour before the walls of Delhi. When the gallant 90th Regiment at Lucknow captured a couple of rebel guns, Lieutenant-Colonel Olpherts, of the artillery, charged side by side with their own Colonel Campbell. When the rebels tried to set fire to the magazine at Delhi, it was an Artillery officer, Colonel, then Captain, Renny, who, standing on the top of the wall, a conspicuous mark for musketry, hurled down lighted shells amongst the advancing hordes. Many, many more heroic actions could be mentioned, but we will content ourselves with the following extract from the records of the Order. "The Bengal Artillery behaved as a body with such remarkable gallantry at the relief of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Lucknow by Lord Clyde, that they were ordered to elect a certain number to receive the Victoria Cross. The recipients were Lieutenant Hastings, Edward Harrington, Rough-Rider E. Jannings, Gunners J. Park, T. Laughnan, and H. M'Innes."

The two mountain batteries now on the Bengal establishment have each a total strength of about 230 of all ranks. The recent operations of Burmah can with justice be pointed to as evidencing their high efficiency.

The PUNJAB FRONTIER FORCE has five batteries—four mountain and one garrison battery.* The Punjab Artillery Force may be said to date from 1851, when they were raised in a considerable measure from the supernumeraries of the Sikh Artillery. Their "distinctions" show the broader outlines of the campaigns in which they have been principally engaged, in addition to which may be mentioned the operations against the Jowakis, and, more recently, in Assam. On many occasions they have been specially mentioned, and very many cases might be cited in which individual officers and men have performed —and been thanked for—actions of high merit. To anyone reading the accounts of the Afghan Campaign, the operations at Mandalay, and on the Chinese frontier, the invaluable service rendered by these Batteries will be instantly apparent.

The CORPS OF BENGAL SAPPERS AND MINERS† date from an early period in the history of British India. The first formal constitution of the Corps of Engineers was in 1764, when the establishment was fixed at one Chief Engineer, two Sub-Directors, four Sub-Engineers, and six Practitioner Engineers, ranking respectively as Captain, Captain-Lieutenants, Lieutenants, and Ensigns. As before observed, however, an officer had been appointed in 1750 with the title of Engineer-General, in connection with that of Commander-in-Chief of Artillery. From that time the services of the Artillery and Engineers ran much on the same lines, though it would appear that promotion in the latter corps was somewhat speedier than in the former. As in England, the anomaly of the rank and file passing under one designation and the officers under another continued for many years, till in 1854 the head-quarters of the Engineers were identified with those of the Sappers and Miners.‡ In 1858 the Engineers were incorporated with the

* No 1, Kohat Mountain Battery has "Peiwar Kotal," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." No 2, Dejerat Mountain Battery has "Charasiah," "Kabul, 1879," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." No. 3, Peshawur Mountain Battery has "Afghanistan, 1878-79." No 4, Hazara Mountain Battery has "Ali Musjid," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80."

† The Corps of Bengal Sappers and Miners have "Kabul, 1842," "Ferozeshah," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Delhi," "Lucknow (Relief and Capture)," "Ali Musjid," "Charasiah," "Kabul, 1879," "Ahmed Khel," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is scarlet with blue facings.

‡ G.G.O. 1004, 10th October, 1854.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Royal Engineers, and the present corps of Sappers and Miners is the remaining representative of the old Company's corps. As with the Artillery so with the Sappers and Miners, the particulars of their history must be sought for throughout the military operations in India. When it is borne in mind that some of the most brilliant achievements of British arms have been connected with the subjugation of fortresses of seemingly impregnable strength, the value of the services rendered by the "scientific arm" will be easily gauged. Stories of bravery and "derring-do" never pall, and we cannot, in our mention of the Bengal Engineers and Sappers and Miners, omit to mention one or two instances of splendid courage evidenced by individual members of their body. One which will probably occur first to most was the blowing up of the Cashmere Gate at Delhi. "It may easily be imagined what a perilous enterprise this was for the explosion party. In fact it was almost certain death to undertake the task." Yet the task was undertaken by Lieutenants Horne and Salkeld, and Sergeants Smith, Carmichael, and Burgess of the Bengal Engineers, and Havildar Madhoo and eight privates of the Sappers and Miners. Carmichael was soon killed, Lieutenant Salkeld was shot through the thigh and Burgess through the body; Smith fired the train, and in the explosion which followed all the party suffered to some extent. A Victoria Cross was also won by Lieutenant Thackeray for a very similar piece of gallantry, and in connection with the same occurrence as that which gained the decoration for Captain Renny. Not long after this Lieutenant McLeod Innes of the Bengal Engineers took, unaided, two guns from the enemy, shooting the gunner of the second when about to fire it, and "remaining undaunted at his post, the mark for a hundred matchlock men who were sheltered in some adjoining huts, kept the artillery-men at bay until assistance reached him." *

In the subsequent local wars the Sappers and Miners have been extensively employed, and were represented in the Indian Contingent that served in Egypt, Colonel James Browne being in command. No mention of the Bengal Engineers would be complete without reference to the yet fresh grave in the crypt of St. Paul's, where

> "With banner and with music, with soldier and with priest,
> With a nation weeping,"

was laid to rest Lord Napier of Magdala, whose earliest fame was gained as an officer of Bengal Engineers.

The establishment of the BENGAL INFANTRY may almost be said to be contemporaneous with that of the British power. We have before sketched roughly the

* Despatch, 12th March, 1858, from General Franks.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

inception and growth of the Native Army; in treating of the Infantry regiments we shall be able to discern more clearly the connection between that growth and the supremacy of the Company's raj. And certainly the consideration is not without interest, and that an interest rich in romance. The first authoritative mandate which opened up Bengal to the British was in 1633, and under the hand of the great Shah Jehan. Portuguese and Dutch had already their trading stations there, when occurred the fortunate accident to the Shah's daughter. Equally fortunate was it that the good ship *Hopewell* was at anchor near, and that the ship's surgeon, Mr. Boughton, was as skilful as patriotic. As guerdon for his cure he begged for trading rights to Bengal, which was under the immediate government of the Sultan Soojah, the emperor's second son. A mighty potentate, in truth, was this Shah Jehan, whose gracious permission gave the impetus to the enterprise to which the Bengal Army owes its origin! Still in bazaars and fostering places of folk tradition linger tales of his grandeur and magnificence, nor does it seem as if these traditions exaggerated much, if the following description by Bernier may be credited:—

"The emperor was seated on his throne, at the end of the great hall, most magnificently attired. His robe was of white satin, embroidered with flowers worked in gold and silk; his turban was of cloth of gold, and it was surmounted by an aigrette, covered with diamonds of astonishing size and value, and having in front an immense oriental topaz, which shone like a little sun, and which may well be called unequalled in the world; a necklace of immense pearls descended from his neck to the lower part of his chest. His throne was supported by six enormous feet or pedestals, all of massy gold, and it was strewed all over with rubies, emeralds, and diamonds. Verily I cannot say what is the quantity or what the money-value of this mass of precious stones, but I have heard that they are worth 60,000,000 of French livres. The jewels were amassed from time to time out of the spoils of the ancient Patans and Rajas, and out of the presents which the great nobles are obliged, on certain festivals, to make to the sovereign . . . . At the foot of the throne appeared all the omrahs, splendidly dressed, sitting on a platform covered with a canopy of cloth of gold, and enclosed in front by a balustrade of solid silver. The columns and pilasters of the hall were covered with cloth of gold; on the floor was spread a rich silk carpet of a size truly prodigious. In the outer court there was a most magnificent tent, covered with gold and silver, and supported by three pillars as high as the masts of a ship, and all covered with silver plates . . . . At the audience, some of the omrahs presented exquisite

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

pearls, diamonds, emeralds, or rubies, and with a profusion that was quite astonishing." Yet even this well-nigh pales in solid magnificence before the state kept by his predecessor Akber.

"The court of Akber was the most splendid that had ever been held in India; and his own style of living was of that sumptuous character that the mere description of it may seem to partake of exaggeration. His hunting establishment is said to have consisted of five thousand elephants, and double that number of horses, which were also used in war; and when he marched in person at the head of his armies, he was provided with an equipage that enabled him to surround himself, even in a desert, with all the pomp and luxuries of his imperial palaces. Whenever the army encamped, a vast space was enclosed by screens of red canvas, ornamented with gilt globes and spires, forming a wall, within which were erected a great number of splendid pavilions, richly furnished, some of which were used as rooms of state, some as banqueting halls, others for retirement or repose; while an inner enclosure contained the apartments of the ladies, all fitted up in the most costly and elegant manner. This enclosure, as we are told, occupied an area of full five miles in circumference. The birthday of the Emperor was an occasion on which there was always a grand exhibition of wealth. It was celebrated by the court in an extensive plain near the capital, which was covered with superb tents, that of the Emperor, of course, surpassing all the rest in the splendour of its decorations, the carpets being of silk and gold tissue, and the hangings of velvet, embroidered with pearls. At the upper end was placed the throne, on which Akber sat to receive the homage of the nobles, who were presented with dresses, jewels, horses, elephants, or other gifts, according to their rank. But the most extraordinary display of the munificence as well as the riches of the Emperor was made on his causing himself to be weighed in golden scales three times, the first balance being of gold pieces, the second of silver, the third of perfumes, all which were distributed among the spectators that crowded the plain. He also threw, in sport, among the courtiers, showers of gold and silver nuts, and other fruits, for which even the gravest of the ministers were not too dignified to scramble; and these were worn as favours for the rest of the day." *

Not without purpose have we given these accounts of the splendour of these Eastern Emperors into whose domains the British nation had just set a half-hesitating foot.† At

* Bohn's "India."

† It should perhaps be said that the term "hesitating" is applicable more properly to the Bengal Presidency; at any rate it was (in 1643) a question whether the Bengal factory should be continued or dissolved.—(Bruce's Annals.)

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

first Bengal was entirely subordinate to Madras, but in 1668, or thereabouts, the former Presidency acquired an independent position. Thirty soldiers was the original force allowed to be kept at Bengal, but in course of time our available strength was increased by the enrolment of Portuguese and Dutch, who may be said to have furnished the first army, other than British, which was raised to support our growing power in the East. From time to time, it is true, native troops—"*Buxarries*"—were employed, but there was no effort at organisation. It was not till 1757, after Clive had effected the recapture of Calcutta, that his prescient mind recognised the necessity of putting the Native Army of the Company into a condition of efficiency. For the native dress, haphazard arming, and freedom from drill, Clive substituted European clothing and arms, introduced the European drill and system, and appointed British officers and sergeants. "Such was the origin of the First Regiment of Bengal Native Infantry, called from its equipment the Lal Pultan or Red Regiment," and subsequently known as the Gillis-ka-Pultan.* "It must be borne in mind," wrote Broome in 1850, "that the class of men then available for service, and of whom the earliest corps were composed, were a very different race from what could now be obtained in or about Calcutta. The Moosulman conquest of the provinces, the condition and actual independence of the Court of Delhi maintained by the late Nawaubs, the frequent changes in the Government, and the continued hostilities occurring, induced many adventurers from the northward to come down in search of service, and led to large drafts being made on the population of Behar, Oude, the Doab, Rohilcund, and even beyond the Indus, to meet demands for troops on particular emergencies, who were liable to be again thrown on their own resources so soon as the occasion for their services had passed away. It was from such men and their immediate descendants that the selection was made; and in the corps then and subsequently raised in and about Calcutta, were to be found Pathans, Rohillas, a few Jâts, some Rajpoots, and even Brahmins. The natives of the Province were never entertained as soldiers by any party. The majority, however, of the men in the ranks in early years were Moosulmans, owing to the circumstances stated." It is somewhat of interest to mark how completely since the above was written "the wheel has come full circle," and that the present composition of the Bengal Army is much the same as in its earliest years. The Madras and Bombay Presidencies had native troops in their employment before the formation of the Bengal Army was commenced, and the French had undoubtedly set the example in this method of strengthening their fighting powers. But,

* From Captain Primrose Galliez who long commanded it. Pultan is the native corruption of our word Platoon.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

equally undoubtedly, we improved on their system. A writer comparing the two nations thus summarises the distinctive features of their treatment of the native soldiers: "Always brave and formidable enemies in the field, these French in India were not to be compared in coolness, moderation, political forethought, or civil affairs with our own countrymen. The only thing in which they surpassed us was in pomp and magnificence. Our great conqueror, Clive, the real founder of our empire, contented himself with a very plain suit of uniform and lived like an English soldier. M. Dupleix lived like an Oriental prince; he never appeared in public except in rich silk robes; he was carried in a palanquin like a Nabob, surrounded by mace-bearers with their silver maces, and followed by a numerous troop of horse, richly caparisoned and fantastically attired. He had for his wife a lady of European descent, but born in India and thoroughly imbued with Eastern tastes, manners, and habits of thought. This very ambitious dame, who spoke the native languages, and who had a truly Oriental turn for political manœuvre and intrigue, shaped out much of her husband's daring policy, corresponded with native princes and chiefs, and laboured to make allies or partisans in all directions. She kept a regular court at her mansion in Pondicherry, and was often seen blazing in diamonds and other rich jewels, and with a diadem on her brow, as if she had been a crowned sovereign. M. Bussy, who was for a long time absolute master of Golconda, lived in a style still more magnificent. These very able and, in almost every sense, very remarkable men, counted upon imposing on the natives by these pompous displays; but it may be much doubted whether they did not miscalculate as to the effect to be produced. Sinking their European distinctions, they looked like mere native Rajas or Nabobs, whose weakness, pusillanimity, and vices had discredited them in the eyes of the people. To Hindūs and Mussulmans Clive in his old-fashioned uniform was a far more imposing figure than Dupleix or Bussy could ever be in their rich Oriental costume. When the great Warren Hastings, who consolidated and vastly enlarged the Empire which Clive had founded, was Governor-General and keeping a truly splendid court at Calcutta, he wore the plain blue coat and the round hat of an English civilian; yet the natives never regarded him without respect and awe, and when he rode along the Sepoy lines of our army he was always enthusiastically hailed and cheered by the men. General Sir Eyre Coote dressed and lived as Lord Clive had done before him; but to this day, no Sepoy will pass his portrait without touching his cap or forehead—without giving a military salute, as if that brave leader, whose exploits have been transmitted by tradition, were yet in the flesh."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

In October, 1757, a second* regiment was formed; a third* in the following April; a fourth—the late 5th—in September; a fifth* in February, 1759; two more in 1761—the former being the late 9th and the latter the famous "Matthews-ka-Pultan" † —and several more in 1762-3, including the late 2nd Grenadier Regiment, the late 8th, 3rd, and 10th regiments, and another which ceased to exist in 1786. The late 6th regiment was raised in July, 1763, the late 11th about the same time, the late 4th, 7th, and 12th, in the following October, and the late 13th, 14th, 15th, and 16th native regiments from March, 1764. Not long after, namely in 1776, was raised the Neelwur-ka-Pultun, late the 21st Native Infantry, now shown in the Army List as the 1st Bengal Native Infantry.

It will not, perhaps, be unwelcome if we glance for a moment at the career of those other regiments whose place now knows them no more. The "deep damnation of their taking off" was dismal enough and grisly enough to make us experience something of relief in the reflection that the time was when these regiments were loyal amongst the loyal, that even when British officers and men mutinied they were steadfast, that the glories of our earlier Indian victories gild even yet the names so terribly smirched. The very frequent changes—from regiments into battalions, and from battalions into unwieldy regiments—would render a categorical account of the devolutions of each regiment of the old regime needlessly wearisome. We will, therefore, merely mention a few of the more famous achievements of the regiments as given by historians and contemporary writers. Perhaps the two most famous of the old regiments were the Lal Pultan or Gillies-(Galliez)-ka-Pultan and the Matthews-ka-Pultan. The former was the oldest corps in Bengal, but, as Williams says, "by a strange turn of fortune became (in 1796) the last battalion in the whole service when incorporated in the 12th regiment." A subsequent revision, however, put it into its rightful place, and it was as the 1st Bengal Infantry that, in a hideous blaze of murder and outrage, it became extinct at the Mutiny. Previously to this it had done exceptionally good service, though so far back as 1764 it had mutinied at Sant. It fought at Chandernagore and Plassey; under Ford and Cailland it had fought bravely against the Dutch and Meer Jaffer; under Carnac and Primrose Galliez, it added yet more to its fame. Even when in Mutiny in 1764 it showed that, like Milton's fallen angels, it had not lost all virtue. Twenty-eight were ordered to death by being blown from guns. "Here it was that three of the

* Destroyed at Patna.

† That is according to Broome; Williams assigns an earlier date.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

grenadiers entreated to be fastened to the guns on the right, declaring that as they always fought on the right, they hoped their last request would be complied with, by being suffered to die in the post of honour. Their petition was granted, and they were the first executed."* In 1776 † at the action of Korah it gallantly bore the fire of four battalions of Neejeebs; it fought most gallantly in the Mahratta War, and, in common with some other regiments, had an honorary standard presented to it for its prowess at Delhi in 1803; it fought bravely at Laswarree, and shared in the perils of Monson's memorable retreat and in the siege of Deeg. At Bhurtpore, though our arms were unsuccessful, the Gillies-ka-Pultan surpassed itself. From the General Orders issued by the Commander-in-Chief, we gather that its colours were *three times planted* on the top of the bastion, and that it was with great difficulty the men could be prevailed upon to withdraw, the declaration being repeatedly heard—"We must take the place or die here." They were amongst the corps which volunteered for over-sea service at the Isle of France in 1810, and subsequently in Java, and altogether few regiments could better claim to have deserved the encomium quoted by Captain Williams—"We cannot sufficiently admire the Bengal Sepoys; such gallantry, submission, temperance, and fidelity were perhaps never combined in any soldiers." And yet—and yet—all this and more is forgotten, and rightly, in reading the terrible narrative of the 27th of June, 1857. When the fugitives from Cawnpore had been seized and brought back to land, the infamous Nana Sahib ordered the men to be "separated from the women and shot by the Gillies-ka-Pultan, and then ensued a terrible and painful scene. 'We will not shoot Wheeler Sahib, who has made the name of our Pultan great,' said the men of the regiment. 'Put them all in prison.' 'What word is this?' said the Nadir, loading their muskets—'put them in prison! no, we shall kill the males.'" And then, to their unutterable shame, the fiendish successors of the heroes of Plassey and Chandernagore and Bhurtpore tore away the shrieking wives and daughters from their desperate last embrace of the men they loved, and before their anguished eyes, shot down the brave and helpless Englishmen who stood calmly awaiting death.

The Matthews-ka-Pultan, the other famous Bengal regiment of old time, was known as the 15th battalion, and was raised in 1757 by Captain Matthews. It fought in most of the early wars, often side by side with the Lal Pultan, and the historian of the Army records that, "Wherever service offered the Lal Pultan and the Matthews were in those

* Williams: "History Bengal Native Infantry."

† The uniform at this time was red with blue facings, and turbans and cummerbunds.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

days sure to be called upon." In 1782 the regiment mutinied, owing to a report that it was intended to cross the sea, and refused to allow the chosen companies to march. This was the "only act of positive disobedience, or mutiny, they were guilty of; no violence or other disorderly conduct was committed; they continued to treat their officers with the usual respect, and the duties of the corps were carried on as usual." The regiment was, however, broken, and in justice to the *magni nominis umbra* which alone remains of it, we will quote Captain Williams' remarks: "Thus fell the Matthews Battalion, a corps more highly spoken of during the twenty-six years it existed than any battalion in the service; and at this day if you meet any of the old fellows who formerly belonged to it, and ask them what corps they came from, they will erect their heads and say 'Matthews-ka-Pultan.'"

We will take at random a few incidents from the histories of some of the other regiments in the old service. The old 2nd regiment greatly distinguished itself in the terrible retreat under Colonel Monson in 1804.

"Its second battalion and some pickets of European infantry were nearly annihilated, they being on the enemy's side of the river, while the main body was on the other side. It was only with great difficulty that they got over, to do which they had to fight hard to extricate themselves. When they reached the other side the survivors were seized with mingled admiration and anxiety at the sight of a Native officer of the 2nd battalion 2nd Regiment Bengal Native Infantry displaying the utmost heroism and devotion under the most critical circumstances. This brave soldier, who was that day carrying the colours, had been somehow separated from his comrades and sought to rejoin them. The Mahrattas, however, swarmed around him, and it seemed as if every instant he must be slain. Carrying the colours with one hand, and striking fiercely with the sword held in the other, he succeeded in keeping the thronging foe at bay, and reached the bank of the river in safety. The hopes of his admiring comrades thus excited were, however, doomed to disappointment. Whether he was unable to swim or whether he was wounded is not known, but when, still grasping firmly the precious trophy which he had saved from the clutches of the enemy, he plunged into the stream he at once sank, and neither he nor the colours were ever seen again."

In one of the engagements in the Java War of 1811, a Sepoy of the 1st battalion of the old 27th Regiment Bengal Native Infantry, named Bahadur Khan, exhibited an amount of prowess "of which even Shaw the Life Guardsman might have been proud." Rushing impetuously in to the thick of the fighting, he, "without firing a shot, bayoneted, some

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

say six, but according to the testimony of some soldiers of H.M. 69th and 78th Regiments, *nine* Frenchmen."

At Aliwal we read that "a charge was made by the 30th Native Infantry, who drove the foe back and then rushed among the troops of Avitabile, driving them, too, from the banks of the river with yells and shouts, and exposing them once more to a deadly fire from twelve of our Horse Artillery guns at less than 300 yards." The 30th vied with the Shropshire in the "fury and celerity with which they flung themselves on the battalions of Avitabile."

No sketch of the old corps would be complete without a glance at the 35th and 37th regiments who did so well at Jellalabad and Kabul. With regard to the former it is stated that "No Sepoy regiment could have behaved better than the 35th Bengal Native Infantry did at the siege of Jellalabad. It, with the 13th Light Infantry, a handful of cavalry and artillery, and Captain Broadfoot's Native Sappers, constituted Sales's Brigade, happily termed by Lord Ellenborough 'the illustrious garrison of Jellalabad.' Every toil they—notwithstanding caste prejudices—cheerfully shared with their European comrades and vied with the latter in deeds of daring on the day of battle. Between the 13th Light Infantry and the 35th Native Infantry a strong feeling of regard grew up. At one time during the long siege—it lasted from the 12th November, 1841, till the 15th April, 1842—the men of the 13th had only received six ounces of meat, including bone, daily. On the 1st April the garrison made a sortie, and brought in 481 sheep and a few goats as trophies. The 35th Native Infantry had forty sheep allotted as their share of the spoil." Sir Thomas Seaton graphically describes the course they adopted. "They, with great good feeling, desired that the sheep should be given to the English soldiers, for whom they said such food was necessary, and that they themselves could do very well some days yet on the rations they were allowed."

At Kabul during the siege, 1841-42, the 37th Bengal Native Infantry particularly distinguished themselves. When the rebels had massacred Macrell and most of his party, Lieutenant Bird, accompanied by two sepoys of the 37th Native Infantry, took refuge in a stable, and having shot the few Afghans who had seen them enter were in the confusion at first unobserved. Taking advantage of the respite, they barricaded the door, and before long had occasion to test the strength of their impromptu defences. A determined attempt was made to force the door, but the little garrison by their steady fire checked the intended rush. One of the Sepoys was slain, but Bird and the survivor "kept the foe at bay till, after the resistance of nearly a quarter of an hour, our troops re-entered

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the fort. Thirty Afghans are said to have fallen to the muskets of Bird and his companions, of whom fifteen were slain by Bird himself."

Lady Sale, who had but too ample opportunities of judging, wrote "The conduct of the 37th is highly spoken of; they drove the enemy (who had got on the top of a bastion) with their bayonets clean over the side, where they were received on the bayonets of the 44th." On another occasion a sepoy of the 37th had displayed conspicuous valour in the assault on the Shereef Fort. The officer leading, Lieut. Raban H.M. 44th, was shot dead, but a havildar and a sepoy of the 37th Native Infantry, notwithstanding that their company was in the rear of the storming party, pressed eagerly forward, the sepoy capturing the enemy's standard, and gaining thereby deserved promotion.

The men of H.M. 39th in that splendid charge of theirs at Gwalior found the old 56th, the Ochterlony-ka-Pultan, close at their shoulders as they drove the enemy from their guns; at Chillianwallah no regiment fought or suffered more desperately; amongst those who gained the Victoria Cross during the Mutiny was Captain Cape of the regiment.

The 1st BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY* was, as before mentioned, raised in 1776, and was one of those formed for the service of the Vizier by British officers, and afterwards taken into the Company's service. The first commander was Captain, afterwards Lieutenant-General Stewart, after whom the regiment was for some time named. In 1794, the 21st took part in the battle of Batoorah in Rohilcund, being on that occasion commanded by Captain Knowles. In 1796 they became the 3rd battalion of the 12th regiment, and as such fought at Laswarree, aiding in the overthrow inflicted on the "Deccan Invincibles." Passing over, as we needs must, the intervening years, we find them sharing in the siege and capture of Bhurtpore, one of the most complete and crushing victories on record. In a "Journal of the Siege" we find reference to the terrible torture inflicted on one of our men who fell into the hands of the garrison. His comrades, writes the journalist, "were worked up to a pitch of perfect frenzy by the shocking spectacle of their unfortunate comrade who was so dreadfully mangled† in the wood the other night, and have sworn to kill man, woman, and child when they get inside." Again passing over many years, we find the regiment doing good service with the force under Colonel Vaughan in Meranzaie in 1857, and that under Sir S. Cotton in the Ensufzaie campaign in 1858, the destruction of Chinglee Mungul, Thana, and Sattana being amongst the most important of the opera-

* The 1st Bengal Native Infantry bear "Laswarree" and "Bhurtpore." The uniform is red with white facings.

† Grant rightly describes the death of this unfortunate man as being caused by "unnameable barbarity."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

tions. Amongst other officers of the regiment who distinguished themselves at this period may be mentioned Captain G. A. Brown, Lieutenant L. de H. Larpent, Lieutenant Craigie, Major Chambers, and Lieutenant Birch—the last named particularly in the operations against the Taipsing rebels in 1862.

In the Afghan War the 1st were with General Biddulph's force, forming the leading column of a movement made in March by the Thal-Chotiali route towards Dera Ghazi Khan. An engagement took place at Baghao with the tribal levies from the Zhob and Borai Valleys, numbering some 3,000 men. "Major Keen, 1st Bengal Native Infantry, commanding the column, which included his own regiment, seven officers, and 499 men, Peshawur and Bombay Mountain Batteries, three officers and 124 men, with four guns, and three officers and 256 troopers of the 3rd Bengal Cavalry and 2nd Scinde Horse,—on receiving notice of the approach of the enemy, completed his dispositions for a counter attack, which he skilfully executed, killing 150 of their number."

So many and various are the services which from time to time the Indian regiments are called upon to render, that we cannot venture here to follow them through the less important duties they have fulfilled, and we must therefore end here our notice of the Neelwur-ka-Pultan, the first of the Bengal Native Infantry Regiments.

The 2nd (Queen's Own) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY* date from 1798. A glance at the footnote will prove that the Queen's Own are amongst the regiments which have seen the most service of any, and the Imperial Cypher is only confirmatory of their proud position. Their first active service of note was in 1803, when, as the Chutta Battalion (the 2nd of the 4th Regiment), they joined the army of Lord Lake at Secundra. Their first battalion was engaged with distinction at Allyghur, and on the same day in the following week, the 31st, as the Queen's Own were then numbered, were amongst the native regiments which were engaged at Delhi, and in consideration of their prowess there, received an extra colour and an additional jemadar "in testimony of the peculiar honour acquired by the army on that occasion." Laswarree has been before referred to. For some short time they remained in the occupation of the ancient capital, which was soon after besieged by Holkar. The defence on that occasion is rightly held to have reflected great credit on Commander,† Resident,‡ and troops, "whose conduct was distinguished by the most animated zeal and laborious exertions."§ The sequel of the siege of

* The 2nd (Queen's Own) Bengal Native Infantry have the Royal cypher in the Garter, "Delhi," "Leswarree," "Deig," "Bhurtpore," "Khelat," "Afghanistan," "Maharajpore," "Punjab," "Chillianwallah," "Goojerat," "Central India," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with facings of blue.

† Lt.-Col. Burn. ‡ Lt.-Col. Ochterlony. § Williams.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Delhi was the battle of Deig, "one of the hardest fought battles during the war," and on the fall of the city the Queen's Own proceeded to Bhurtpore, its first battalion (the late 4th regiment), being left to garrison Deig. They were engaged at the capture of Bhurtpore in 1826, and in the Kole affairs of 1835, and four years later won the distinction—borne by them alone of the Bengal Regiments—"Khelat." Throughout the Afghan Campaign they were engaged, and gained the best distinctions under Sir Hugh Gough at Maharajpore, and the various actions—many of which have been before noticed—which are included under the word "Punjab"—the passage of the Chenab, Sadoolapore, Chillianwallah, and Goojerat. In 1850 they took part in the expedition under Sir C. Napier to Kohat. During the Mutiny they were employed in Central India, notably at Sangor, where they rendered good service. The final distinction, "Afghanistan," testifies to their participation in the campaign, the leading incidents of which we have before now dwelt upon.* During the first campaign they formed part of the Kurrum reserve, and were principally at Kohat. Their share in the second campaign may be described as one of intention. It was intended that they should join Doran's Brigade of the Khyber Force, but the health of the regiment was so seriously affected that the order was countermanded, and they returned to India.

The 3rd Bengal Native Infantry,† the Guttrie-ka-Pultan, date from 1798, and were formerly the 32nd Native Infantry. The original 32nd battalion was, according to Williams, raised in 1786, and was one of four regiments styled the Charrie Yarie or "four friends," and as such took a part, though not a very important one, in the Rohilla campaign. In 1796 this battalion became the 3rd of the 1st regiment. They served at Bhurtpore—the details of which have been before given—and in many of the less important expeditions which from time to time have been undertaken. In 1856 they served against the Southalls and during the Mutiny. Afghanistan, 1879-80, records their share in the second part of the Afghan Campaign, in which, however, they were not engaged in any of the greater battles.

The 4th (late the 33rd) Bengal Native Infantry ‡ date from 1798. According to Williams, the 33rd battalion was raised in 1786, and like the 32nd was known as a "Charrie Yarie" battalion. As such it formed the 3rd battalion of the 8th regiment. The 33rd

* The Native designation of the regiment is Broon-ka-Pultan. The Hon. Colonel is the Prince of Wales.

† The 3rd Bengal Native Infantry have "Bhurtpore" and "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with black facings.

‡ The 4th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Laswarree," "Bhurtpore," "Kabul, 1842," "Ferozeshah," "Sobraon," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

fought at Laswarree and Bhurtpore, and, as their third distinction shows, are the first of the existing Native Infantry regiments which bear "Kabul" on their colours. They with H.M. 31st and the 1st Light Cavalry arrived as reinforcements to Pollock's army, and then "the march began towards those mighty mountains which lie between Kabul and the plain whereon stands the city of Jellalabad." When the army entered the Tizeen Pass the heights were seen to be crowded with 16,000 men under Ackbar Khan, and the enemy were not slow in commencing hostilities. But the tragedy of the Khyber Pass was not to be repeated. Scarcely did the fierce hordes reach the valley when our Cavalry fell upon them like a human tempest, threw them into instant confusion, and cut them to pieces. Meanwhile our Infantry had won the crest of the heights, and trusting chiefly to the bayonet carried all before them. Our loss in killed and wounded was about a hundred and seventy of all ranks. The regiment was actively engaged throughout the campaign. In the Sutlej campaign the 33rd were commanded by Colonel Sandeman who then bore the rank of Brevet-Major. We are apt sometimes to lose sight of the vast disparity in numbers between our fierce and warlike foes and ourselves, a disparity which the following extract shows in its true proportions. "The British now concentrated comprised 5,674 Europeans, and 12,053 Natives, making a total of 17,717 rank and file, and sixty-five guns. According to the Sikhs' account, their force at Ferozeshah consisted of 25,000 regular troops and eighty-eight guns, exclusive of the Yazedarees and irregular soldiers making their force in camp upwards of 35,000. Besides this force, Tej Singh with 23,000 regulars and sixty-seven guns was only ten miles distant." It will be remembered that it was at Ferozeshah our Infantry made that magnificent charge which, in the face of a murderous fire of shot and grape, swept the Sikh gunners away from the guns that were dealing such destruction in our ranks. But it has been well said that "fine phrases would be thrown away upon conduct and heroism such as were displayed at Ferozpoor.* The plain professional despatches of Sir Henry Hardinge and Sir Hugh Gough form the best eulogium. All behaved nobly." At Sobraon the 33rd—the Hilliard-ka-Pultan, to give them their Native designation—were one of the four native regiments † which advanced with the 10th, 53rd, and 80th of Her Majesty's regiments, in a manner which elicited the warm praise of the Commander-in-Chief. "Moving at a firm and steady pace they never fired a shot till they had passed the barriers opposed to them—a forbearance much to be commended and most worthy of constant

* Whence Sir John Littler marched to join Gough.

† The others were the 43rd, 59th, and 63rd.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

imitation, to which may be attributed the success of their first effort, and the small loss they sustained." Amongst the officers of the regiment who distinguished themselves during the Mutiny may be mentioned Lieutenant Battye, Captain Dickson, Lieutenant Gurdon, and Major Martin. Various local and comparatively unimportant operations have between that date and the recent Afghan Campaign fallen to the lot of the 4th. In the last-named war they were engaged during the latter part, and satisfactorily performed the duties which fell to their share.

The 5th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY*—late the 42nd Jansin-kee-Pultun—date from 1803, a year when considerable additions were made to the Native Army. The first name on their colours recalls the troublous times of 1811, which led up indirectly to the campaign commemorated by the distinction. The Arracan territory was under Burmese government, and the cruel nature of the rule induced many of the natives to seek the more peaceful and settled atmosphere of the British Possessions. So far back, indeed, as 1795, a dispute had arisen owing to this cause, and before the end of the century "two-thirds of the Mughs of Arracan are supposed to have exchanged the habitations of their fathers for a home and settlement under British protection." In 1811 these refugees received an addition in the person of King Berring, who forthwith organized an invasion of Burmese territory, for which the Burmese King of the World and Lord of the White Elephant threatened to enforce reprisals upon us. Eventually it became necessary for us to chastise our unwelcome but undeniably brave guest, but his reckless enterprise sowed the seeds of future contention, which grew to maturity in 1823. In 1825 operations on an extended scale became inevitable, and a force was mustered under General Morrison at Arracan. Here, however, occurred one of the mutinies which from time to time in the past have dimmed the glory of the Bengal Army. Three Native regiments† refused to march; remonstrances and warnings were alike disregarded, and eventually the Artillery and Royal troops opened fire upon the 47th Regiment, which thereupon ceased to exist.‡ Other Native regiments, however, remained staunch, and amongst them was the 42nd. As before remarked, the country was a singularly difficult one, well nigh impervious by dense and rank vegetation, and terribly fatal from miasmatic exhalations.§ The objects, however, that we had in view were obtained, and the 42nd gained the

* The 5th Bengal Native Infantry (Light), have "Arracan," "Afghanistan," "Kandahar," "Ghuznee," "Kabul, 1842," "Moodkee," "Ferozeshah," "Sobraon," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with yellow facings.

† The 26th, 47th, and 62nd. ‡ Another 47th was almost immediately formed.

§ Not the least of the troubles was the plague of mosquitos. In Alexander's account we read :—"A cavalry officer affirmed that he found no protection in a pair of leather breeches; an infantry soldier declared that they bit him through his breastplate; an artilleryman, to round the joke, asserted that he could not secure his head by thrusting it into a mortar."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

distinction of Arracan for their colours. They served again during the war in Afghanistan in 1840, and in March, 1842, were with the force which Nott led out of Kandahar to give battle against the enemy. Space will not allow us to recount here the stirring and tragic incidents of that campaign, wherein the heroism of warriors seemed to act as a foil to the ineptitude of politicians, but we must perforce quote the words written by the gallant Nott, when provoked well-nigh to fury at the panic-stricken orders he received: "My Sepoys always acted nobly, and I could have done nothing without them."* Nor must we, in mentioning this period of their existence, omit to mention that the 5th are amongst the regiments which can boast of having participated in the capture of Ghuznee, where were taken the famous sandal wood gates, regarded as a veritable Palladium by the Afghans, and said—though this was questioned—to be those brought in the eleventh century by the Sultan Mahmood from Somnauth. At Moodkee they again distinguished themselves, in the fierce fighting against foes who had everything at stake, and had long vaunted of being irresistible, and at Ferozeshah they were in the magnificent line of infantry before the advancing might of which the Khalsa hosts broke and fled discomfited. With "Sobraon" the share of the 5th in the greater battles of the Indian Army terminated for a time. Preserving their integrity during the Mutiny, they have from time to time been engaged in some of the more—relatively—unimportant active duty which falls to the lot of the Indian regiments.

In the recent Afghan Campaign they joined, in November, 1879, General Tytler's Brigade of the Kurrum Field Force, and were engaged in various skirmishes, a detachment being in garrison at Chapri in May of the following year, when a determined attack by the Waziris was effectively repulsed.†

The 6th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY,‡ late the 43rd, the Kyne-ke-daheena Pultun, date from 1803, and like their predecessors in number are "Light Infantry."

The early history of each of the older corps is so nearly identical that it would be wearisome to recount the individual records, even when the many subsequent changes render it possible to do so. For the eighteen years following the Regulations of 1796, fixing the establishment at twelve regiments, the increase to the army had been at the rate, roughly speaking, of one regiment each year, so that in 1814 there were thirty regiments of two battalions each. The first distinction of the 6th tells of "fierce

* Quarterly Review: "Sir W. Notts's Papers," 1846.

† Military operations later than the Egyptian Campaign are not as a rule referred to in this work.

‡ The 6th Bengal Native Infantry have "Nagpore," "Afghanistan," "Kandahar," "Ghuznee," "Kabul, 1842," "Maharajpore," "Sobraon," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-9." The uniform is red with white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Mahratta battle" and the heroism shown by the Company's troops—British and Native—at Nagpore in 1817, when Apa Sahib placed the gallant garrison in such fearful straits by his treachery. The Native troops had had not long before a magnificent example set them by their countrymen of the (late) 6th Bengal Cavalry. A desperate charge of the enemy placed them in temporary possession of one of our guns, which they slewed round and fired with terrible effect, killing many of our officers. All seemed over; from the crowds of women and children—the wives and families of the Sepoys—arose an agonised wailing; the terrible fate which befalls the victims of Arab victories seemed about to be theirs. From the post he was forbidden to leave Captain Fitzgerald, with his three troops of cavalry, saw the impending tragedy. It was one of those occasions when orders are better honoured in the breach than the observance. He resolved to charge. The Hindoos amongst his followers "threw earth over their heads, the Mussulmans shouted Deen! Deen!" resolving to conquer or die. Before their splendid charge the Mahratta Horse fled headlong, the guns were recaptured and once again turned on the foe, and with a splendid charge the Sepoys drove the baffled Arabs before them. Reinforcements shortly after arrived, and under General Doveton attacked the city, which ultimately surrendered.* The next important achievements of the regiment were in Afghanistan, where they gathered a goodly wreath of laurels. When the army of the Indus assembled towards the close of 1838, the 43rd were in Colonel Nott's—the 2nd—Brigade of the First Division, and were for some time in garrison at Quettah, and, after the apparent success of the expedition, at Kandahar. While there they supplied the detachment which accompanied Nott in his expeditions against the turbulent Ghilzies and other tribes. For weary months they remained in Kandahar beleaguered by foes without and endangered by treachery within, and must have welcomed the change caused by the sortie of the 12th of January, when a wing of the regiment took part in the successful engagement with the enemy under Suftu Jung and Atta Mohammed. As we read the accounts of those anxious days we seem to enter into the enthusiastic joy with which Nott's army, after months of hardship culminating in orders for a humiliating retreat, welcomed the *permission* to take Kabul. In that operation the 43rd rendered good service, gaining the praise, well deserved in their case, of the authorities. Under Gough they fought at Maharajpore—the battle in which the defunct 56th Native Infantry so gallantly acquitted themselves—and at Sobraon shared with H.M's. 10th and 53rd and the present 8th Bengal Native Infantry

* See the E. I. U. S. Journal, 1834.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the honours of the day. "The 10th Foot," wrote the Commander-in-Chief in his despatches, "greatly distinguished itself. . . . The onset of H.M.'s 53rd Foot was as gallant as effective. The 43rd and 59th Native Infantry, brigaded with them, emulated both in cool determination."

In the Afghan Campaign of 1878-80, the 6th were attached to the 4th Brigade of the 1st Division Peshawur Field Force, under Sir S. Browne. Five companies were with the force attacking Ali Musjid, while three were under Major Bride in the rear-guard. They subsequently joined the Division of General Manders, and had some sharp fighting in the Bazar Valley. During the greater part of the second campaign they occupied Fort Jamrud.

The 7th (the Duke of Connaught's Own) Bengal Native Infantry*—late the 47th "Craum-ka-Pultun"—date from 1824. Seven years after their formation they served in Orissa against the Cuttack rebels, and in the battles which occupied our warriors in the fifth decade of the present century the 7th bore an active part, scoring in Arracan and sharing in the glories of Moodkee, Ferozeshah, Aliwal, and Sobraon, the details of which have been often before given.

During the Mutiny they were principally engaged in the Mirzapore district. In the war in China of 1858-59, almost lost sight of in the more familiar campaign of the following two years, they formed part of the forces under General Straubenzee, their own commander being Colonel Pott. The next of the more important campaigns in which they have taken part is the Egyptian war of 1882, when they were commanded by Colonel Worsley. At Tel-el-Kebir the Indian Contingent, with whom were the Seaforth Highlanders and the Blue Jackets, operated on the extreme left, and distinguished themselves by gallantly storming an advanced battery of the enemy. After the battle, Sir Hubert Macpherson led them in "hot and swift pursuit" after the flying enemy, and promptly occupied Zagazig. The subsequent peaceful advance to Cairo closed the connection of the Duke of Connaught's Own with the war in which they had added to their already high reputation.

The 8th Bengal Native Infantry† was formerly numbered the 59th, and dates from 1815. No very important service fell to their share till the Sutlej Campaign, in which they were commanded by Colonel Stokes, and fought with distinction at Sobraon, after-

* The 7th Bengal Native Infantry have "Moodkee," "Ferozeshah," "Aliwal," "Sobraon," "China, 1858-9," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir." The uniform is red with yellow facings.

† The 8th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Sobraon" and "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

wards participating in the operations of the Gullundur force under General Wheeler. For many years then they rested—so far as any of the Native regiments of Her Majesty the Queen Empress can be said to rest—and the more popular portion of their history must be taken up at the chapter which deals with the Afghan war. Like many other regiments they suffered severely from sickness during the sojourn at Ali Musjid, but despite the disadvantage under which they were then placed, the detachment under Captain Webb gained great distinction at Kam Daka in January, 1880, and amongst the bravest on the field was Jemadar Bahudar Khan, who fell, as warriors love to fall, at the head of his company. The 8th subsequently joined the brigade under Arbuthnot at Safed Sang.*

The 9th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY † date from 1823, and three years after their formation took part in the famous siege of Bhurtpore, which has been before described. It was not long before the Sutlej Campaign called for their presence, throughout which, and notably at Sobraon, they served with distinction. Old records teem with the praise of the Native regiments herein, and it is no matter of wonder that when the recent Afghan Campaign made a call upon their duty the 9th were well to the fore. The good fortune of sharing in the bigger engagements was not, however, theirs, their principal service being garrison duty at Peshawur, and participation in the operations of the Jellalabad movable column and the Kama Expeditionary Force.

The 10th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY ‡ date from 1823, and were originally numbered the 65th. The scope of the present work only enables us to mention that they took part in the operations under General Van Straubenzee in China in 1858-9, and have subsequently been creditably engaged with the forces in Burmah.

The 11th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY § date from 1825, and were formerly numbered the 70th. Their first service of importance was in 1848-9, when they gained the general distinction of the "Punjab," in addition to "Chillianwallah" and "Goojerat." The details of these battles have often been given before; it will suffice here to mention that the 70th gained great credit for their conduct, and that amongst the officers who more

* It will be understood that for obvious reasons the most recent and purely local affairs in which the Native regiments have been engaged are not here referred to. It must, however, always be borne in mind that the last mentioned engagement is not by any means necessarily the last service rendered.

† The 9th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Bhurtpore," "Sobraon," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with yellow facings.

‡ The 10th Bengal Native Infantry bear "China, 1858-9." The uniform is red with yellow facings.

§ The 11th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Punjab," "Chillianwallah," "Goojerat," "China, 1858-9," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with yellow facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

particularly distinguished themselves may be mentioned Colonel Drummond and Captains Byers, Coxe, Garstin, Hopkinson, and Whiting. During the Mutiny several individual members of the regiment performed acts of signal courage, foremost amongst whom may be mentioned Lieutenant Daunt, who gained the Victoria Cross for his courage in an encounter with the Ramghur Mutineers, when he was instrumental in capturing two guns. The 70th subsequently took part in the China campaign of 1858, before alluded to, and in the Bhotan war of 1864. When the order of advance was given, the 11th were with the extreme left and left centre columns, and under Major Garstin distinguished themselves at the capture of Chamoorchee. Later on, under Lieutenant Millet, a body of some fifty men of the regiment held our position at Tazagong against a determined attack of the enemy, a few days after again fighting with great bravery, though with heavy loss, in the attack made by Colonel Watson on the enemy's position.* The 11th participated in the Lushai expedition, and their more notable achievements were consummated in the Afghan war of 1878-80. They were for some time attached to the Kurrum Field Force, after which they were engaged on garrison duty. Colonel Harris of the regiment was in command of the Ali Khel garrison, which gained considerable credit for their repulse of a determined attack. The Chakmani expedition and the Zaimusht operations claimed their attention before the close of the campaign, during which they lost no fewer than two field officers and 160 of other ranks.

The 12th Bengal Native Infantry,† the Khelat-i-Ghilzie Regiment, date from 1842, their official date of birth being the same as that on which was issued the Governor-General's Order conferring on them their first distinction. In the fierce Afghan war which raged from 1839 to 1842, the Ghilzies were our most inveterate foes. The vast and picturesque fortress of Khelat had been taken by General Wiltshire in 1839, given up, and again acquired the following year and towards the end of 1842 was vigorously attacked by a force of between seven and eight thousand of the fierce hillsmen. Lieutenant-Colonel Craigie Halkett was in command of a much smaller body of men composed of various "details," and from this body the present 12th Bengal Native Infantry derives its origin.

The defence was a splendid one, and whatever may be thought of the policy that directed the evacuation, there can be no doubt that both General Nott and Colonel —then Captain—Halkett were bitterly disappointed at the order. The latter especially,

* Lieutenant Millet was amongst the killed on this occasion.

† The 12th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Khelat-i-Ghilzie," "Candahar," "Ghuznee," "Cabul, 1842," "Maharajpore," "Afghanistan, 1878-9." The uniform is red with white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

who, but a couple of days previously, had repulsed a determined attack, inflicting on the enemy a loss of five hundred men, regarded it as "something like an acknowledgment of defeat." Yet perhaps it was time, for the day before the arrival of the relieving force the last sheep had been killed and eaten. We cannot linger over the other incidents of the war, the share of the 12th in which is testified by their distinctions, nor can we dwell on the history of the intervening years. Mention, however, must be made of the Bhotan war, in which they distinguished themselves in the Divisions commanded by Mulcaster and Richardson, and took a conspicuous part in the storming of Dewangiri.

The recent Afghan Campaign afforded anopportunity for the regiment to revisit the scenes of their earliest prowess. They were attached to Sir Donald Stewart's division, and for some three months were in garrison at their name-place. Sickness, however, compelled their early return to India, which they reached in April, 1879. Since then they have taken part in the Burmah expedition.

The 13th (the Shekhawattee) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY* were formerly known as the Shekhawattee Battalion, and date as such from about 1845. But the Shekhawattee Brigade—including both cavalry and infantry—dates from much earlier, having in 1837 been actively employed in Rajpootanah under Colonel Forster. "The entire brigade joined the British army in 1846, then operating on the Sutlej under General Sir H. Smith, was present at the battle of Aliwal, and had the honour to be specially noticed in the Houses of Parliament by the Duke of Wellington and Lord Auckland, the then Governor-General of India." Subsequently to Aliwal the brigade served in the Punjab. During the Mutiny the battalion were more than passively loyal, being "severely tested and found staunch and deserving." They served in conjunction with a European Naval Brigade in Maunbhoom, Suigbhoom, and Sumbulpore. In the more recent war in Afghanistan they were under the command of Colonel Watson, and after staying a short time in the camp at Thal acccompanied the force under General Tytler in the operations in the Zaimusht territory, notably the storming of Zawa. Their subsequent services during the war included the occupation of Chapri and Mandoria.

The 14th (the Ferozepore Sikhs) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY† also date from 1846, and were formerly known as the Ferozepore Regiment. The doings of the regiments

* The 13th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Aliwal" and "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with dark blue facings.

† The 14th Bengal Native Infantry bear "Lucknow (Defence and Capture)," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-9." The uniform is red with yellow facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

15th SIKHS.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

engaged in the Defence of Lucknow—the first distinction borne by the 14th—will be treated of hereafter; it will suffice here to say that that distinction acquires a double lustre when borne by a Native regiment.*

In the attack on Ali Musjid they were in General Appleyard's column, and were with the 81st, the regiment which actually commenced action. Their loss was heavy, Captain Maclean and seven native non-commissioned officers being amongst the killed or wounded. When Ali Musjid had fallen, the Ferozepore Sikhs took part in the advance to Kati and Landi Khana, but the severe sickness which broke out in the regiment terminated their connection with the war so early as the following December.

The 15th (the Loodianah Sikhs) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY† were, like their numerical predecessors, raised on the 30th July, 1846, and were long known as the regiment of Loodianah. During the Mutiny, one of the most nobly won of the Victoria Crosses was gained by Sergeant Gill of the regiment. When the outbreak occurred at Benares he, with two others, saved several Europeans from impending slaughter; thrice he saved the life of an officer of the 27th Native Infantry, and on another occasion killed a sepoy who was about to murder a sergeant of the 25th Native Infantry. On this occasion he, with only his sword, faced and kept at bay *twenty-seven mutineers.*

During the China war the 15th were busily engaged, being brigaded with the Royal Scots and H.M.'s 31st Regiment, in the 1st Brigade of the 1st Infantry Division. When the Afghan war broke out they joined the army in October, 1878, and for a considerable time garrisoned the Citadel of Kandahar, an important duty, in the performance of which their discipline and conduct gained repeated commendations from the authorities. They shared in the actions of Ahmed Khel and Arzu, and throughout the ensuing months were actively engaged, distinguishing themselves notably in the skirmish at Jahar Kila on the 12th of May, 1880. The following August they were with Roberts's army, and on the 31st of that month took part as the *only* infantry regiment in the famous reconnaisance under Brigadier Gough. Their steady fire routed a large body of the enemy—some six or seven thousand in number—and obtained for the regiment special mention. Their brilliant services during the Afghan war consummated in the battle of Kandahar, fought on the day following the reconnaissance. Their share in the campaign in Egypt of 1885 is well known. In the advance on Hasheen they were in the rear of the square, and three days later fought in the battle of Tofrek.

* The regiment of Ferozepore were with the column under Major Renaud.

† The 15th Bengal Native Infantry have "China, 1860-62," "Ahmed Khel," "Kandahar," 1880, "Afghanistan, 1878-80," "Suakim, 1885," "Tofrek." The uniform is red with green facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 16th (the Lucknow) Bengal Native Infantry* dates from December, 1857. They were formerly known as the "Regiment of Lucknow," and it is scarcely to be wondered at that a title eloquent of such honour is still familiarly used. The Regiment of Lucknow was composed of the loyal remnants of the 13th, 48th, and 71st Native Regiments, which dated from 1764, 1804, and 1825 respectively, but which mutinied at Lucknow on the fateful 24th of May, 1857. Only some four hundred remained

"In action faithful and in honour clear,
Who broke no promise,"

and who richly merited the high praise they received, and the distinction of forming the nucleus of a regiment whose name should, through all time, recall their devotion and enduring courage. Many are the accounts which have appeared of that terrible siege; though more than thirty years have passed, the record of the sufferings, the valour, the nameless horrors, the matchless endurance which it produced are still fresh. So evident was it that the rebels intended laying siege to the capital, that, towards the end of June, Sir Henry Lawrence made a sortie to obtain much needed provisions. This sortie terminated in the battle of Chinhutt, where our troops suffered a repulse. That evening the enemy were in the town, our defence was confined to the Residency, and a week later the gallant Lawrence was no more. For two months the heroic garrison held out, hoping daily for aid, yet never wavering—the sick and dying lying without bed or bedding in the crowded hospital, through the walls and windows of which came hurtling from time to time a shot or shell, putting a period to suffering, and hushing for ever anguished groan and weary plaint. Nearer and nearer still were pushed the mines; heavier and more deathful grew the cannonade. But every breach was manned by heroes, and from every attack the rebels were repulsed with heavy loss. No names shine with a fairer lustre in the unfading emblazonment of the Defence of Lucknow than those of Chambers, Cubitt, Loughman, Green, and Wilson of the 13th; of Bird, Fletcher, Green, and Huxham of the 48th; of Birch, Dinning, Sewell, and Strangways of the 71st. Most were wounded—often several times. On one of those hopeless watchings for help from the look-out Lieutenant Fletcher had his left hand shot away; Lieutenant Cubitt had gained his Victoria Cross for saving the lives of three fellow-soldiers after Chinhutt; Lieutenant Sewell established during the siege a cartridge factory of inestimable value. On the 23rd August, Brigadier Inglis wrote to Havelock, "The enemy are within a few yards of our defences . . .

* The 16th Bengal Native Infantry have "on their colours and appointments the design of a Turreted Gateway," "Lucknow (Defence)," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

their eighteen pounders are within 150 yards of some of our batteries, and . . . we cannot reply to them. My strength now in Europeans is 350 and about 300 Natives, and the men are dreadfully harassed, and, owing to part of the Residency being brought down by round shot, many are without shelter." But we must not linger on the story of the Defence of Lucknow. When at last Havelock fought his way in there remained but little more than three-fifths of the original garrison. Even then the siege was not over; further dangers were to be faced, prolonged sufferings and privations * to be endured ere the three generals had their famous meeting, and in these dangers, sufferings, and privations the Regiment of Lucknow took an honoured share.

The Lucknow Regiment took part in the latter portion of the Afghan campaign.

The 17th (the Loyal Poorbeah) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY † is the first of the Native regiments raised subsequently to the Mutiny. They fought in the Bhotan war of 1864, and a detachment under Lieutenant Dawes garrisoned the fort of Dhumsong. They were in the latter part of the Afghan campaign, and with the Indian Contingent in the Egyptian war. They took part in the battle of Hasheen, and were hotly pressed in the attack on McNeill's zeriba.

The 18th (the Alipore) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY,‡ formerly the Alipore Regiment, date as a corps from 1795, but their active connection with the Native Army as at present constituted is of more recent date, and presents no features of particular interest, if we except the Bhotan expedition of 1864, in which they were in the left column under General Durnsford, and during the latter part of the campaign distinguished themselves under General Fraser Tytler.

The 19th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY § were formerly the 7th Punjab Infantry. The space at our command, in the case of the 19th and similar regiments, prevents us dwelling on their previous history. The great majority of them, when incorporated formally into Her Majesty's Indian Army, could boast of brave deeds already performed during the Mutiny, though in comparatively few cases were these within the areas commemorated by distinctions. We must content ourselves, therefore, with glancing at the share they took in the more important wars under the rule of the

* A cheerot cost between three and four rupees, a bottle of brandy fetched fifty-four rupees, an old flannel coat was sold for fifty-one.

† The 17th Bengal Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80," "Suakim, 1885," "Tofrek." The uniform is red with white facings.

‡ The 18th Bengal Native Infantry has a red uniform with black facings.

§ The 19th Bengal Native Infantry have "Ahmed Khel," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with blue facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Queen Empress, but in so doing we feel constrained again to say that such limited notice is in very many cases wittingly though regretfully silent on many a worthy record of gallant conduct in smaller campaigns. In 1878 the 19th joined Biddulph's force at Quetta, and two months later occupied Kandahar. After several months' garrison of Quetta they again joined the army at Kandahar, and played a most distinguished part in the battle of Ahmed Khel. At first they were in the reserve, but when the crisis became grave were ordered up and took part in the magnificent repulse of the enemy's cavalry. A few days later they fought at Arzu, which terminated their more active employment in the campaign, during which they lost nearly a hundred and thirty men from disease.

The 20th (the Duke of Cambridge's Own) (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY * were formerly known as the 8th Punjab Infantry. Very soon after the Mutiny they gave evidence—though plenty had ere that date been forthcoming—of their value. The incidents of the China war of 1860 have before been dwelt on, and we can here do no more than record the fact that the Duke of Cambridge's Own earned great credit from their share in the operations. In the Umbeyla campaign of 1863 they were also engaged, and very greatly distinguished themselves, amongst the officers killed being Lieutenant Richmond of the regiment.†

In the Afghan war they were, to commence with, attached to the Peshawur Valley Force, and took part in the important operations conducted by General McPherson on the Rhotas Heights, being amongst the regiments which bear the distinction of "Ali Musjid." After many other minor engagements they returned to India in June, 1879, to be summoned again to the seat of war by the outbreak of hostilities in the autumn of that year. In the Egyptian campaign they shared to the full in the honours deservedly given to the Indian contingent, their share in the battle of Tel-el-Kebir being none the less brilliant because comparatively without loss.

The 21st (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY ‡ was formerly known as the 9th Punjab Infantry. They took part in the Abyssinian campaign, were represented in the Black Mountain expedition and in the Afghan war of 1878-80. In this last their first duty was to garrison Hazar Pir, after which, in January, they took part in the battle of Matoond, where they captured no fewer than eighty prisoners. A somewhat exciting

* The 20th Bengal Native Infantry have "Taku Forts, 1860," "Pekin, 1860," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-80," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir." The uniform is drab with green facings.

† For an interesting account of this expedition the reader is referred to a paper in the *Cornhill Magazine* for 1864.

‡ The 21st Bengal Native Infantry have "Abyssinia," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is drab with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

incident, more peculiarly affecting the 21st, occurred after this battle, which we describe in full as evidence of how Native officers are equal to the responsibilities thrown on them: "The camp was roused by the sound of firing, the cause of which was very unexpected. It appeared that there had been an organized attempt to rescue the captured prisoners, who were under a strong guard of the 21st Native Infantry, commanded by a Subhadar, Makkan Singh. Two rifle shots had been heard which do not seem to have been fully accounted for, and the prisoners imagined they were the signal of an attempted rescue. They accordingly sprang from the ground simultaneously, and began furiously to sway from side to side, in the hope of breaking the ropes by which they were tethered. Their excitement was terrible to witness. Several snatched at the rifles of the Sepoy guard, and tried to wrest them away; hence ensued a series of desperate personal combats. One powerful Wazin, who got free from his bonds, was shot dead by the revolver of a Native officer. Makkan Singh saw that unless extreme measures were immediately taken the whole prisoners might break loose and effect their escape. So while these masses of excited and desperate men were swaying and wildly wrenching, the guard loaded, and either shot down or bayoneted every man who persisted in struggling." After that, their chief duty was again garrison, but in the following October they were prominently engaged in the action at Shutargardan, occupying with the 3rd Sikhs an important position. On the 14th of the same month they very greatly distinguished themselves under Colonel Collis, charging a force of some 4,000 of the enemy and routing them with heavy loss. Their subsequent services in the campaign were of a more prosaic though equally important character. Like many other regiments they suffered severely from sickness.

The 22nd (Punjab) Bengal Native Infantry* were formerly known as the 11th Punjab Infantry. After the China war, the incidents of which have been before related, their next service of any magnitude was against the Lushais in 1872, when they were commanded by Colonel Stafford, and greatly distinguished themselves. They also took part in the Jowaki Afreedee expedition five years later. In the Afghan war of 1878-80 they were at first employed on garrison duty at Peshawur, after which they were attached to the 2nd Brigade of the Khyber Division. Few regiments suffered more severely from the climate, amongst those who were struck down being the commandant, Colonel J. O'Brien.

* The 22nd Bengal Native Infantry have "China, 1860-62," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with blue facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 23rd (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY * were formerly known as the 15th Punjab Infantry, and retain the distinctive appellation of Pioneers. They took a very prominent part in the China war of 1860, being attached to the 2nd Brigade of the 1st Division of Infantry. In the advance on Taku they were in the centre, when the allied troops occupied Pehtang being fortunate enough to find a pawnbroker's establishment assigned as their quarters, a circumstance which it is satisfactory to record they turned to profitable account. The 23rd—then the 15th—were with the Rifles "lent" for a short time to General Montauban, when he was anxious to teach the enemy a lesson, and after that they joined in the attack upon Tangkoo and in the capture of the Taku Forts and Chan-chai-wan. Outside Pekin they had a brisk skirmish with the enemy, during which it is reported that an officer "in the close *mêlée* forgot, oddly enough, to draw his sword, and with clenched fist knocked down a Tartar, who was bayoneted ere he could rise" (*Grant*). Their service with the Abyssinian expedition was highly meritorious. The most serious attack made by the enemy in the war was hurled at the Pioneers, who behaved with the greatest bravery, plunging into the dense masses of the enemy (the main body) and repulsing them with terrible slaughter. Again do we hear of the 23rd in the thick of the Afghan war, on the scene of which they arrived shortly before the storming of Peiwar Kotal. Their first service consisted of two important reconnaissances under Colonel Perkins and Major Corbet. They then led the way in the splendid advance made by Brigadier Thelwall. Small though our loss comparatively was, it was heavy to the 23rd, for amongst the killed was Major Anderson, their second in command. His body was found terribly mutilated, and a correspondent, writing at the time, remarked that "the life of any Kabulee would not that day have been much worth purchase if he had encountered on the field either man or officer of the 23rd Pioneers." In the advance on Ali Kheyl one wing was in the advance guard and another in the rear. Passing over the intervening months, when the news of the Kabul massacre became known the 23rd held the Shutargardan Pass, and subsequently took part in the advance on Kabul. A detachment was with Major White's force which so distinguished itself in the defiles before Charasiah. The remainder of the regiment were with General Baker, and materially assisted in the brilliant charges which gained the day. Dr. Duncan of the regiment was wounded, and Gemadar Beer Singh and two privates received the Order of Merit for

* The 23rd Bengal Native Infantry have "Taku Forts," "Pekin," "Abyssinia," "Peiwar Kotal," "Charasiah," "Kabul, 1879," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878—80." The uniform is drab with chocolate facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

their gallantry in the capture, under Captain Paterson, of the enemy's guns. After sharing in the various operations round Kabul they took part in the advance on Kandahar. In the famous battle which goes by that name, they charged with the 92nd Highlanders and the 2nd Ghoorkas, Captain Chesney of the regiment being severely wounded. And with this brief account of their last "big" campaign we must take leave of the 23rd Pioneers.

The 24th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY * were formerly the 16th Punjab Infantry. During and after the Mutiny they rendered good service, notably in the Eusuffzaie campaign and in Bundlecund. Their chief laurels were, however, gained in the Afghan campaign, during which they were first attached to General Maude's division. On the occasion when Lieutenant Hart, R.E., gained his V.C. for rescuing a trooper of the 13th Bengal Cavalry he was followed and aided in his gallant enterprise by some men of the 24th. In the action of Shekabad, on the 25th April, 1880, they were hotly engaged, and on the 20th of the following month assisted materially in the defeat inflicted on the enemy. They fought at Kandahar, often side by side with their brethren of the 23rd, and were fortunate enough to escape with only one killed and eleven wounded. A detachment formed the recruiting party under Captain Stratton when that officer was shot by a hidden enemy.

The 25th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY † were formerly the 17th Punjab Infantry. They offered no exception to the valuable service rendered by the Punjab corps. As with many other regiments, we can only refer, and that but briefly, to their share in the Afghan war, a campaign which has added to their colours the distinctions they bear. In the battle of Ahmed Khel one company was at first in the reserve, doing duty as the General's escort, but were ordered up when matters assumed a serious aspect. They formed part of the force which marched to relieve Kandahar, and in the ensuing battle acquitted themselves right well.

The 26th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY,‡ formerly the 18th Punjab Infantry, has an early history similar to that of the other Punjab regiments. The distinction shows that they have served with credit in the only important campaign which has fallen to their lot, but we do not propose here to refer again to incidents which have by now become so familiar to our readers.

* The 24th Bengal Native Infantry have "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with white facings.

† The 25th Bengal Native Infantry have "Ahmed Khel," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with white facings.

‡ The 26th Bengal Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is drab with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 27th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY* were formerly the 19th Punjab Infantry. Their first distinction is "China, 1860-62," in which war they were in the 4th Brigade of the 2nd Division. In the Afghan campaign they were engaged at Ali Musjid, being commanded by the gallant Major Birch. Their "fiery valour" and fierce impetuosity was the subject of general comment, but when they reluctantly retired it was found that to the 27th belonged the mournful honour of having given the first lives for the Queen Empress in the campaign, Major Birch and Lieutenant Fitzgerald being amongst the many slain. Throughout the rest of the war they were actively engaged.

The 28th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY, the 29th (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY, the 30th, and the 31st† were formerly respectively known as the 20th, the 21st, the 22nd, and the 23rd Punjab Infantry. All date from the period of the Mutiny, and can refer to splendid services. But they are, perhaps, more familiarly known to the generation of to-day in connection with the Afghan campaign, in which they all participated. One of the most unaccountable incidents in the campaign was an unpleasant occurrence in which the 29th were implicated in the attack on the Peiwar Kotal. Before that day they had been foremost in action, notably at Turrai, where Captain Reed of the regiment was wounded, but in the early morning, when our troops were marching in silence to gain the Spin Gawi pass, two shots were fired from the ranks of the 29th. The regiment was halted; despite the endeavours of the Native officers to shield them, the culprits were discovered and—together with some others who had also misconducted themselves—tried by court martial. The conduct of the rest of the regiment there and throughout was exemplary. The 28th regiment, we may mention, particularly distinguished itself on the occasion of the sortie from Kandahar in August, 1880, in which Colonel Newport was killed and Lieutenant-Colonel Nimmo hotly pressed in a hand-to-hand encounter. The 29th, 30th, and 31st were engaged in the Bhotan war of 1864, in which they earned great credit, taking part in some very severe fighting and suffering considerable loss, including two or three officers. The 30th were the first in

* The 27th Bengal Native Infantry have "China, 1860-2," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is drab with red facings.

† The 28th Bengal Native Infantry have "Charasia," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with emerald green facings.

The 29th Bengal Native Infantry have "Peiwar Kotal," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red withblue facings.

The 30th Bengal Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with white facings.

The 31st Bengal Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red with white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the field, and under Major Mayne greatly distinguished themselves, the 28th and the 31st arriving subsequently with the reinforcements under General Tombs.

The 32nd (Punjab) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY * were formerly the 24th Punjab Infantry, and are one of the "Pioneer" regiments. They were organized by Major Gulliver, an officer of the Bengal Engineers, who commanded them at Delhi and at Lucknow. The 32nd and another Punjab regiment—the 6th Punjab Infantry—are the only Native Bengal regiments which have the distinction of a motto, and that of the 32nd —"I'll either find or make a way"—very aptly describes the style in which they fought on the two memorable occasions commemorated by "Delhi" and "Lucknow." They took part in the Umbeyla campaign of 1863, and their last exploit of note—excepting, as we must, minor expeditions—has been the Afghan war.

The 33rd (Allahabad) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY † were formerly the Allahabad Levy; the 34th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY are amongst the Pioneer regiments. The 35th and 36th BENGAL INFANTRY have the sub-title "The Sikhs"; the 37th BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY are the "Dogras"; and the 38th (the Agra) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY represent the old Agra Levy raised in the August of 1858. Beyond what we have referred to as the initial services of their existence, none of these regiments has been engaged in any of the larger campaigns noted in recent Indian history, while to recapitulate the smaller services—which none the less reflect very often the highest credit on those who perform them—would scarcely be of interest to a general reader.

The 39th (Allygurh) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY,‡ formerly the Allygurh Levy, date from February, 1858. Their principal service has been the Afghan war of 1878-80.

The 40th (the Shahjehanpore) BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY,§ formerly the Shahjehanpore Levy, date from about the same time. The remarks above made as to the 33rd and following regiments apply to this with equal force.

The 42nd BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY‖ date from 1817, and were formerly known as the 42nd Assam Light Infantry; the 43rd BENGAL NATIVE INFANTRY were known as the 43rd Assam Light Infantry, and the 44th BENGAL LIGHT INFANTRY as the 44th Sylhet

* The 32nd Bengal Native Infantry have "*Aut viam inveniam aut faciam*," "Delhi," "Lucknow" (Relief and Capture), "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with dark blue facings.

† The 33rd Bengal Native Infantry have red uniform with white facings. The 34th Bengal Native Infantry have red uniform and dark blue facings; the 35th, 36th, and 37th Bengal Native Infantry have red uniform with yellow facings; and the 38th Bengal Native Infantry have red uniform with dark blue facings.

‡ The 39th Bengal Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with facings of blue.

§ The 40th Bengal Native Infantry have a red uniform with white facings.

‖ The 42nd, 43rd, and 44th Bengal Native Infantry have a dark green uniform with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Light Infantry. All these regiments are now "Goorkha Light Infantry." We will notice merely some of the more recent of their services. The 43rd and 44th were engaged in the Bhotan campaign, the first occasion that the former, at any rate, had been employed as a regiment. The 43rd Assam were in the right column under General Mulcaster, the 44th Sylhet in the right centre under Colonel Richardson. Six companies of the 43rd under Colonel Campbell of the regiment garrisoned Dewangiri, and were surprised by a sudden and unexpected attack of the enemy. The latter were repulsed with loss, but Captain Storey and many others were wounded. A retreat was determined on, which, despite the efforts of Colonel Campbell, Lieutenants Peet and Storey, and others, can hardly be considered other than disastrous, as both wounded and baggage fell into the hands of the enemy and something like a panic ensued. Strong animadversions were made, but, as a chronicler remarks, it should be borne in mind that until the Bhotan expedition the 43rd had never the advantage of acting as a regiment. There was certainly no panic on the occasion of the final capture of Dewangiri. The 44th were also engaged in this campaign, and acquitted themselves with distinction, notably in repulsing an attack on the fort at Bishensing. Both the 42nd Assam and the 44th Sylhet were in the Lushai War of 1871, the former being commanded by Colonel Rattray, and the latter by Colonel Hicks. Both regiments acquitted themselves in a most praiseworthy manner, Colonels Nutthall and Roberts, and Captains Harrison, Lightfoot, and Robertson particularly distinguishing themselves. The 44th again took part in the Naja expedition of 1875, when they were commanded by Colonel Nutthall.

The 45th (Rattray's Sikhs) Bengal Native Infantry,* originated from the first battalion of the Bengal Police, and have always been known as Rattray's Sikhs. Their formal more official connection with the army dates from 1864, but for many years previously their services had been as famed as they were brilliant. The first two names on their colours recall one of the most dramatic incidents in the history of the Mutiny. Hereward Wake, the governor of Arrah, an important town in Behar, had for long held the position as most serious, and quietly, regardless of ridicule, had fortified his house. In this extempore fortress sixteen civilians and fifty of Rattray's Sikhs defended themselves against several thousand mutineers. The first rescue party was cut to pieces, and the annihilation of the little garrison was a question almost of minutes, when they were relieved by the gallant Vincent Eyre, after a defence which their

* Rattray's Sikhs, the 45th Bengal Native Infantry, have "Berar," "Defence of Arrah," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with white facings, and a peculiar feature is the small metal disc, or quoit, worn in front of the turban.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

rescuer styled "one of the most remarkable feats in Indian history." There is but little need in the case of such a regiment to remark that time hangs seldom idly on their hands, but our brief account must leap from the memorable defence of Arrah to their brilliant services in Afghanistan.

In November, 1878, they advanced under General Sir S. Browne against Ali Musjid; later on they were with Gough's Brigade despatched towards Lughman. They fought at Futtehabad, where Captain Holmes of the regiment had a remarkable escape, and were with the reinforcements under MacPherson which, in April, 1880, were despatched to the assistance of Colonel Jenkins outside Charasiah. Since that they have served in the Zhob Valley Expedition.

We now come to the famous GOORKHA REGIMENTS, respecting which a volume could well be written. As a matter of fact, records have in some cases been published, which can be consulted by those desirous of following more closely the history of these corps, between which and the British regiments there exists so great a *camaraderie.* Like the Sikhs, the Goorkhas were at one time our most inveterate foes, and the history of the Nepaul Campaign is eloquent of their desperate courage.

The 1st GOORKHA REGIMENT (Light Infantry)* are divided into two battalions. The names borne on the colours we will leave to tell their own tale.

The fighting which took place in the Malay Peninsula in 1875, and in which they took part, is not so familiar as many of the wars we have had to narrate. Major Channer won a Victoria Cross, when in command of a small party of the 1st Goorkhas. The circumstances are thus set out in Colonel Knollys' record :—

"This engagement occurred on the 20th December, 1875, under the following circumstances:—Captain Channer was despatched by the officer commanding the column to procure intelligence as to the enemy's strength and position. He contrived to get in rear of the enemy, and crept forward to reconnoitre. He found that he could hear the voices of the men garrisoning the stockade, and, observing that they were cooking at the time, keeping no look out, and utterly unsuspicious of danger, he resolved to attack. Beckoning up his party, all crept quietly up to within a few paces of the stockade, when a rush was made. Captain Channer dashed to the front, and, climbing over the wall, shot the first man he saw dead with his revolver. His men then came up, entered the stockade, and soon disposed of the Malays."

* The 1st Goorkhas have "Bhurtpore," "Aliwal," "Sobraon," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark green with scarlet facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The following year they were again engaged and took part in the dashing capture of Kotah Lama under Colonel Cox.

The 2nd (Prince of Wales's Own) GOORKHA REGIMENT * was formerly known as the Sirmoor Battalion. They have the first three distinctions in common with the 1st Regiment, and "Delhi" recalls the service, priceless beyond words, which they, with the other loyal regiments, then rendered. It was on this occasion that the friendship sprang up between the Sirmoor Goorkhas and the gallant King's Royal Rifles, a friendship founded and cemented in dauntless and pitiless combat with the inhuman foe. In the Bhotan expedition of 1864-5, they were in Colonel Watson's column, and, not to name other instances, were distinguished in the repulse of the attack on Baxa. Their prowess in Afghanistan is a matter of note. Under Colonel Battye they again and again performed deeds eulogised in despatches; shoulder to shoulder with the 92nd Highlanders they took Gundi-Moollah. When the position on the Baba Wali Kotal was about to be assaulted, "as a compliment to the regiment, the brigadier ordered that the Goorkhas should lead the way supported by the 92nd; and when the village had been carried by a rush at half-past ten, one of Colonel Battye's Goorkhas raced with a 92nd Highlander for a gun which the Afghan gunners were endeavouring to carry off." The Goorkha managed to get up first, cut the mule-traces and cut down the drivers, and Inderbir Lama, jumping upon the captured weapon, placed his rifle across it, shouting, "This for the honour of my regiment! The 2nd Goorkhas! The Prince of Wales's!"

Again we read that "Battye's splendid little Goorkhas taught the immense Afghan Ghazis what pluck and the bayonet can do even against the most skilful swordsman, and in the clusters of dead around were to be seen the evidences of their prowess. The Goorkha fights capitally with the bayonet, but if in any doubt or difficulty as to the result, invariably dashes himself upon his adversary, and finishes with the knife, a curved weapon about twice the size of an ordinary bowie."

The 3rd GOORKHAS † were formerly the Kemaoon Battalion and date from 1815. In, however, giving the date officially assigned it must be remembered that in many cases an informal connection existed for many years before between these sturdy mountaineers and the British Government. The 3rd Goorkhas have "Delhi," and with that alone may be said to have "done well for the State," but their more recent prowess

* The 2nd Goorkhas have "Bhurtpore," "Aliwal," "Sobraon," "Delhi," "Kabul 1879," "Kandahar, 1878-80." They also bear the plume of the Prince of Wales. The uniform is dark green with scarlet facings.

† The 3rd Goorkhas have "Delhi," "Ahmed Khel," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark green with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE 3rd GOORKHAS.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

has a glory all its own. At Charasiah they were in the forefront of the fight and captured a standard. The incident is thus recorded. "An aide-de-camp sped with an order for the Goorkha commander, Captain Hill, to take this particular standard. His men lay down for two minutes to recover their breath; Captain Hill waved his sword high above his head, and in his men's language called out that the General expected them to capture the flag. With a wild cheer, which was heard from flank to flank, the Goorkhas sprang from the ground and rushed forward; bearing down all opposition at the point of the bayonet, they gained the standard, drove away or killed its escort, and uprooted it from its position! At sight of this the enemy wavered, and many streamed to the rear in flight."

At Ahmed Khel they were in General Hughes's brigade, and as the hostile cavalry swept through the spaces between the squares, "the 3rd Goorkhas opened upon them a blighting fire of muskets point blank," and the records of the campaign supply many other instances of the valuable service they rendered.

The 4th GOORKHAS* were formerly known as the extra Goorkha battalion. We are compelled to confine ourselves in this case also to the more recent of their services. Their first distinction recalls the timely and important capture of the fortress of Ali Musjid; under Major Rowcroft a detachment of them accompanied Macpherson's column in its march on Lughman; on the fresh outbreak of hostilities they greatly distinguished themselves at Syazabad, "the Goorkhas behaving nobly, storming one *sungah* after another, and driving the defenders up the hill with the bayonet," again being commanded by Major Rowcroft. They took part in Roberts's famous march, and in the fierce fighting at Kandahar lost their gallant commander, Colonel Rowcroft.

We now come to the PUNJAB FRONTIER FORCE, and a few words will not be out of place, giving a *general* idea of the genesis and services of these most invaluable soldiers. Fuller details will be found in Paget's valuable work, and the fact that in that goodly chronicle of nearly five hundred pages there is scarcely a superfluous line will be the best apology for the bareness of the outline we can give here. The originator (of the Infantry branch) may be fairly said to be Captain Coke, whose name is still held in affectionate veneration by the soldiers of his splendid regiment, the 1st Punjab Infantry. We have in another place given a sketch of the famous "Guides," the regiment on the basis of which was modelled the Punjab force, the "foundation of the present Bengal Army." An authority of weight on all subjects connected with Indian military matters—General

* The 4th Goorkhas have "Ali Musjid," "Kabul, 1879," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark green with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Sir Henry Daly—estimates the number of fights and expeditions in which the Punjab Frontier Force was employed during the ten years only of Sir Neville Chamberlain's command at, at least, fifty, and it would indeed be difficult to name a year in which the services of some part of the force are not requisitioned.

In his valuable paper, Sir H. Daly quotes as an illustrative expedition that against the Mahoud Wuziris in 1860, and as the Punjab Force was more or less generally employed in it, we will give his description.

"The expedition, composed entirely of soldiers organized and disciplined in the way I have described, without an English bayonet or sabre in the ranks, consisted of—Detachments of the Punjab Light Field Batteries: three Royal Artillery British officers, 101 fighting men. The Peshawur and Hazara Mountain Transport: six Royal Artillery Officers, 125 fighting men. Detachments of Guide, Punjab, Mooltan Cavalry: four British officers, 331 sabres. Detachments of Sikh, Guide, Punjab, and Goorkha Infantry; 41 British officers, 4,536 men. In all about 5,200 fighting men—Sikhs, Affredies, Goorkhas, and Pathans of every clan—with 64 British officers, of whom seven were staff, led by Brigadier-General Sir Neville Chamberlain, whose presence to every man of the force was a guarantee of success. On the 4th May the force moved forward through a narrow cleft in the rock; 6,000 or 7,000 of the enemy were in position, the mouth of the pass was closed by an abattis so strong that guns had no effect upon it; along the crags and ridges were breastworks of stone, terraced one above the other, thick with Wuziris. I will not delay by attempting further description of ground, &c., which well might lead the mountaineers to rely on their courage to maintain it.

"The force was formed into three columns of attack. The right and main attack had to carry breastworks on a crest, the last twelve or fifteen feet of which were almost inaccessible, the ground below was broken and cut up with ravines; the attacking party in groups fired from behind rocks, to shelter themselves from the fire and stones hurled from above. Casualties were thick amongst them. The Wuziris, seeing this check, leaped from their breastworks, and with shouts, sword in hand, burst through the leading men and reached the mountain guns and reserve. The ground on which this occurred was visible to both sides; the hills and crags rang with cheers from the clansmen as they watched the glistening swords. Captain Keyes, now Sir Charles Keyes, was with the 1st Punjab Infantry in reserve; putting himself at the head of a handful of men, he cut down the leader of the Wuziris, already on the flank of the guns. Thus the tide of triumph was turned. The men of the battery, under Captain Butt, never swerved; they

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

stood to their guns and fought; the brilliant stroke was over; the Wuziris leaving the ground thick with dead, retreated up the hill, so hotly pursued that the breastwork was carried and the position won.

"Our loss was Lieutenant Ayrton, 94th, attached to the 2nd Punjab Infantry, and 30 killed; 84 wounded. The centre and left attacks were carried with trifling loss, and the stronghold of the Wuziris fell into our hands."

In glancing at the records of the different regiments we shall come across names and deeds which, by reason of their pre-eminence and worth, have become as household words wherever and whenever men talk of courage and heroism and warlike excellence. The names and deeds alike are those of men of the Punjab Frontier Force.

The 1st SIKH INFANTRY* were raised in 1846, though they date their present organization from some five years later. The first distinction they bear might fairly claim extended notice, but we must content ourselves with quoting a few of the eulogies which competent judges have pronounced upon their service. "Throughout the campaign the Punjab force bore itself with conspicuous glory; many officers, English and native—in their gallant leading there was no distinction—fell or were disabled. They quailed before no danger, shrank from no raid however desperate, and bore themselves to their leader against any odds with a fidelity unsurpassed by the Crusaders." Since the Mutiny, the 1st Sikhs have served in the Jowaki Campaign, the Afghan Campaign, and the more recent Mahsood Wazeree Expedition of 1881.

The 2nd (or Hill) SIKH INFANTRY† date from about the same time as the regiment just mentioned, and, like their brethren of the 1st Sikhs, commence their career of distinctions with "Punjab." They were engaged with great credit at Ahmed Khel, and shared in inflicting the severe repulse upon the enemy's cavalry before referred to. They were with General Roberts's force, and in the battle of Kandahar formed the first line, with the 72nd Highlanders, in the 2nd brigade, and came in, according to the general's despatches, for the chief share in the fighting. Major Slater of the regiment was amongst the wounded.

The 3rd SIKH INFANTRY‡ date from the same period, and have fought in the Umbeyla Campaign of 1863, and in the Hazara and Black Mountain Expeditions. They also

* The 1st Sikhs have "Punjab," "Ali Musjid," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is drab with red facings. The 1st Sikhs are amongst the regiments which have the bagpipe.

† The 2nd Sikh Infantry have "Punjab," "Ahmed Khel," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is drab with red facings.

‡ The 3rd Sikhs have "Cabul, 1879," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is drab with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

took part in the Jowaki Expedition, shortly after which came the Afghan War, in which they gained great credit. They were with the column which marched under Roberts to Kabul, and specially distinguished themselves in the defence of the Shutargardan position, in one attack on which Major Griffiths of the regiment was wounded. They shared in the obstinate fighting in the Chardeh Valley, in which Captain Cook was wounded, and Captain Farken a few days later, and were subsequently told off to occupy the Behmarn Heights, a duty which they shared with the 5th Goorkhas, "whose monkey faces and squat little figures formed a ludicrous contrast to those of their handsome stalwart neighbours." With Roberts they marched to Kandahar, in the battle of that name being in the 2nd brigade, and under Colonel Money distinguished themselves by charging a large body of the enemy and capturing three guns.

The 4th SIKHS * have, perhaps, a somewhat earlier record of well-won honours. Before they joined the force besieging Delhi, they had gained "Pegu," telling of their services in the Burmese war. There is no need to again dwell on the siege of Delhi, nor to tell how "Highlander, Pathan, and Sikh," vied with each other in stern and ardent courage. In the relief of Lucknow, the 4th fought side by side with H.M. 53rd and 93rd regiments, and "the constant fraternization of the Sikhs and Highlanders was a frequent subject of remark." An officer in the 93rd relates that the Sikhs petitioned to have for the future Highland costume.

It would not be fair in any mention of the gallant 4th Sikhs to omit a notable act of courage which gained for Captain Scott of the regiment the coveted Victoria Cross. At Quetta some coolies suddenly attacked two officers, who were superintending the works being carried out. A gallant private, Rachpal Singh, rushed forward and kept the murderers—three in number, and armed with the native tulwar—at bay. Captain Scott immediately followed, and seizing a bayonet from one of his men, dispatched two of the assailants, "closed with the third, falling with him to the ground." Some men of the 4th Sikhs coming up, made short work of the assassin.

The 1st PUNJAB INFANTRY† were raised by Captain Coke, whose name is still held in reverence by the regiment. They were speedily in active service in the Meeramaie, Ranezaie, and Kohat expeditions, and we find Sir Charles Napier eulogising in no measured terms both corps and commanders. "Both you and I saw," he said, writing to George

* The 4th Sikh infantry have "Pegu," "Delhi." The uniform is drab with emerald green facings.

† The 1st Punjab Infantry have "Delhi," and "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is dark green with red piping.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Lawrence, "how this brave corps fought under its excellent leader." Still more marked was the reference to the regiment in General Orders: "As Captain Coke and the 1st Punjab Regiment of Infantry sustained the brunt of this skirmishing, the Commander-in Chief thinks it due to this admirable young corps and its excellent leader, to say that their conduct called forth the applause of the whole column." The splendid service rendered by "Coke's Rifles" at the siege of Delhi is a matter of history, how they and the 91st suffered and fought together; how at the storming, when Coke was wounded, Nicholson volunteered to lead them; and how no British-born soldiers, with the murder and outrage of their countrymen and women steeling their hearts and nerving their arms, could have fought more fiercely and furiously than did they.* In 1860, they took an active part in the Muhsud Waziri expedition under General Chamberlain, and Sir Charles Keyes, at the head of a handful of men, checked, at a most critical moment, a furious charge made by the enemy. In the Umbeyla campaign, three years later, they gained additional honours, Major Keyes again distinguishing himself, and Lieutenant Fosberry gaining a Victoria Cross for the exceptional valour he displayed. In the defence of the Crag they suffered heavily, losing over a hundred, amongst them being Captain Davidson, who "died nobly at his post." The record of their triumphs includes the recent Afghan war, in which they acted up to the prestige they have made their own.

The 2nd PUNJAB INFANTRY† date from about the same time, and have many of their achievements in common with their brethren of the 1st and 4th. We will, therefore, confine ourselves to noting a few of the incidents connected with the distinctions they bear. At Delhi and Lucknow they earned lasting fame, and the valedictory order issued by Colonel Green epitomises, with all the eloquence of simplicity, the services they rendered.

"Lieut.-Colonel Green has had the good fortune to lead the regiment in the following engagements during the campaign :—

"The siege, assault, and capture of Delhi, including the battle of Najafgarh, 'Bulandshahr, Agra, relief of Lucknow garrison, Cawnpore, Khuda Ganj, siege and capture of Lucknow, besides several minor skirmishes'; and he deems it only fair to both officers and men to say that the only fault he has had to find with them has been an occasional too great eagerness to close with the enemy.

* In the Guides and 1st Punjab Infantry alone, six British officers were killed, and eleven wounded. Some were twice wounded; not one escaped without a mark.

† The 2nd Punjab Infantry have "Delhi," "Lucknow (Relief and Capture)," by Lieutenant Johnston, "Peiwar Kotal," "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is drab with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"On no occasion has any portion of the regiment met with the slightest check, however superior in number the enemy might be, and it is with the greatest pride Lieut.-Colonel Green assures all ranks that he ever heard the highest admiration of the regiment expressed on all sides while it was employed by the army in the field." In the storming of the Cashmere Gate the regiment suffered severely. One European officer was killed and two wounded, while of the natives, forty of all ranks were killed and twenty-three wounded. The march to Agra was a notable feat, and it is officially recorded that "in twenty-four hours they marched forty-four miles, and fought a general action *without food*." The order issued by Colonel Greathed on the following day refers in eulogistic terms to the services of the Punjab regiments:

"Lieutenant-Colonel Greathed requests that the officers commanding the Punjab Cavalry and Infantry will convey to their men the assurance of his appreciation of the qualities they displayed during the whole of the day, from first to last. He was witness to many acts of heroism, and he particularly adverts to the charge of cavalry under Lieutenant Watson, when three guns and five standards were captured, and to the brilliant manner in which the 4th Punjab Infantry under Lieutenant Paul drove the enemy out of the enclosures of the cantonment. The steadiness of the 2nd Punjab Infantry, under the most trying circumstances, reflects equal credit on Captain Green and the regiment he commands. The gallant manner in which the Punjab regiments behaved and their untiring exertions after a march, without a halt, of thirty miles, deserves the highest admiration." In the Muhsud Waziri campaign of 1860—before referred to—Lieutenant Aytown attached to the regiment was killed, and Havildar Jenab Shah particularly distinguished himself; the regiment shared in many of the intervening campaigns, and were fortunate enough to be in one of the most brilliant affairs in the Afghan war, the storming of the Peiwar Kotal. Their commander was Colonel Tyndall, and they were attached to the 2nd Infantry brigade of the Kurram column. In the attack they supported the 23rd Pioneers, and materially assisted in driving back the foe.

The 4th PUNJAB INFANTRY* have a very similar history. At Delhi they arrived with some of the later reinforcements, and in that and the relief and capture of Lucknow took an active part. At the assault on the Secunderabagh the "4th Punjab Infantry vied with the 93rd Highlanders" in that splendid charge in which Sikh, Pathan, and Highlander, with equal emulation, carried the defences and slew two thousand of the murderers.

* The 4th Punjab have "Delhi," "Lucknow (Relief and Capture)," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is drab with blue facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

They served in the Sikkim expedition in 1861, and in the operations against the Bazzotees in 1869, and in the Jowaki expedition. In the Afghan war they took part in the later portion of the campaign, notably in the Zaimusht expedition and the capture of Zawa.

The 5th PUNJAB INFANTRY,* after sharing in many of the smaller campaigns which occupied our Indian Army—notably the Umbeyla campaign, Lieutenant Beckett of the regiment being the "first man in" on the recapture of the Crag—found a plenteous harvest of fame in the Afghan war of 1878. Commanded by Major M'Queen, they formed part of the 1st Infantry brigade, and at the attack on the Peiwar Kotal rendered most valuable service, gaining the main ridge, and forming directly across the enemy's flank. "It is only due to this fine regiment," wrote one who was present, "to say that they showed the greatest dash and gallantry." They experienced considerable loss during the sojourn of the force under Roberts in the Shutargardan Pass, one little party acting as an escort being practically annihilated. Another party of the same regiment repulsed an attack made by a strong body of the enemy on a hill fort of the Sirkai Kotal. At Charasiah, Captain Young of the 5th was amongst the comparatively few officers killed. They again fought desperately, and again with loss, in the severe action of the 14th December, 1879, and took an active part in the final capture of Kabul, the regiment being selected to formally reinstate General Hills in his office as Military Governor.

The 6th PUNJAB INFANTRY† were formerly attached to the army of Bombay, and date their connection with that of Bengal from 1849. Though they bear no "distinctions" other than their motto, the history of the regiment will be found replete with interest. We are, however, here compelled to confine our notice to recalling their participation in the Umbeyla campaign, the Jowaki campaign of 1877, and the yet more recent Mahsood Wuzeeree expedition of 1881. In the first named they particularly distinguished themselves in the attack on the "Eagle's Nest." The enemy made a bold and well-executed charge, and Colonel Vaughan ordered the 6th to advance against them in skirmishing order. "This was done in gallant style, and the enemy were driven off with great loss." The casualties in the regiment that day amounted to fifty-four.

The 5th GOORKHA REGIMENT‡ was formerly known as the Hazara Goorkha Battalion, and like the other Goorkha Regiments consists of two battalions. Not to mention their

* The 5th Punjab Infantry have "Peiwar Kotal," "Charasiah," "Kabul, 1879," "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is drab with green facings.

† The 6th Punjab Infantry bear as a motto, *Ready, aye Ready.* The uniform is drab with red facings.

‡ The 5th Goorkhas have "Peiwar Kotal," "Charasiah," "Kabul, 1879," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark green with black facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

services on other fields, we find them distinguishing themselves in the Umbeyla campaign, a contemporary account recording that they "behaved with their usual gallantry." On another occasion, in conjunction with the 3rd Sikhs, they made "a most spirited attack on a breastwork from behind which the enemy were firing on our people and made them scud away." Lieutenant Oliphant of the regiment was amongst the wounded. The greater part of their laurels have been won in the Afghan campaign, in which they were commanded by Major Fitzhugh and attached to the 2nd brigade. At the Peiwar Kotal they earned particular credit. They were in the leading column and dashed at the breastwork which obstructed the progress of our troops. "A terrible hand-to-hand conflict took place . . Major Fitzhugh and Captain Cook were amongst the first over the obstacle," and the latter gained a Victoria Cross for rescuing Major Galbraith at the cost of a desperate fight. He himself, indeed, would have probably been killed but for the timely interposition of one of his men,* who shot his assailant dead. Not many days after, Captain Powell of the regiment received a mortal wound. The 5th Goorkhas fought at Charasiah, and, on the 13th of December following, in another sharp conflict, lost the gallant Major Cook, whose brilliant exploit has been above mentioned. They took part in the capture of Kabul and in the relief of Kandahar, and on the close of the campaign received—as did the 72nd and 92nd—distinguished service medals. "The very last troops," said Sir F. Roberts on this occasion, "that the Afghans will ever wish to meet in the field are Scottish Highlanders and Goorkhas." And with this testimony to their high worth and courage we will terminate our notice of the gallant 5th Goorkhas.

We are compelled to notice but very shortly the remaining corps under the Government of India. The Infantry of the DEOLEE IRREGULAR FORCE † consists of eight companies, as does that of the ERINPOORAH IRREGULAR FORCE.‡ The former was with the forces during the latter phase of the Afghan War. The MALWAH BHEEL CORPS and the MEYWAR BHEEL CORPS§ both date from 1840, the former having a few weeks the seniority. The Malwar corps rendered good service at Indore in 1859, and subsequently in the affairs with the Dacoits at Kurod and Ali Bypore in 1881.

The BHOPAUL BATTALION,‖ formerly known as the Bhopaul Levy, dates from 1859, when it was raised for general service.

* Another account attributes the timely shot to Major Galbraith.

† The Deolee Irregular Force has "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is dark green with scarlet facings.

‡ The uniform of the Erinpoorah Irregular Force is dark green with scarlet facings.

§ The Malwah and Meywar Bheel Corps have green uniforms (the latter "rifle green") and scarlet facings.

‖ The Bhopaul Battalion has "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is drab with chocolate facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The MHAIWANA BATTALION* was formerly the Ajmere and Mhaiwana Police Battalion, and as such has, on many occasions, rendered signal service. Both battalions took part in the Afghan war, and the latter has the additional distinction of "Central India."

The Infantry regiments of the HYDERABAD CONTINGENT† are six in number. The 1st and 2nd Regiments have the time-honoured distinctions of "Mahidpore" and "Nowah," but for the details of these actions we must refer the reader to the many and exhaustive chronicles of the time. Nor can we dwell upon the achievements of the 3rd, 4th, 5th, and 6th Regiments, which have been connected, as their distinctions show, with a period familiar to all who have studied the military history of our Empire in the east.

"Nowah," which is perhaps less well known, commemorates a brilliant affair which took place in 1819 under Major Pitman.

The ARMY OF MADRAS, though numerically less important than that of Bengal, has a somewhat older parentage. At one time, indeed, the "Topasses and Mistices" employed by the East Indian merchants at Fort St. George were the only native soldiers employed by the English—the puny embryo of that army now the envy and admiration of great States. According to a valuable paper by General Michael the early history of the Madras Army may be said to date from the capitulation of Madras. The town was founded about 1639, at the time when the struggles between Royal authority and parliamentary despotism were approaching a climax. The first Fort St. George was built in 1640. "Although the merchants employed armed retainers known as 'Topasses and Mistices' to the old writers, for the protection of their factories, it was not until about a century later, viz., in 1746, that any attempt was made to raise and organize troops. England was then at war with France, and in this year Madras was besieged and capitulated to the French."

"The number of the native troops at this period has not been precisely ascertained. In September, 1752, Government decided that 1,300 men were sufficient for the protection of their own possessions, viz., 600 for Fort St. George, 600 for Fort St. David, and 100 for Devicottah, and they ordered that the cost of all in excess of that number who had been enlisted since the commencement of the war should be charged to the

* The Mhaiwana Battalion has "Afghanistan, 1878-79," "Central India." The uniform is scarlet with facings of French grey.

† The 1st and 2nd Infantry Hyderabad Contingent have "Mahidpore" and "Nowah." The 3rd have "Nowah" and "Central India." The 4th have "Nagpoor." The 5th have "Central India."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

account of the Nawab. The force to be so charged could scarcely have been less than 3,000 men, inclusive of the garrisons required for the defence of Trichinopoly and Arcot. Natives of Madagascar, and of the West Coast of Africa, known by the general designation of Coffrees, were also employed at this time. A company of these men served with credit during the war in the Carnatic, from 1751 to 1754.

"At first these levies were composed entirely of such foreigners, and it was not till 1758, when most of the troops which had been sent on a sudden emergency to Bengal with Clive were still absent, and another collision with the French was imminent in South India, that the Madras Government began to raise regiments composed of inhabitants of the Carnatic. In this way the present Madras Sepoy force came into existence."

We gather from the history of the Madras army, by Colonel Wilson—to which we shall again refer—that "the Sepoys thus raised were formed into regular companies of one hundred men each, with a due proportion of native officers, havildars, naiques, &c., and that some sound rules were established for their pay and promotion."

"The first Native foot soldiers in the service of Government were," he says, "known as Peons. In February, 1747, there were about 3,000 of these men employed at Fort St. David, of whom about 900 were armed with muskets. Being wholly undisciplined, and officered exclusively by Natives, they were of little use for some time, but they gradually improved, owing to the care taken in the selection of their commandants, and to their being employed in the field with European troops. Major Lawrence reported highly of their conduct during the attack on Cuddalore by the French, on the night of the 17th June, 1748, and they behaved very well during the defence of Arcot in 1751. Orme mentions them as having been very forward in the action near Volcondah on the 29th May, 1752, between Clive and Monsieur D'Auteuil. The following is an extract from the description:—

"'Soon after, the Sepoys, who formed the van of the English column, appeared outmarching theEuropeans at a great rate; 600 of them had, in the enemy's service, stormed the breaches at the assault of Arcot, and having since that time been employed in the English service in several actions under the command of Captain Clive, entertained no small opinion of their own prowess when supported by a body of Europeans. These men no sooner came within cannon shot of the enemy than they ran precipitately to attack them without regarding any order. They received the fire of the enemy's cannon and musketry which killed many of them, but did not check the rest from rushing on to the push of bayonet.'"

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The Sepoys also behaved well at the battle before Trichinopoly during 1753, and at the repulse of the night attack on that place in November of that year.

Several instances of gallantry on the part of Native officers occurred at this time, of which the following are examples :—

Extracts from Government Consultations: "Fort St. George,

26th March, 1753.

"Captain Dalton at Trichinopoly writes, that the Rajah with almost his whole force, had attacked an advanced battery which awed them, and prevented their horses from patrolling near the Fort; but, notwithstanding their great superiority, they were repulsed by Subadar Shaik Ibrahim, who commanded the post, and behaved with great bravery and resolution; in this action the enemy lost forty men killed on the spot, and one hundred wounded, of whom twenty-five died shortly after."

"5th November, 1753.

"Meer Munsoor, a Subadar of Sepoys, having on many occasions behaved with remarkable bravery, and received many desperate wounds without having ever had any particular reward, it is agreed that he be presented with a gold chain and medal, with the Company's arms on one side, and this legend: 'The gift of the Honourable United East India Company'; and on the reverse, his own effigies with a drawn sword in his hand."

It will scarcely be considered out of place if we glance for a moment at the general position of affairs, in those early days from which dates the rise and eminence of the Madras Presidency. We have before referred to the inestimable service rendered by Dr. Boughton, which was none other than a grant of the land on which the city now stands. During the civil war—to quote a voluminous and well-informed writer—"the East India Company sank into comparative obscurity, but in 1652 Cromwell reconfirmed their privileges," and nine years later they obtained from Charles II. authority to make peace or war with any prince or people "not being Christians." In 1746 the French made their determined attempt to crush our rising power, and in September of that year M. de la Bourdounais appeared before the ill-fortified town of Madras with a strong armament. For two days did the garrison of a place whose "defence was never seriously contemplated" sustain a heavy bombardment; then they capitulated with the understanding that the town should be restored on payment of a sum to be agreed on. This agreement was broken, and the governor and many of the leading residents were taken prisoners to Pondicherry. Amongst these captives was Robert Clive. Fort St.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

David was next attacked, but reinforcements poured in so strongly that Dupleix "began to tremble for Pondicherry itself." Despite the efforts made, Madras remained in the hands of the French till November, 1748, when, according to the terms of peace between England and France, it reverted to the possession of the Company. It is not our purpose here to follow in detail the incidents which led to the establishment of the British power, though some of the best known of them—such as the capture of Arcot and Conjeveram, and the siege of Trichinopoly—are intimately connected with Madras.

"Amongst the earliest and most brilliant services of the Madras Sepoys," writes the author before quoted, "was the defence of Arcot"; the soldiers who followed Lawrence, Clive, and Eyre Coote, who fought at Wandiwash and Trincomalee, and who "put an end to French rivalry and the pretensions of Hyder Ali, belonged mainly to the Madras establishment, and formed the nucleus of the present army." Before proceeding to touch on the several regiments seriatim, we may be permitted to refer to the action of the Madras Army, taken as a whole, with regard to the question, formerly so dangerous a one, of foreign service. In the pages of Orme, Princep, and more particularly Wilson,* the various instances in which they have so served are found enumerated, but for our present purpose we cannot do better than quote the dictum of General Michael on the subject.

"The Madras Army," he says, "ever since its earliest formation, has shown a remarkable readiness to go on foreign service beyond sea whenever required. We first hear of Madras troops being moved out of their own Presidency in 1756, when a force consisting of about 900 Europeans and 1,000 natives sailed under Clive to regain Calcutta, which had been taken by the Nawab of Bengal. From that time to this the Madras Army has been constantly called on, and has never been found wanting in this important quality. It has served in China, Burmah, and Straits Settlements, and Borneo, Java, Egypt, Malta, Cyprus, &c., and is just as ready to go anywhere by sea as by land."

Another period during which the general attitude of the Madras Army has a particular interest is that of the Mutiny. Despite solicitations, inducements, and threats, the full force of which we can hardly estimate, the Madras Army passed unscathed through that fiery trial. Here and there were slight disturbances, but so few that, but for the terrible warning against misplaced confidence supplied by the Bengal Army, they would have been scarcely noticed. The authority we have before referred to has declared that in those dark days the fidelity of the Madras troops shone out conspicu-

* The work ranking deservedly as the standard authority on the subject.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

ously. No effort was spared by rebel emissaries to corrupt the Madras troops. "In spite of Salar Jung's friendly vigilance, a determined and sudden attack was made on the Residency by a body of Rohillas and others from the city, who had been told that the half battery of Madras Native Horse Artillery, composed almost entirely of Mussulmans, which was camped in the grounds, would not fire upon them; but they promptly turned out, opened fire with grape, and dispersed the assailants. Failing this the Residency would in all probability have been stormed, the treasury sacked, the Nizam would have been compromised, and who can say what the result would have been to the rest of the Deccan and to Southern India generally?"

The Cavalry of the army may be said to date from 1780, previously to which date the East India Company had hired, as occasion might require, bodies of horsemen from friendly princes.

"In 1780, however," says General Michael, "the Madras Government took over four regiments of cavalry belonging to the Nawab, and then proceeded to officer them and bring them into order. They were soon turned into useful and serviceable troops. By 1784 the Government saw the advisability of taking these regiments permanently into their service. One of these was subsequently disbanded, and the others are now the 1st and 2nd Madras Lancers and the 3rd Light Cavalry. The 4th regiment of Madras Cavalry dates from 1785.

"About twenty years later, when a general reorganization of the army took place, the Cavalry establishment was definitely fixed at four regiments with a strength of six troops to each, and numbering roughly five hundred of all ranks. The present strength is somewhat higher, and the great majority of the troopers are Mussulmans. The uniform of the Cavalry is a French grey cloth alkalic, cloth breeches, knee boots, cummerbund, blue puggree, and cloth cloak. In drill order they wear a khaki blouse, with cummerbund, cloth breeches, boots, and puggrees; on service ankle-boots and puttees are worn instead of boots."

The GOVERNOR'S BODY GUARD* consists of about a hundred and forty of all ranks. Their origin may be found in the informal escort which so long ago as 1746 was attached to the Governor, who, we read, "never went abroad without being attended by sixty armed peons, besides his British Guard." The origin of the Guard is thus explained by Colonel Wilson: "The Body Guard was originally composed of one sergeant, one corporal, and twelve European troopers, assigned to the Governor

* The Governor's Body Guard bear "Seetabuldee." The uniform is scarlet with blue facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

as an escort in October, 1778. The number was gradually increased, and in January, 1781, the Guard consisted of two troops, viz., a European troop under Lieutenant W. A. Younge, and a Native troop under Captain Sullivan. These troops served throughout the war of 1781—4. The European troop was struck off the strength of the Body Guard in September, 1784, and sent to Arcot, where it was broken up shortly afterwards. The Native troop was kept on, and served during the campaign of 1791—92." "Montgomery's Troop" was formed of supernumeraries. For a long period detachments from the Body Guard were sent to various places to form the nucleus of similar bodies or of cavalry which were being raised. The original constitution has also changed. In 1825 the Body Guard particularly distinguished themselves at Pagahur, the former capital of Burmah, rescuing the advance guard of the expedition which was threatened by a large force of the enemy.*

The REGULAR CAVALRY regiments are four in number, and the order in which they stand in the Army List calls for some short explanation. For the origin of the Cavalry as an arm in the service of the Company we cannot do better than quote from Colonel Wilson's exhaustive work.

"In November, 1758, Mahomed Yusuff Khan, Commandant of Sepoys, was empowered to enlist five hundred Native horse on the best terms he could, and to employ them in harassing the convoys of the French army, then advancing towards Fort St. George.

"Colonel Lawrence was directed at the same time to raise another body of two hundred horse, to serve with the army under his immediate command, and was authorized to offer a bounty of ten rupees per man, on enlistment.

"Mahomed Yusuff succeeded in raising a considerable body, principally in Tanjore, but they were of little use except as scouts and foragers, and they invariably behaved ill when required to meet the enemy."

No advance in organization or discipline seems to have been made, for in 1761 the report reads:—

"The Native horse in the Company's service at this time was still quite undisciplined. In May, 1759, the number was about nine hundred, but was reduced during that month to seven hundred, which was then fixed as the establishment. They seem to have been of no service during the war except as foragers, and in the way of laying waste the

* In March, 1801, the Body Guard, under Lieutenant Grant, had brilliantly acquitted themselves near Kytan, and in that memorable charge of the Bengal Cavalry, under Fitzgerald, at Seetabuldee, there were seventeen men of the Madras Body Guard.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

enemy's country. A considerable body was present at the battle of Wandiwash and behaved ill."

Intermittent efforts were made to secure a really effective force of Cavalry, and Major Fitzgerald suggested (*inter alia*)—

"That the troop of foreign hussars under Captain Aumont, composed of about sixty men who had deserted from Hyder during the action at Vaniembaddy in December, should also be increased to one hundred.

"That five hundred good horses should be obtained from the Nawaub, and be mounted by selected Sepoys, and the best recruits that could be got." The result was satisfactory.

"These arrangements," writes Colonel Wilson, "were carried out in March and April, 1768, and the Cavalry did good service throughout the war."

Eventually the Nawaub's Cavalry were taken into the regular service of the British. Scarcely had this been done when three of the corps mutinied, and subsequently, in accordance with the system which then obtained, the priority of the regiments was decided agreeably with that of the commanding officers. The Order from which the present establishment dates is as under :—

"Fort Saint George, 19th February, 1788.

"Conformably also to the commands of the Honourable Court it is hereby resolved and ordered that each regiment of Native cavalry shall be commanded by a Major Commandant, and that Major J. C. Tonyn shall command the regiment now Pater's, which is to be called the 1st; Major Thomas Burrowes the regiment now Stevenson's, which is to be called the 2nd; Major Dugald Campbell the regiment now Campbell's, which is to be called the 3rd; Major William Augustus Younge the regiment now Younge's, which is to be called the 4th; and the Captain Henry Darley shall be promoted to the rank of Major and command the regiment now Darley's, which is to be called the 5th."

Prior to this, Stevenson's regiment, which had been the 3rd, was known as the 1st, owing to its loyalty during the Mutiny in 1784. The present 1st Regiment was originally the 5th, and was not raised till 1787. From the subjoined note the actual dates of the formation will be seen.

"1st Regiment Madras Light Cavalry. Raised as the 5th in 1787.

"2nd Regiment Madras Light Cavalry. Raised some time before 1780. Served

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

throughout the war of 1780—84 under Captain Stevenson. Transferred to the Company's service in 1784.

"3rd Regiment Madras Light Cavalry. Formed in May, 1784, of the well-affected men of the 1st, 2nd, and 4th Regiments which mutinied at Arnee in April.

"4th (P.W.O.) Regiment Madras Light Cavalry. Raised as the 3rd in May, 1785.

"5th Regiment N. C. Raised as the 4th in June, 1785, reduced, 1796."

Within the space at our disposal we cannot follow, in any detail, the very numerous regulations which from time to time have been made in such items of internal economy as uniform; we must, therefore, content ourselves with stating shortly the gist of the most recent regulation, as a result of which the uniform is at present officially described as "one serge alkhalik, one pair cloth pantaloons, one khaki blouse, one turban with or without kola."

The 1st MADRAS LANCERS* date, as has been said, from 1787, the distinctive quality of Lancers being nearly a century later, viz., 1886. At Seringapatam they were under the more immediate command of Colonel Floyd, with whom they had before served, and were actively employed in guarding and expediting the much-needed supplies. In the preceding action at Bangalore their list of killed and wounded of all ranks amounted to sixteen. In the Burmese war of 1825 the 1st Cavalry were represented by the squadrons which advanced as far as Ava, and shared in the praises awarded for the successful issue of the enterprise. The familiar legend of "Afghanistan, 1879-80," recalls their connection with our latest Indian war, since which time, however, they have been employed in some of the minor operations of the army.

The 2nd MADRAS LANCERS† (Stevenson Pater) are, as we have seen, the senior in point of date. The names recall two of the earliest commanders, Captain Pater having been appointed to the command in 1787. The circumstances of the mutiny in 1784 have so intimate a connection with the 2nd Lancers that a short description may not be out of place. Immediately upon the absorption into the Company's army of the cavalry regiments hitherto in the service of the Nawaub, these mutinied, alleging "starvation" amongst their other grievances. General Lang, on whom devolved the duty of suppressing the outbreak, thus describes the position:—

"As they were drawn up on the other side of the fort I was obliged to take a circuit round the glacis, where, to my great satisfaction, I found Captain Stevenson's regiment

* The 1st Madras Lancers have "Seringapatam," "Ava," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is French grey with pale buff facings and silver lace.

† The 2nd Madras Lancers bear "Seringapatam." The uniform is French grey with buff facings and silver lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

drawn up in the covered way to defend the officers from any attempt of the other regiments to carry them off. Upon seeing the detachment advance, and that they could not escape, the rest of them submitted."

The next day the General returned to Arcot, taking the cavalry with him, there to await the orders of Government, which were issued on the 28th May, and from which the following are extracts :—

"The whole corps of cavalry engaged in the late mutiny; yet as there seems to have been an exception with respect to the behaviour of the 3rd Regiment (Captain Stevenson's) which does not appear to have ever heartily joined in the mutiny; it is agreed only to reduce the 1st, 2nd, and 4th Regiments, by which means Captain Stevenson's regiment, which will be the only remaining one, will become the 1st Regiment of Native Cavalry. Resolved likewise that Major Campbell be authorized to select from the three reduced regiments a new regiment for his own command, which is to be called the 2nd Regiment Native Cavalry."

The 2nd fought with credit at Seringapatam, having a casualty list of some twenty-six; at Bangalore; and, in 1817, when cavalry regiments were being raised in the Bombay Presidency, they supplied a contingent of men to assist in drilling the newly-formed corps. The same year Cornet Hunter, of the 1st, and Cornet Morrison, of the 2nd, greatly distinguished themselves by the defence of Urille. The 2nd Lancers have not been engaged in any of the more important and well-known wars since then, but enough has been said to establish their claim to be one of the most important and interesting regiments in the service.

The 3rd Light Cavalry (Murray)* date from 1784, when they were raised by Major Campbell out of the disbanded 1st, 2nd, and 4th Regiments. Subsequently for a short time they were known as the 1st Native Cavalry, and were allotted their present position by the before quoted Order of February, 1788. When war broke out against Tippoo in May, 1790, the 3rd were in Colonel Floyd's Cavalry and had some sharp fighting in Coimbatore, at Cheyur, and Suttiamungalum. Colonel Floyd "spoke very highly of the conduct of the troops, especially of that of the cavalry." They took part in the gallant but ill-judged cavalry charge at Bangalore, where they had five killed and three wounded. They also fought in the battle before Seringapatam and throughout the campaign of 1792, commanded by Major Stevenson. In the Pindaree war they took

* The 3rd Light Cavalry have "Seringapatam," and "Mahidpore." The uniform is French grey with pale buff facings and silver lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

part in the capture of Talyne, and in the numerous operations covered by the distinction "Mahidpore." Since that time they have served in various places, notably in Burmah.

The 4th LIGHT CAVALRY* (Prince of Wales's Own) were raised in 1785, and for long were known as Younge's Horse. They are the only one of the four cavalry regiments which have "Assaye" in addition to the other familiar distinctions of Seringapatam and Mahidpore, their companions in arms (of the Native Cavalry) on that occasion being the 5th and 7th, both of which have disappeared. They distinguished themselves at Mankaisir in January, 1804. In the Malwa difficulties of 1810, the 4th were in the 2nd Cavalry brigade. The actions at Seringapatam and Mahidpore have been above referred to, and we cannot better close this brief notice of the 4th Madras Light Cavalry than by recording the fact that, in 1876, they were granted the particular honour of being styled "the Prince of Wales's Own," of having as their hon. colonel the Heir Apparent of the Empire, and of bearing on their standards and accoutrements the well-known "Three Ostrich Plumes" of the Prince of Wales.†

Before giving an account of the "Sappers and Miners," a few remarks on the MADRAS ARTILLERY of other days may not be out of place. The actual establishment of the Native Artillery may be said to date from 1784, when a battalion of Native Artillery was ordered to be formed. In 1760, however, Native officers were appointed to the Lascars attached to the Artillery. In 1785 the Native battalions were reduced, and fourteen years passed till another Native company was raised, only to meet with the same fate after three years' existence. In 1805 a troop of Native Horse Artillery was raised, and at the same time two companies of Foot Artillery, or "Golandauze." The uniform of the former was "blue with scarlet collar and cuffs, trimmings yellow, and of the fashion of clothing of Cavalry regiments"; that of the Golandauze "to be of the colours and fashion of clothing of Artillery." The Native Horse Artillery was disbanded in 1810, but eight years later two troops were raised, chiefly from the Body Guard and Cavalry, while at the same time the strength of the Foot Artillery was increased to ten battalions. On the occasion of the transfer of the army to the Crown—or consequent

* The 4th Light Cavalry have the Prince of Wales's Plume, and "Seringapatam," "Assaye," and "Mahidpore." The uniform is French grey with scarlet facings and silver lace. The Hon. Colonel of the regiment is H.R.H. the Prince of Wales.

† It will be obvious that any detailed account of the doings of the Cavalry regiments from the time of their formation would require a good-sized volume. We may, perhaps, mention here that the characteristic French grey of the uniform was adopted in 1818. Previously to that date it had been for at least eighteen years red, and for four, blue. In 1814 the facings were settled at "pale yellow" for the 1st Regiment, orange for the 2nd, buff for the 3rd, and deep yellow for the 4th, the four now disbanded regiments having similar facings in corresponding order.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

thereon—the Native Artillery disappeared entirely, and thus, writes Colonel Wilson, was the country deprived of—"an excellent and efficient body of Artillery, maintained at comparatively small cost, and which had rendered good and faithful service from the time of the first war in Burma, up to that of the Mutiny in Bengal, during which it distinguished itself on every opportunity which occurred. Their gallantry during the actions at Cawnpore on the 26th, 27th, and 28th November, 1857, and subsequently in the operations under Lord Clyde which resulted in the final defeat of the mutineers near Cawnpore on the 8th December of the same year, elicited the thanks and commendations both of the officer commanding the brigade, and of Major-General Dupuis, commanding the Royal Artillery. The European troops and batteries during this service were frequently driven by Madras Natives, who uniformly behaved in the most gallant manner."

For instance, at Lucknow in December, 1857, where the guns of the E. troop were recorded by Lord Clyde to have been fought with great ability, Major (now Major-General) Chamier wrote of them thus:—

"I served subsequently during the campaign with Major Cotter's Battery, the drivers of which were Madras Natives. We were engaged in several actions under General Sir T. H. Franks on our march from Benares to Lucknow; also during the siege of Lucknow under Lord Clyde; and afterwards in the pursuit of Koor Sing, and in several engagements under Sir Edward Lugardat, and in the vicinity of Azimghur and the Jugdespore jungles. The conduct of the battery drivers was soldier-like and brave, and I never witnessed a single instance to the contrary. They drove fearlessly and well, and their conduct was favourably noticed in my presence by Colonel Maberly, R.A., who commanded the Artillery with General Franks' force.

"Attached to each battery of Madras Artillery in Bengal there was a body of Gun Lascars. These men being drilled and armed, acted as the Sappers of the battery, and saved the gunners from much severe duty and exposure, besides which they frequently rendered valuable assistance in action. Several of them obtained the 'Order of Merit' for gallantry in working the guns when the European gunners were disabled by wounds, or exhausted by fatigue. Several instances of individual gallantry on the part of these men were also recorded."*

* It would occupy more than a page simply to enumerate the names of the operations in which this most excellent and efficient body had assisted. When the amalgamation took place their roll of honours commenced with the capture of Calcutta in 1756, and closed with the conquest of Pegu in 1852—exclusive of their services during the Mutiny.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE CORPS OF MADRAS SAPPERS AND MINERS * (The Queen's Own) consist of eight companies, of an average strength of about a hundred and seventy of all ranks. They represent two separate bodies—the Engineers and the Pioneers. The former may be said to date from 1758, during the siege of Fort St. George, and at the same time two new companies of Native Pioneers were formed. The latter, however, seem to have been temporary, for in 1780 two new companies of Native Pioneers were formed. These increased in strength, and in 1793 were consolidated into a corps. Ten years later they had become sixteen companies and were formed into two battalions, and in 1831 the 1st battalion was "converted into a corps of Sappers and Miners, and transferred to the command of officers of the Engineers, continuing to bear on its colours and appointments the honorary distinctions won as 'Pioneers' from the capture of Seringapatam in 1799 to the war in Ava, 1824-26. The establishment was to consist of eight companies of eighty-six non-commissioned, rank and file, each. The 2nd Battalion Pioneers was made over in a similar manner on the 1st February, 1884." In December, 1885, the establishment was fixed at its present strength. In 1876 the corps received the distinction of being styled "The Queen's Own," H.R.H. the Prince of Wales being at the same time appointed the Hon. Colonel. We cannot pretend within the space at our disposal to follow this distinguished corps through the various and many battle-fields on which it has made itself famous, but we may perhaps quote, as descriptive of the views held by those best qualified to pass an opinion, the following remarks made by Lord Chelmsford at a recent meeting at the Royal United Service Institution :—

"The Madras Sappers and Miners under General, then Colonel, Prendergast, not only showed themselves in that campaign (the Abyssinian) most efficient in their special duties, but by a curious concatenation of circumstances, which it is unnecessary here to explain, they found themselves, on a memorable Good Friday when we came before Magdala, in the forefront of the fight, when the Abyssinians came down in overpowering numbers to attack us. The Sappers had to bear the brunt of the attack with the Muzbee Sikhs alongside of them, and under very trying circumstances indeed. They showed themselves to be thoroughly good and reliable fighting men."

The Sappers and Miners still wear the uniform of European pattern, to which they

* The corps of Madras Sappers and Miners have the Royal Cypher within the Garter and the names of the following battles, in which either the whole corps or individual companies have been engaged: "Seringapatam," "Egypt" (with the Sphinx), "Assaye," "Bourbon," "Java," "Nagpore," "Mahidpore," "Ava," "China" (with the Dragon), "Meeanee," "Hyderabad, 1843," "Pegu," "Persia," "Lucknow," "Central India," "Taku Forts," "Pekin," "Abyssinia," "Perak," "Afghanistan, 1878-80," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir," "Suakin, 1885," "Tofrek."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

are much attached, viz.:—"In review order a scarlet tunic of the Royal Engineer pattern and facings, and black trousers with broad red stripe. In field order a blue serge tunic and trousers with stripe; and in working order blue serge tunic with short black drawers or black linen trousers. In whatever dress, they wear their peculiar black puggree." An interesting glimpse of the personality, if one may so use the term, of the corps is given by General Michael in his valuable paper. "In the Sappers and Miners, especially, English is very much spoken by officers and men; in fact, they pride themselves on being very English indeed. When the Indian contingent came to London after the early part of the Egyptian campaign, I took the Madras Sapper subadar and naique to see some of the sights of London, among others, to Madame Tussaud's, where we saw an effigy of Arabi Pacha. I had been explaining things to them and conversing with them in Tamil, when to the astonishment and amusement of the bystanders, the little naique stepped forward, shook his fist in Arabi's face, and broke out in excellent English, with: 'Ah, you rascal! what a lot of trouble you have given.' The average Madras Sapper is a cheery, handy fellow, who soon gets on the best of terms with the European soldier with whom he chances to be thrown. He will smoke a short pipe and take a drink with him, and he delights in aiding him in any way in camp and interpreting for him. In no regiment in the service is there more real *esprit de corps* than in the Queen's Own Sappers and Miners."

The MADRAS INFANTRY has in some respects a unique history. The oldest regiments date from a period antecedent to those of the old Bengal army; the achievements they boast recall the foundation of the empire and the deeds of men who, in the pageantry of the ages, stand forth as demi-gods. We have before referred to the initial formation of the army, how, when the master spirit Clive was absent in Bengal, the defenceless state of the elder Presidency became terribly apparent, and how in the face of the advancing French with their disciplined legions the first nucleus of the Madras Infantry was formed. "The services of the Madras Sepoy," writes Wilson, "commence in 1746. In that year he took part in the defence of Fort St. David against the French." The accounts of the defence have a quaint old-world style about them, which the more diffuse narratives of later wars quite lack. The officer in command was Major Potier, and his force consisted of about three hundred effective Europeans, two hundred and fifty seamen from the frigates *Triton* and *Bridgewater*, and sixteen hundred Native troops—with whom, however, was a certain number of "topasses." Major Potier, according to Orme, was too prodigal of his resources; his garrison fired indiscriminately at "everything

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

they heard, saw, or suspected," thus disabling many of their own guns. The enemy poured in a devastating fire from some thirty-four mortars, and the hoped-for assistance not coming, "Major Potier replaced the Union Jack by a white flag of truce." That evening the French marched in, and the garrison surrendered as prisoners of war, while at about the same time the garrison of Devi Cottah—which included some six hundred Sepoys—evacuated their unimportant post. Meanwhile Lawrence had at Madras some ten thousand Sepoys when Lally commenced his desperate siege.

"The Madras Government found themselves in a position of extreme danger. They could not meet the enemy in the field. Fort St. David was taken, and the French advanced to besiege Madras. Under this pressure Government seem to have opened their eyes to the possible advantage of giving their Sepoys a better discipline. In August, 1758, they were formed into regular companies of one hundred men each, with a due proportion of Native officers, havildars, naiques, &c., and some sound rules were established for their pay and promotion. When this had been settled, it was proposed to form the companies into battalions, but the advance of the French made it necessary to postpone this measure. As soon as the siege was raised, the question of forming the Sepoy companies into battalions was again taken into consideration. After full discussion, five battalions were formed (September, 1759), of which the 2nd was disbanded in 1785; the other four are now the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th Regiments of Madras Native Infantry." Previously to this, we learn from the same authority, "the first Sepoy levies had no discipline, nor any idea that discipline was required. They were armed with matchlocks, bows and arrows, spears, swords, bucklers, daggers, or any other weapons they could get. They consisted of bodies of various strength, each under the command of its own chief, who received from Government the pay of the whole body, and distributed it to the men, or was supposed to do so. Sometimes these chiefs were the owners of the arms carried by the men, and received from each man a rupee a month for the use of the weapons. This system, lax as it was, rested on a sound basis. The pay was regularly issued to the chiefs, and was so good as to make dismissal from the service a punishment."

The following extract gives a concise epitome of the growth of the force. "Other battalions were raised within the next six or seven years, and in 1765 the establishment stood at a total of ten regiments. Six more were raised in 1767, and the number was thus increased to sixteen. Five thousand of these troops, disciplined, trained, and led by English officers, and brigaded with about a thousand Europeans, met and defeated the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

combined forces of the Nizam and Hyder Ali—more than 70,000 strong—at Trinomalee in 1767. They also took part in the memorable battle of Wandiwash in 1760, when Coote's force of 1,500 Europeans and 3,500 natives defeated Lally's consisting of 2,500 French Europeans and 9,000 natives. The soldiers who followed Lawrence, Clive, and Eyre Coote, and who put an end to French rivalry and the pretensions of Hyder Ali, belonged mainly to the Madras establishment, and formed the nucleus of the present army. The Madras Native Infantry was from time to time augmented till there were fifty-two regiments. Subsequent reductions effected since the Mutiny of 1857 have, however, brought the number down to thirty-two, at which strength the Native Infantry now stands."

That battle of Wandiwash, the same place where, a few years later, regiments of the Madras army gained—as we shall see—lasting honours, deserves some reference. Eighteen hundred Sepoys were in the first line of attack, the opposing forces were fairly matched, the stake at issue was immense.

"Lally began the battle in person. While the British were advancing in the order we have given, before they had halted or were even within cannon-shot, the fiery Irishman, at the head of his European horse, by sweeping round the plain made a dash at Coote's third line, but the moment his intentions were perceived, the two companies of Sepoys, posted apart with the two field-guns, were ordered to form *en potence*, that is, at an acute angle from the line, to enfilade the approaching cavalry. At the same time the black horse went threes about to the rear, as if to face the enemy, but purposely threw themselves into confusion, that they might have a pretext for flight, and thus left the eighty Europeans about to receive the coming charge, before which they must inevitably have given way. The two Sepoy companies with the two guns, which were well handled by Captain Barker, poured in such a flanking fire that the French cavalry fled, and left Lally no choice but to follow them with a heart swollen by rage. By this time we had halted, the cannonade had opened on both sides, and the superiority was decidedly with the guns of Coote, while Lally, on returning, found his infantry full of bitter impatience under the loss they were sustaining by not being brought to closer quarters. This he fully seconded by his own hot impetuosity, for he ordered the whole line to advance, and then the roar of musketry and clouds of smoke became general from flank to flank."

Already the difference between the Sepoys in the English employment and those in that of the French began to be apparent: Lally's Sepoys, "posted in rear of the covering ridge, when ordered to advance, flatly refused to obey, and, convinced now that further

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

fighting was useless, their commander abandoned his camp to the British, who instantly entered it" (*Grant*).* Colonel Wilson, it may be remarked, considers the actions fought by Colonel Smith at Changamah and Trinomalee as the practical inauguration of the history of the Madras army. "In these two actions," he says, "the Madras Native army may be said to have received its *baptême de feu*, for in those actions it was called on for the first time not only to fight but to manœuvre, and this against an enemy who could himself manœuvre extremely well. . . . . Between 1746 and 1767 the Madras Sepoys had seen a great deal of service, and had in general done their work well. On some occasions they had shown courage and constancy of a very high order. But the fighting in which they took part was of a plain, straightforward character, and on a small scale. . . . . At Changamah and Trinomalee it so happened that the close fighting was done entirely by the Sepoys. . . . . The movements were various and complicated, and the Sepoys showed not only courage but coolness and skill." The share of the Native battalions in the battles of Plassey and Wandiwash Colonel Wilson considers unimportant.

The 1st Madras Native Infantry and Pioneers date from 1758†, and were formerly the 1st battalion of the 1st Regiment. The first commander would seem to have been Lieutenant Tod, who commanded the two hastily-raised corps during the siege of St. George, in which "they did good service both as Pioneers and in other ways, and had a fair proportion of casualties, viz., 105 killed and 217 wounded." Shortly after this the uniform of the regiment was fixed at red with blue facings. Probably some of the regiment took took part in the Manilla expedition of 1762, and the following year were attached to Colonel Monson's force for the reduction of Madura. We have referred to the fighting at Changamah and Trinomalee, and in 1768 the regiment shared in the operations under Colonel Smith in Mysore, and on more than one occasion received special praise. In 1773 they were again with General Smith in his Tanjore expedition; in 1778 took part in the capture of Pondicherry; and in 1780 shared in the discomfiture of Colonel Baillie's forces at Perambacam, and in the surrender of Arcot. In the campaign of 1792 they were in the 5th Brigade, under Colonel Baird, and in the attack on Seringapatam were in the left division. In this they greatly distinguished themselves, Captain Brown, Lieutenant Nicholl, and nine others being wounded. They assisted

* Colonel Wilson, whose weight of authority is undoubted, assigns a different position to the Native troops.

† The 1st Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Seetabuldee," "Nagpore," "Ava," "Pegu," "Central India," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

FIRST MADRAS PIONEERS.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

at the siege of Pondicherry, and in 1795, under the command of Captain Ferguson, joined Stuart's force for the operations in Ceylon, during which they were actively engaged in the sieges of Trincomalee, Batticaloa, Jaffnapatam, and other places. A detail of the regiment greatly distinguished itself at Manapar under Captain Oliphant of the 5th. In the final war with Tippoo in 1799, the 1st Madras were in the right wing, and took part in the action near Mallavelly in March of that year. In the siege of Seringapatam the 1st Madras was one of the two Native battalions * which supported H.M. 12th Regiment in the attack on the outposts, both Native battalions being commanded by officers of the 1st Madras. Their losses during the siege were small, only four being killed and fourteen wounded. We must pass over the years intervening between Seringapatam and Seetabuldee, during which (1806) occurred the mutiny at Vellore, in which the regiment was largely implicated, and were, as a consequence, disbanded, or, rather, perhaps, transformed into the 1st battalion 24th Regiment. At Seetabuldee (1817), the 1st battalion of the 24th distinguished themselves in a most brilliant manner, holding important positions against most determined and repeated attacks, and when sheer force of numbers had driven them back, heading the desperate charge which recovered the post. It will be remembered that it was at this battle that the Bengal Cavalry and a few of the Madras Body Guard under Captain Fitzgerald made their memorable charge. Very heavy was the loss sustained by the regiment this day, no fewer than a hundred and sixty of all ranks being either killed or wounded. The senior Native officer of the regiment petitioned the Resident to procure the restoration of the number and facings of the old 1st Regiment, and in a highly complimentary General Order this was done. They distinguished themselves at Nagpore, and took part in the important war with the King of Ava, on the termination of which they remained with the 32nd and 36th Regiments as a brigade of occupation of Tenasserim. In 1824, it should be mentioned, a considerable reorganization of the Native Army took place, the result of which was that the 1st Regiment became the 1st and 17th Regiments. During the Mutiny the 1st were employed in Central India, as commemorated on their colours, and they also took part in the Afghan War of 1878-80. In 1883 they received the distinctive appellation of "Pioneers."

The 2nd MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY† date from 1759, and when raised were known

* The other was the 2nd battalion 3rd Regiment.

† The 2nd Madras Native Infantry have "Assaye," "Nagpore," "China," "*The Dragon.*" Their uniform is red with green facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

as the 3rd Battalion. They took part in the reduction of Madura in 1762—the regimental commanders being Captains Ross, Lang, and Croley—and fought at Trinomally under Captain Brown. In 1768 they were with the division operating in Mysore under Colonel Smith, and in 1772 fought under Major Braithwaite against the Polygars of Madura, being then known as the 2nd Carnatic Battalion. They were with the column under Eyre Coote which, in 1781, was sent against Chingleput, Wandewash, and Permacoil, and received the thanks of Government for their share in the storming of Caraugooly. At Porto Novo they were in the second line, on which fell the task of maintaining the heights and protecting the rear. In the early part of the war with Tippoo in 1790 they were in the 2nd Native Brigade under Colonel Trent, and took part in the capture of Dindigul, shortly afterwards having the misfortune of losing a hundred and seventy of their strength by the unavoidable capitulation of Darapooram. Under Major Langley they fought at Seringapatam, and were amongst the handful of men whom Mackenzie describes as withstanding "the furious and desperate onset of many thousands for some time." They were at Pondicherry, and, in 1796, at Dindigul. They did not arrive at Seringapatam in time for its capture in 1799, having been engaged under Colonel Brown in reducing some outlying forts. When Wellesley advanced into the Mahratta country (1803) the 2nd Madras were in the 1st Infantry Brigade, and took part in the storming of Ahmednuggur and in the famous battle of Assaye, where "almost every man of the half company 1st Battalion 2nd Regiment serving with the pickets was either killed or wounded" (*Wilson*). This detail, however, seems to have been the only part of the regiment actually engaged, the remainder being in guard of the baggage. They fought at Quilon in 1809, and their next important warlike experience was gained in Nagpore in 1817. Here they were in the 2nd Infantry Brigade of the Hyderabad division, and gained great credit for their conduct at the battle of Nagpore, the flank companies sharing in the forced march which undoubtedly saved the Residency. Their latest distinction—by no means synonymous with their latest achievements—was gained in China, in commemoration of which they bear the Dragon.

The 3rd Madras (or Palmacottah) Light Infantry* also date from 1759, when they were raised as the 4th Battalion. Their first achievement was the conquest of Vellore in 1761, after which they shared in the Madura Expedition. They joined

* The 3rd Madras Light Infantry have "*Now or Never*," "Mahidpore," "Ava." Their uniform is red, with green facings, and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Colonel Smith after the battle of Changamah, and a detachment very particularly distinguished themselves in the defence of Amboor. The regiment subsequently shared in the campaign under Colonel Wood in 1768. They were amongst the troops in garrison at Erode, when culpable mismanagement compelled its surrender, after which their next important service was the siege of Tanjore in 1773. They were present, or rather the grenadier companies were present, at Pondicherry in 1778, and the same companies remained there in garrison, experiencing such hardships that one of them mutinied. In the operations in 1784 against the Polygars, the 3rd were in the 3rd Brigade under Colonel Kelly, and in 1793 took part in the siege of Pondicherry.

In 1796, after the reorganization of the army had taken place, two battalions of the regiment were attached to Major Haliburton's force to suppress the disturbances near Diudigul. At the time of the capture of Seringapatam, they were with Colonel Brown, and engaged in the reduction of various small fortresses. In 1799 they were sent under Major Bannerman against the southern Polygars, and were concerned in the attempt on Panjalamcoorchy, where a portion of the regiment was dismissed. In February, 1801, however, they served with considerable distinction in the same neighbourhood under Major Shepherd in a sharp fight, in which they had nine killed and eighty-four wounded. Lieutenant Greaves of the regiment was thanked by Government for his able defence of Comery, after which the regiment remained for a time in Tinnevelly. When Wellesley marched against the Mahrattas in 1803, the 3rd were in the 2nd Infantry Brigade, and at the storm of Ahmednuggur were in the right column (led by Captain Vesey of the regiment), and greatly distinguished themselves, their list of casualties being second only to that of H.M. 78th. The next year they took part in the operations in Candeish, and were conspicuous at the capture of Chandore, adding to their reputation in the proceedings, four years later, in Travancore, especially by their share in the capture of a formidable redoubt, carried out under Major Welsh of the regiment. On the occasion of the mutiny of the English officers the 3rd were amongst the troops sent to invest Seringapatam, held by the ringleaders, though the officers of the regiment were disaffected. In 1812 the regiment was made one of the four regiments of Light Infantry, and five years later earned their first distinction at Mahidpore. They were in the Light Infantry brigades of the 1st and 3rd Division, and at the decisive battle were placed in the front under Major Bowen, and were "exposed to the fire of the enemy for nearly an hour before the action began." In commemoration of this battle in which they "behaved with great bravery and resolution, charging up to the muzzles of the guns without hesi-

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

tation," they bear the motto *Now or Never* in addition to the word "Mahidpore." In 1818 and 1819 the regiment again earned official praise for their conduct at Nagpore, and two years later took part in the Burmese War, in which, under Colonel Conry, Major Walker, Major Williamson, Captain Sherman, and other officers, they maintained to the full their high reputation. At Sittang they suffered heavy loss by a species of surprise, two officers and nine men being killed, and two officers and twenty-two men being wounded. At the subsequent successful storm they again suffered loss, while elsewhere a detachment of the regiment under Ensign Clerk was holding the enemy at bay. No distinction could be better earned than is "Ava" on the colours of the 3rd Light Infantry.

The 4th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY* also date from 1759, and were numbered the 5th Battalion. They fought at Vellore, in the operations against Madura, at Changamah and Trinomally, being amongst the regiments singled out for special praise in connection with the last-named action. Shortly afterwards they had the honour of being charged by the enemy's cavalry commanded by Hyder in person, and their firmness elicited the approval of the commanding officer. They fought under Smith and Campbell in 1768, at Trichinopoly in 1771, and at Tanjore two years later. The Grenadier companies were with the force which, in 1778, captured Pondicherry; the following year, under Captain Muirhead, they joined the expedition against Mahé; later on they fought at Chillumbram, at Porto Novo, and numerous other places. Their first distinction is "Assaye," which has been before described, and where they had twenty-one killed and ninety wounded, and their next important affair was at Quilon in 1809, where under Captain Newall they rendered admirable service in the defence of the camp when attacked by a very superior force of the enemy. The latter portion of the war in Afghanistan completes a record of hard work and good service.

The 5th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY† (Shaik Kudawund) were originally the 6th Battalion, and were raised in 1759. Under Captain Cosby they fought well at Trinomally, and were amongst the regiments mentioned as having "distinguished themselves most conspicuously." They also shared in many of the operations we have before described in the case of others of the oldest regiments, and we will confine ourselves, therefore, to recording their action in Burmah which obtained the distinction they bear, and the various incidents of which are too familiar to need repeating here.

* The 4th Madras Native Infantry have "Assaye," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red with yellow facings and gold lace.

† The 5th Madras Native Infantry have "Pegu." Their uniform is red with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 6th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY* (Mackenzie) were raised in 1761 as the 7th Battalion, and were till comparatively recently known as the 1st Battalion of the 6th Regiment. They very early gained considerable reputation as a most serviceable corps, being "highly praised" by Colonel Campbell for their conduct at Shattoor in May, 1767. Later on in the same year we find them under the same regimental officer—Captain Cooper—serving under Wood in the Carnatic, after which they were engaged at Tanjore. In 1770, they became the 6th Carnatic Battalion, and ten years later the Grenadier companies were attached to the "Trichinopoly detachment" of Coote's army, which rendered such good service during the war with Hyder. In the night attack on Seringapatam they were in the column under Sir David Baird, but were fortunate enough to incur but slight loss. They were at Pondicherry, and in 1799, fought against Tippoo, distinguishing themselves under Major Cuppage of the regiment in the capture of Meldroog and the Hill forts. We must pass on to November, 1803, when the regiment particularly distinguished themselves at Rackisbaum and Asseerghur. At the former action, we learn from Colonel Wilson—

"An attempt was made to take possession of the bridge of boats at Rackisbaum on the Godavery which was in charge of a party of the 1st Battalion, 6th Regiment, under Jemadar Shaik Modeen of that corps. This officer not only repulsed the enemy, but followed them up and captured part of their equipments. This affair was mentioned in General Orders of the 28th November, and the Jemadar was promoted. General Wellesley, in reporting the circumstance to the Commander-in-Chief, observed, 'This man has behaved remarkably well in other instances besides that stated in my letter to the Adjutant-General. If the Soubah had had a dozen such men in his service, the Rajah of Berar would have lost his baggage in his flight from me.'"

We must now pass on to mention "Bourbon," the second distinction the 6th bear on their colours. In 1810, a force under Colonel Keating was ordered to effect the reduction of Bourbon, and two Native regiments, the 6th and the 12th, were directed to join. The 6th were in the 1st Brigade under Colonel Fraser, and in the attack were engaged in defending the rear, losing only one killed and seven wounded, Captain Moodie of the regiment receiving the thanks of the commander. Under Major Oliver they again distinguished themselves at Kimedy in the Pindaree country, receiving the special thanks of the Government for the exemplary discipline and gallantry they displayed. The familiar

* The 6th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Bourbon," "China," *The Dragon.* Their uniform is red with white facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"Dragon" and "China" complete the list of their distinctions, though many smaller campaigns have had their success promoted and their hardships shared by the 6th Madras Native Infantry.

The 7th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY* (Cooke), formerly the 8th Battalion, and more recently the 1st Battalion of the 7th Regiment, date from 1761, when they were raised at Trichinopoli. Their earlier history runs in much the same grooves as that of the other regiments we have described, save that they were not fortunate enough to take part in any of the better known and historical battles or sieges. In the first Burmese War they were in the 4th Brigade under Colonel Miles, and were attached to Sir Archibald Campbell's division. Shortly after Kemmandine, they were engaged in an "affair" with the enemy for which they gained great praise in despatches. They took part in the reduction of Tenasserim, Colonel McDowall being the regimental commander, after which their principal service during the campaign was garrison duty at Mergui and Tavoy. None the less can they justly claim to have a special share in the praise awarded to the Native troops by the Governor-General: "The Madras Sepoy regiments destined for the expedition to Ava obeyed with admirable alacrity and zeal . . . . This devotion to their Government reflects the highest character on the coast army." † "The patient endurance by the Native regiments of the vicissitudes of so novel a service, waiving the prejudices of caste and the customs by which they had been influenced for ages, are beyond the measured terms of praise." ‡

The 8th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY,§ formerly the 9th Battalion, also date from 1761, when they were raised in the neighbourhood of Madras. In 1763 they accompanied Monson's expedition against Madura, served in the subsequent proceedings against the Polygars, and, under Captain Nixon, formed part of Orton's garrison at Erode. It might be mentioned that Captain Nixon enjoyed the perilous honour of commanding the detachment of 270 men which, when engaged on escort duty, "was suddenly confronted by Hyder with his whole army, and almost entirely destroyed after a gallant resistance." In 1773 they took part in the second siege of Tanjore, and in 1781, in the battles at Polliloor and Veeracandaloor, in the latter suffering some loss, their commander, Captain

* The 7th Madras Native Infantry have "Ava." The uniform is red, with yellow facings, and gold lace.

† General Order of Governor-General, 11th April, 1826. The "Coast Army" was frequently used as descriptive of the Madras Force.

‡ Letter from General Willoughby Cotton.

§ The 8th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Assaye." Their uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Walker, being killed. In the campaign of 1783 they were in the 2nd Brigade commanded by Major Edmondson, and at the battle of Cuddalore, where "the behaviour of the Sepoy battalions was highly praised," were on the right. In the final war with Tippoo in 1799, they were in the 5th Brigade, right wing, under Colonel Roberts, and were one of the regiments ordered for the assault of Seringapatam, losing five killed and thirteen wounded. It was to this regiment that M. Chapuis surrendered and gave up his colours. In 1800 the 8th distinguished themselves at the siege of Koondgul, supporting H.M.'s 73rd "with a spirit which overcame every obstacle." At Assaye Colonel Orrock of the regiment, who commanded the pickets, made a mistake in judgment, which involved the regiment in considerable loss, though in his report on the subject Major-General Wellesley acknowledged "that it was not possible for a man to lead a body into a hotter fire than he did the pickets on that day against Assaye." The casualties were forty-seven killed and four wounded.

Sir John Malcolm, in writing to the *Quarterly Review*, mentions an incident connected with the regiment which may be quoted here: "Among the many instances of the effect which pride in themselves and the notice of their superiors inspire in this class of troops, we may state the conduct of the 1st Battalion, 8th Regiment, which became, at the commencement of his career in India, a favourite corps of the Duke of Wellington. They were with him on every service, and the men of this corps used often to call themselves "Wellesley ka Pultun," or Wellesley's battalion, and their conduct on every occasion was calculated to support the proud title they had assumed. A staff-officer, after the battle of Assaye, saw a number of the Mohammedans of this battalion assembled apparently for a funeral. He asked whom they were about to inter. They mentioned the names of five commissioned and non-commissioned officers of a very distinguished family in the corps. "We are going to put these brothers into one grave," said one of the party. The officer, who had been well acquainted with the individuals who had been slain, expressed his regret, and was about to offer some consolation to the survivors, but he was stopped by one of the men. "There is no occasion," he said, "for such feelings or expressions. These men" (pointing to the dead bodies) "were Sepoys. They have died in the performance of their duty. The Government they served will protect their children, who will soon fill the ranks they lately occupied."

After Assaye they took part in the sieges of Gawilghur and Chandore, serving with the troops under Wallace till the end of the war. At the time of the mutiny at Seringapatam in 1809, the 8th were amongst the regiments which suffered most. They were

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

attacked by some Mysore horse as well as by some of H.M. Cavalry, and then realised the false position in which they had been treacherously placed. Since Assaye they have not taken part in any of the greater battles in which the army has been engaged.

The 9th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY,* originally the 10th Battalion, date officially from 1765. The order for their formation, however, according to Wilson, has never been found, but he assigns its necessary date as between 1762 and 1765. They fought at Trinomally and in the various actions under Colonel Wood in 1768, and were in garrison at Erode when that fort capitulated. In 1771 and 1773 they were with the army in Tanjore, and in 1775 two companies under Captain Kelly were sent to Bombay, where they did good service at Salsette. Sixty years, or thereabouts, afterwards, Government testified their appreciation of the never-failing loyalty of the 9th on this and other occasions by the issue of the following order:—

"FORT ST. GEORGE, 6th August, 1839.

"In consideration of the readiness always evinced by the 9th Regiment Native Infantry to proceed on foreign service from the earliest periods at which the Native troops of this Presidency were required to embark on shipboard, the Right Hon. the Governor in Council is pleased to permit that regiment to bear on its colours and appointments, in addition to the word 'Ava,' a galley with the motto 'Khooshkee Wu Turree'† in the Persian character."

In 1777 they fought against the Polygars; in 1778 took part in the capture of Pondicherry; in 1781 were in the first line at Porto Novo, and fought gallantly at Polliloor and many of the numerous other engagements of that eventful year; in 1783 they were engaged under Colonel Fullarton against the Polygars. In 1791 they assisted in the capture of Ramgherry and Shivnagherry, and the following year, after being in garrison at Kergode, took part in the expeditions against the Polygars. In 1793 they were with the army which effected the capture of Pondicherry, and in 1801 took part in quelling the insurrection at Tinnevelly. At Panjalamcoorchy they suffered somewhat severely, having forty-seven killed and wounded—amongst the latter being two officers. In the Burmah war of 1824 they were in the 2nd Infantry Brigade, which was commanded by Colonel Hodgson of the regiment, and took part in the capture of the stockades at Joazong, the attempt on Kemmendine, and the general attack which

* The 9th Madras Native Infantry have a galley with the motto "Khooshkee Wu Turee," "Ava," "Pegu." Their uniform is red with green facings and gold lace.

† "By land and sea" (*Wilson*).

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

resulted in the dispersion of the enemy's army. Some of the regiment took part in the decisive victory obtained at Kokien, and in the capture of Thautabain, after which they remained to garrison Rangoon. "Ava" and "Pegu" commemorate this campaign, since which the 9th have not been engaged in any of the more important wars.

The 10th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY*—originally the 14th Battalion—date from 1766, when they were raised at Vellore, Captain Calvert being the first commandant. At Trinomally, the following year, Captain Calvert was slightly wounded, but not seriously enough to prevent his defending Amboor two months later. The defence of this place was a most gallant performance. The garrison was only about six hundred, and after a week it was found necessary to abandon one of the forts. Six batteries opened upon the devoted band; three breaches were made, but the dashing sallies made from time to time deterred the enemy from attempting them. In one of these sallies the Sepoys greatly distinguished themselves, driving away a force of between five and six thousand, and "pushing at them"—as Calvert says in his report—"as fast as they could draw their arms backwards and forwards." And they proved themselves as good at working as at fighting. Their commander wrote: "I will venture to say that no Sepoys in the world ever went through so much fatigue with so much cheerfulness as my Sepoys did. They relieved one another from firing to working hour and hour about, from dark till daylight for fifteen nights running." The 10th have the proud honour of being the *first* regiment to receive an honorary distinction. On receiving the tidings of the defence, the Government resolved that "the brave and gallant defence of the Fort of Amboor affords us the highest satisfaction, and it is agreed that our thanks be given to Captain Calvert, and that he be desired to acquaint Ensign Barton, the Commandant Moideen Saib and the Sepoys, as well as the sergeant whom he mentions to have behaved well, with the sense we have of their services; and as we think the giving this battalion, which has behaved so remarkably well, some distinguishing mark, will cause emulation in the others, it is agreed that it hereafter be called the Amboor Battalion, and that it do carry colours suitable to the occasion." This distinguishing mark was a fort with the word "Amboor," now borne on the "Elephant" of Assaye. In June, 1768, they shared in the capture of some important forts, and in 1771 and the two following years were included in General Smith's Tanjore army. In 1778 they took part in the capture of Pondicherry, and two years later greatly distinguished

* The 10th Madras Native Infantry have "Amboor," "Assaye," "Ava." Their uniform is red with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

themselves under Lieutenant Halcott in some sharp skirmishes near Madura. Three companies with four English officers (one of whom, Ensign Stuart, was killed) were with the force under Colonel Brathwaite which surrendered at Annagudi; a reverse which was amply compensated by the brilliant capture of Trinvalur by Captain Scott, when a hundred of the enemy were killed and three hundred taken prisoners. Some of the regiment, too, were with the one thousand five hundred of the Company's troops which, under Lieutenant Mackinnon, defeated seven thousand of the enemy. At Assaye they were in the first line, and had a casualty list of thirty-five killed and a hundred and five wounded. In June, 1824, they started for Burmah, the detachment, which included the 16th Madras Native Infantry and some Artillery, being commanded by Colonel Fair of the regiment, and took part in the capture of Arracan, the light companies being amongst the troops selected for the assault. During the campaign they lost more than a hundred and fifty of all ranks. And with this brief notice of their last distinction we unwillingly take leave of the "Regiment of Amboor."

The 11th Madras Native Infantry,* originally the 15th Battalion, date from 1769, when they were raised from the best of the Nawab's Sepoys, and intended for service in Ongole and the Palnaad. Two years after their formation they became the 11th Carnatic Battalion, and the Grenadier companies of the regiment took part in the capture of Pondicherry. When the re-organization of the army took place in 1796, the 11th became the 2nd battalion of the 9th. In the siege of Seringapatam, they were the Native regiment which entered the city with General Baird and H.M.'s 12th and 33rd Regiments, and in 1800 took part in the operations against Dhoondiah, Colonel McLean of the regiment being in command of the detachment. In 1803, under the same brigadier, they were with the troops which effected the relief of Poonah, and in 1818 greatly distinguished themselves at the siege of Badami, "one of the strongest built forts in Southern India," Captain Rose and Lieutenant Robertson of the regiment leading the storming party, and being thanked in General Orders. A few days afterwards, Lieutenant Stott, with only fifty of the regiment, effected the submission of another fort with a garrison of nearly a thousand. Subsequently they took a distinguished part in the capture of Sholapoor, in which they had twenty-two killed or wounded, including an officer. In 1824, another re-arrangement transformed the 2nd Battalion of the 9th Regiment into the 11th Regiment, the number originally borne.

* The 11th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam." Their uniform is red, with green facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 12th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY,* raised, in 1767, as the 16th Battalion, present another instance of a Native corps with only one "distinction," yet possessing a full and honourable record. The first commander was Captain Richard Matthews; and the year following the formation of the regiment he distinguished himself by the capture of the Fort of Mulwagal. The same year the regiment were with Colonel Wood in his unfortunate operations at Colar, and subsequently accompanied Major Fitzgerald in his pursuit of Hyder. In the re-arrangement of 1769, the regiment became the 13th Carnatic Battalion, and, a few months later, the 12th, and as such served in the capture of Pondicherry, two companies being afterwards in the Trichinopoly detachment, and taking part in the battle of Polliloor and in the campaign of 1783. In 1788, they were with the force which, under Colonel Eidington, subdued Guntzoor. In the re-organization of 1796, they became the 2nd Battalion of the 8th Regiment. When the Burmese war of 1824 broke out, they were in the 1st Infantry Brigade under Colonel Smelt; and under their present numeration gained considerable credit for their behaviour on the occasion of the final attacks on the enemy's position. In the stubborn fighting at the Dallab stockades, Major Home commanded the regiment, and Lieutenant Glover was seriously wounded. With this brief notice of their last important campaign we must take leave of the regiment, despite the multifarious services rendered in local disputes, often of a threatening nature.

The 13th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY † (Alcock) date from 1776, when they were raised near Madras as the 13th Carnatic Battalion, the first commander being Captain Alcock, whose name still gives the sub-title to the regiment. The career of the regiment so much resembles that of others we have noticed, that to give fuller details would involve needless repetition. At Seringapatam they were at one time under the command of Major Colin Campbell, of the 1st Madras Native Infantry, and during an attack on some outposts fell into confusion during the advance into the darkness of the night, and Major Campbell was killed in the attempt to rally them (*Wilson*). They were amongst the troops ordered for the assault, and their losses during the siege amounted to nearly eighty in killed and wounded.

The 14th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY ‡ (Wahab) date from 1776, when they were

* The 12th Madras Native Infantry have "Ava." Their uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

† The 13th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam." Uniform red, with white facings and gold lace.

‡ The 14th Madras Native Infantry have "Mahidpore," "China," "*The Dragon*," "Tueyar-o-Wufador," or "Ready and True." Their uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

raised as the 14th Carnatic Battalion, the officer whose name they bear being appointed at the same time to the command of another regiment now disbanded. Very early in their history did they gain honour and fame. The capture of Wandewash, in which the present 14th and 15th Regiments participated, is one of the most daring feats of recorded warfare. We will quote Captain O'Callahan's graphic description of an event which at the time excited, and justly, universal admiration:—

"Early in the morning of the 10th of August, 1780, Lieutenant Flint, 14th Madras Native Infantry, with one other British officer and their hundred devoted Sepoys, started from Carangoly. After a fatiguing march, they halted during the day to rest, but moved on again at eleven at night. By avoiding the roads and keeping to unfrequented paths, they increased the distance, but they escaped any interruption, and arrived near Wandewash in the forenoon of the 11th. When Flint ascertained that the fort had not been surrendered to Hyder, but was still held by the troops of the Nawab Mahomed Ali, he sent a message to the khilledar to announce his approach, and was informed that he would be fired at if he came within the range of the guns. All doubt as to the treachery of the khilledar being thus removed, Flint resolved to gain by duplicity a position which he could not attain by open force. He met a piquet that was sent to stop him near the glacis, and had the address to persuade the officer in command of it that he must have misunderstood his orders, which could only be intended to stop his party till it was known that they were friends, of which there could be no longer any doubt. While Flint parleyed with the piquet officer, and with some messengers who came out in succession, he continued to advance gradually, till he got so near that he could see that the gates were shut and the ramparts fully manned. He then announced that he had a letter from the Nawab which he was to place in the khilledar's own hands. After much altercation the latter consented to receive the letter in an open space between an outer barrier and the gate; and when Flint, attended by four of his Sepoys, was admitted, he found the khilledar seated on a carpet, surrounded by his officers, with a guard of thirty men with swords drawn, supported by a hundred Sepoys.

After paying some compliments, Flint confessed that he had no letter from the Nawab, but offered to produce the order of his own Government, issued with the concurrence of the Nawab. The khilledar treated this order with contempt, and told Flint he might go back as he came. Flint declared that it was impossible for him to return, as the intervening country was occupied by Hyder's troops. While he continued to remonstrate, the khilledar rose and was about to retire, when Flint suddenly seized him, and threatened

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

him with instant death if any one moved to rescue him. The four trusty Sepoys were close to him, and pointed their fixed bayonets at the khilledar's breast. In the confusion and dismay caused by this daring act, the rest of Flint's detachment effected their entrance, and the garrison were soon induced to submit, and to place themselves under his command. Thus Wandewash was saved on the very day when it was to have been surrendered to Hyder." *

Flint, with one company of his own regiment, one company of the 13th and a detail of the 12th, had to defend the captured fort against most determined attacks, and received the thanks of the Commander-in-Chief, and the appointment to a command in the 3rd Regiment.

Passing over, as we are compelled to do, many subsequent incidents in their history, we find them on the eve of Mahidpore in the 2nd Brigade of the 1st Division, and taking part in the final charge "up to the muzzles of the guns," which accomplished the defeat of the enemy. The loss of the regiment was fourteen killed and thirty-seven wounded. After the battle they remained in charge of the hospital, and subsequently were attached to the force under Sir John Malcolm. Under Major Moodie, the 2nd Battalion of the 6th regiment, as the 14th were then called, took part in the capture of Chowkeree, and again received official thanks. They were with Sir John Malcolm when the surrender of the Peshwa Bajee Row was effected, and took part in the siege of Assurgurh. The history of the China war, in which the 14th gained their final distinction, has been often before told; enough has been said to prove that their motto, "Ready and True," is no idle boast.

The 15th Madras Native Infantry† (Davis) also date from 1776, and still bear the name of their first commandant. The grenadier companies of the regiment were with the force under Colonel Baillie, which was destroyed at Perambakum, and shortly afterwards the 15th were distinguished at Wandewash under the circumstances mentioned above. They fought at Porto Novo, and at Polliloor: Captain Davis of the regiment commanded the 5th Brigade, of which they formed part. In the campaign of 1783 they were in the 5th Brigade, being subsequently sent to join Colonel Fullarton's expedition against the Polygars. Though the Afghan war of 1879-80 is the only one of their campaigns specified on their colours, yet the career of the 15th

* *Colburn's United Service Magazine*, August, 1887.

† The 15th Madras Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

has been by no means uneventful, though their services are not such as to call for notice here.

The 16th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY * (Lane) were raised in 1766 as the 16th Carnatic Battalion. In 1781 they were with Coote's army, one of the first duties of which was to relieve the Fort of Permacoil, which had been most gallantly defended by Lieutenant Bishop of the regiment with one company. They were in the second line at Porto Novo, and fought at Polliloor under Major Edmundson. In the campaign of 1783 they were in Major Blane's (the 3rd) Brigade of the first line, and at the action of Cuddalore, where they supported the left attack, had twelve killed and wounded. They were with Colonel Fullarton in his operations against the Polygars, and in the siege of Seringapatam were in the 6th Brigade (left wing), losing forty-four killed and wounded. Their next important campaign was the Burmese war of 1824-26, where they earned their final distinction, gaining special credit for their conduct at Arracan, at which Captain French of the regiment was killed.

The 17th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY † date from 1777, when they were raised at Tanjore as the 17th Battalion, from drafts of the 4th, 11th, and 13th Battalions. They were engaged in the operations under Fletcher and Baillie in 1780, and were with Coote's army the following year, fighting at Porto Novo and Polliloor. We must perforce pass over much of the earlier history, which—save that they did not participate in the better known battles—is much the same as that recorded of other Native regiments. They were part of the select detachment which Doveton took to Nagpore, where the casualties amounted to nineteen in the preliminary action; at the siege they were detailed for the attack on the Poolsee Baugh, when they lost several more men. After this they took part in the operations under Colonel Macleod, and remained for some time in the neighbourhood of Nagpore. Their later service has included the recent Burmese expedition.

The 19th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY ‡ date from 1777, when they were raised as the 20th Battalion from the 1st, 3rd, 8th and 16th Battalions. Very shortly after their incorporation they gained special praise for most gallant conduct at Tullicherry, when "Lieutenant Peter Campbell, at the head of about one hundred Sepoys, drove the enemy

* The 16th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Ava." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

† The 17th Madras Native Infantry have "Nagpore." Their uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

‡ The 19th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Pegu," "Central India." The uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

into the river, and drowned three hundred of them, at a time when they made sure of taking the place, and when we had very little hopes ourselves of being able to defend it" (*Report of Major Cotgrave*). The next month they again inflicted a severe defeat on the enemy by means of a sortie "on a very rainy night." Five companies or thereabouts of the regiment were engaged, and the loss of the enemy was 400. At Porto Novo they were in the second line, and, with the 17th Regiment, "specially distinguished themselves." At Polliloor they were in the 5th Brigade, as they were during the campaign of 1783. At Cuddalore they again obtained special praise, the three companies which, under Lieutenant Desse, took part in the centre attack, capturing a redoubt from the enemy. In April, 1786, we again find them to the fore in an attack at Pombutty, the Brigadier General writing:—"The spirit and obedience of the 20th Battalion were never more conspicuous." The native adjutant, Jemadar Hussein Khan, performed a deed for which nowadays he would be awarded the Victoria Cross. Notwithstanding the gallantry of the men we were compelled to retreat, when the Jemadar, despite a severe wound, returned into action and succeeded—by his personal exertions and example—in bringing off a gun. In 1789 they served under Colonel Stuart in Shevagunga, and in the assault on Callangoody had more killed and wounded than any other regiment, European or Native, engaged. In the war with Tippoo they were in the second Native brigade under Colonel Trent, and took part in the capture of Dindigul, in which Ensign Davidson was killed. On the reorganization of 1796 the 20th Battalion became the 2nd Battalion, 7th Regiment, under which denomination they fought at Seringapatam, where their losses were twenty in killed and wounded. Despite the temptation to dwell upon the career of the regiment we must conclude our notice of the 19th, whose later distinctions—"Pegu" and "Central India"—commemorate wars too familiar to need description here.

The 20th Madras Native Infantry,* originally the 21st Battalion, and subsequently the 2nd Battalion of the 2nd Regiment, also date from 1777. The only regiment which has the distinction "Gholinghur," the 20th have the additional honour of bearing an extra "Jemadar," with establishment, in commemoration of their gallantry on that occasion. They had fought the preceding August at Polliloor, and on the 27th of September, 1781, the army of which they formed part found itself opposed by the whole force of Hyder Ali. A terrible charge was made by the flower of the chief's horse upon

* The 20th Madras Native Infantry have "Gholinghur," "Seringapatam." The uniform is red, with green facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the 21st and 18th * Battalions, which, contrary to the intention, had somewhat separated. The "steady coolness" of the 21st and their comrades, and the fierce and continuous fire they poured in, resulted in the headlong retreat of the enemy, two of whose standards were captured, one of which remained with the 20th, an extra jemadar being granted to carry it. They fought at Cuddalore, and in Fullarton's operations against the Polygars, and were actively employed in the almost incessant warfare which devolved upon the army. In 1796 the 21st Battalion became the 2nd of the 2nd Regiment, and two years later were attached to the force under Colonel Roberts which effected the surrender of the French contingent at Hyderabad. At Seringapatam they greatly distinguished themselves under Captain Urban Vigors in the night attack, and at the siege were amongst the regiments which supplied the storming party, but their losses were fortunately small. In 1800 they fought in the operations against Dhoondiah, distinguishing themselves under Colonel Bowen in various places, including Gooty, where their commander was wounded and another officer killed; and Conaghul, where the timely information supplied by a private in the regiment facilitated the complete victory gained by Wellesley. In 1803 they were attached to the 2nd Infantry Brigade of Colonel Stevenson's division which marched to the relief of Poonah, and the following year took part in the fighting in Candeish. Their later achievements, which included service in the Mahratta country in 1812-14, and subsequently against the Pindaries, though arduous and honourable, has not added any distinction to their colours.

The 21st MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY † date from 1786, when they were raised at Chicacole as the 28th Battalion. They took part in the earlier operations against Tippoo, and fought in the operations at Rachore. In 1796 they became the 1st Battalion of the 11th Regiment, and fought at Seringapatam, contributing their quota to the storming party. They took part in the relief of Poonah in 1703, and were in the storming party at Gawilghur which was commanded by Colonel Kenny of the regiment, and of which General Wellesley wrote: "The gallantry with which the attack was made by the detachment under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Kenny has never been surpassed." In the preliminary fight at Nagpore they were in the left brigade under Colonel Scott, and were not very actively engaged, their total casualties throughout the siege only amounting to eleven. In 1818 they were with Colonel Adams'

* The 18th Battalion, afterwards the 18th Regiment, was disbanded in June, 1864.

† The 21st Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Nagpore," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red with white facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

expeditionary force against Chanda, where they remained in garrison for some time. In 1824 they became the 21st Regiment, and their most recent achievements have been the Afghan campaign of 1878-80 and the Burmese expedition, both of which have been often before referred to.

The 22nd MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY* (Dalrymple) date from 1788, when they were raised as the 29th Battalion at Ellore, the first commandant being Captain Dalrymple, whose name is still retained. In 1796 the 29th Battalion were, with the 28th, employed at Rachore, the successful seizure of which obtained for Captain Dalrymple and the troops engaged the thanks of Government. As the 2nd Battalion of the 11th Regiment they were under Colonel Roberts at Seringapatam, and supplied their contribution to the storming party. In 1800 they took part in the operations against Dhoondiah, and three years later were with Colonel Stevenson's division in the siege of Gawilghur, and in the operations for the relief of Poonah. A good many years elapsed before they were engaged in any important fighting again, not, indeed, till the Burmese war, which commenced in 1824, about which time they had become known by their present title. Major Lacy Evans of the regiment distinguished himself in some of the operations near Rangoon, and again in the "affair of Wattygaon," where the 22nd were hotly engaged, having a total casualty list of seventy-one, including seven officers wounded, Major Evans himself being one. With the distinction—"Ava"—gained in this war, we must terminate our notice of the regiment, which has not since been called on to take part in any of the better known Indian campaigns.

The 23rd MADRAS (or Wallajahbad) LIGHT INFANTRY† (Tolfry) date from 1794, when they were raised at Madras "from the recruits of the 3rd 10th, 11th, and 19th Battalions, and placed under the command of Captain Edward Tolfrey" (*Wilson*). They were at first known as the 33rd Battalion, becoming subsequently the 1st Battalion of the 12th Regiment. In the war of 1799 they were in the 3rd Brigade commanded by Colonel Gowdie, and at the siege of Seringapatam had only one man killed. The following year they distinguished themselves at the capture of Arrakaira, a strong fortress, where their "spirit and gallantry" were highly commended. In the same year Colonel Tolfrey of the regiment commanded the 2nd Brigade of Infantry in the war with Dhoondiah, and they subsequently took part in the capture of Ternakul. In 1803, Lieutenant Morgan with

* The 22nd Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam" and "Ava." The uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

† The 23rd Madras Native Infantry have "Now or Never," "Seringapatam," "Nagpore." Their uniform is red, with green facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

a company of the regiment earned the commander-in-chief's praise for their defence of Kajet Corygaum "against several attacks, during which the assailants lost in killed alone a number exceeding the detachment." They served in Malabar, and in 1808 were represented in the force under Colonel Doveton, which gained so much credit for its services in Candeish. In 1815 they assisted in the capture of Kurnool, and in 1817 were in the 2nd Brigade of the Hyderabad division of the army of the Deccan. At the action of Nagpore they were in Colonel Macleod's brigade, and were actively engaged, their losses being only second to those of the Royal Scots. In 1819 they were represented by one company in the capture of the fort of Jilpy Amnair, and took part in the capture of Asseergurh, Colonel Pollok of the regiment being second in command of the assaulting force, and Captain Conry being regimental commander.

The 24th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY* (Macdonald) date from 1794, when they were raised at Vellore. Their early history, which includes participation in the memorable victories of Seringapatam and Assaye, follows much the same lines as that of the other regiments so distinguished. Their first designation was the 34th Battalion, after which they became the 2nd Battalion of the 12th Regiment. In 1817, they formed part of the force under Colonel Munro in the Southern Mahratta country, after which they were in the Reserve Division of the army of the Deccan. They then joined the force under General Pritzler, and fought at Singhur, Vizierghur, Poorunder, Wassota, and other places. They fought at Sholapoor, and, in 1819, took part in the siege of Copaul Droog. But prior to this, they had gained the distinction of "Bourbon," in the operations against which they were in the 2nd Brigade under Colonel Drummond. They were not very seriously engaged, and a little later were represented by the flank companies in the capture of the Mauritius.

The 25th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY† (Kenny) also date from 1794, when they were raised—as the 35th Battalion—at Trichinopoly, Captain Kenny being the first commandant. They subsequently became the 1st Battalion of the 13th Regiment, eventually receiving the designation they now bear. They have not been fortunate enough to share in any of the better known campaigns, though three years after their incorporation Major Kenny of the regiment gained considerable credit for his services in Ceylon. They fought against the Polygars in 1799, having two officers killed and

* The 24th Madras Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Assaye," "Bourbon," The uniform is red, with green facings and gold lace.

† The 25th Madras Native Infantry have red uniform, with green facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

one wounded ; and in 1801-2 they were again engaged against the same foes, having ten men wounded at Panjalamcoorchy in March, and two killed and twelve wounded in the capture of the same place the following May. In 1809 they served in Travancore, and, under Captain Hodgson, distinguished themselves at the capture of the Arambooly redoubt. They subsequently shared in the capture of Nagercoil, in which Lieutenant Swayne was wounded. Their later history, though meritorious, does not call for detailed notice.

The 26th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY* (Innes) also date from 1794, being raised at Tanjore in that year as the 36th Battalion, their intermediate designation being the 2nd Battalion, 13th Regiment. They took part in the Polygar campaign of 1799 and 1801, and in 1809 were actively engaged at Quilon, where they gained distinction under Major Hamilton. An officer of the regiment—Lieutenant Yates—distinguished himself at the capture of Banda Neira. On the formation of the army of the Deccan, the 26th were attached to the Hyderabad Division, and in the battle of Nagpore were stationed under Colonel Stewart in the rear of the 1st Brigade, their total loss in killed and wounded not exceeding a dozen. Passing over the intervening period, we find them earning very high honours for their gallant defence of Kemendine under Major Yates, a defence which elicited in the Report the expression, "the undaunted conduct of the gallant 26th Regiment." The Governor-General eulogised their "exemplary valour and steadiness against the furious and reiterated attacks of vastly superior numbers by day and night." In the advance on Prome (1825) the 26th were in the first division, and took part in the various operations commemorated by "Ava" and "Pegu."

The 27th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY (Lindsay)† date from 1798, when they were raised as the 1st Extra Battalion at Trichinopoly, becoming, a few months later, the 1st Battalion, 14th Regiment. In 1801 they served in Tinnevelly, having about fifty killed and wounded at Panjalamcoorchy, and three years later were in Malabar under Colonel Macleod. They distinguished themselves at Trimbuckjee under Major Smith ; were in the first division of the army of the Deccan, and at Mahidpore had thirteen killed and wounded. The 27th are the only regiment of the Madras army which have the eloquent distinction "Lucknow," with the exception of the Artillery, whose triumphs and honours they shared.

* The 26th Madras Native Infantry have "Nagpore," "Kemendine," "Ava," and "Pegu." Their uniform is red, with green facings and gold lace.

† The 27th Madras Native Infantry have "Mahidpore," "Lucknow." The uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 28th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY (Martin)* date from 1798, when they were raised at Vellore as the 2nd Extra Battalion. Shortly afterwards they became the 2nd Battalion of the 14th Regiment. The first years of their existence call for no particular notice, but in 1812 we find them unfortunately prominent in a mutiny at Chilon. Only some thirty, however, were actually implicated, and the loyalty of Jemadar Iyaloo and two of the privates was conspicuous. The 28th were in the Hyderabad division of the army of the Deccan, and at Mahidpore suffered somewhat severely, their casualties amounting to sixty-seven. At Nagpore they do not appear to have been actively engaged. Early in 1818, they were dispatched under Major Ives of the regiment to occupy Scindwa and Toorkaira, while a party of ten Sepoys under a havildar highly distinguished themselves in the defence of Soangheer. They were represented at the siege of Mulligaum and Asseerghur, and suffered probably more than any other regiment from sickness during the campaign. In 1821 they took part in the war in Burmah, being attached to the 6th Brigade. A detachment under Lieutenant Disney gained great credit for the defence of some outposts, after which they were actively engaged at Kykloo and were with the detachment under Colonel Mallet which took possession of Pegu, the following November. Under Colonel Brodie they shared in the victories at Rangoon and Kokien, and came in for some sharp fighting at Wattygaon, where Captain Coyle was seriously wounded. Colonel Brooke and Captains Bell and Craigie particularly distinguished themselves.

The 29th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY † (Macleod) date from 1798, when they were raised at Masulipatam as the 3rd Extra Battalion, subsequently becoming the 1st Battalion, 15th Regiment. They have not been concerned in any of the more important campaigns.

The 30th MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY ‡ were formerly known as the Masulipatam Battalion, and when raised in 1799 were largely recruited from the French Hyderabad contingent. A few months later the title was changed to the 2nd Battalion, 15th Regiment. They were in the 4th Division of the army of the Deccan, and their chief achievements since that time have been the Burmese and recent Afghan war. In the former they took part in the affair at Kykloo, and under Colonel Paisley gained special mention in the

* The 28th Madras Native Infantry have "Mahidpore," "Nagpore," "Ava." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

† The 29th Madras Native Infantry have red uniform, with white facings and gold lace.

‡ The 30th Madras Native Infantry have "Ava," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is red, with white facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

subsequent attack on the Pagoda, and at the stockades of Dellah under Captain Townsend. They contributed to the victory at Kokien and the capture of Thantabain, and afterwards occupied Prome. The Afghan war of 1878-80, in which they took part, has been too frequently mentioned to require further reference here.

The 31st MADRAS (or Trichinopoly) LIGHT INFANTRY * (Jeannerett) were raised in 1800, from existing corps, as the 1st Battalion, 16th Regiment. In 1810 they were with Colonel Close in his operations against Ameer Khan, and some years later were in the Light Infantry Brigade of the Army of the Deccan. At Mahidpore they were signally prominent, driving off cavalry attacks, clearing the ford, taking up the first position on the enemy's bank, carrying the village, and throughout displaying the highest spirit and dash. Their total loss in killed and wounded was 93, and the motto "Now or never" has since become one of the recognised "bearings" of the regiment. They were subsequently engaged under Sir John Malcolm at Mundissoor, after which they were attached to the 2nd Division, and were employed in the various operations effected under General Doveton. No further distinctions have fallen to their share, though from time to time they have rendered efficient and valuable service.

The 32nd MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY † (Dyce) date from 1800, when they were raised as the 2nd Battalion, 16th Regiment, at Madura. The following year they were engaged against the Polygars, and were present at the repulse at Panjalamcoorchy. They bear the distinction of "Ava," commemorative of the first Burmese war, since which they have not been engaged in any of the more important campaigns.

The 33rd MADRAS NATIVE INFANTRY ‡ (Wahab) also date from 1800, being raised in January of that year as the 1st Battalion, 17th Regiment. Passing over their earlier history we find them, in 1809, gaining the distinction, which they alone bear, of "Cochin." Under Major Hewitt of the regiment, the six companies present defended the post with much skill and gallantry, repulsing determined attacks and inflicting on the assailants a loss of at least nine hundred. The subsequent history of the regiment does not call for comment.

Of the MEDICAL and CHAPLAINS' departments we have not space to speak fully, and will only mention that, as at present constituted, they are the outcome of the experience of many years, and in efficiency and repute are well up to the high point of excellence claimed—and that justly—by the army of Madras.

* The 31st Madras Native Infantry have "Now or Never," "Mahidpore." Their uniform is red, with green facings and gold lace.

† The 32nd Madras Native Infantry have "Ava." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

‡ The 33rd Madras Native Infantry have "Cochin." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Another glimpse into the romance of history is afforded when we come to consider the commencement of the BOMBAY ARMY. At one period Bombay—the "Island of Bombain" mentioned by the delightful Pepys—was in a sense more traditionally familiar to Englishmen of the day than either of the other Presidencies. Bombay, it must be remembered, was a European possession before the meteor flag of England gleamed above its rich campaign; Portugal owned it for years before the prowess of Drake and the enterprise of the Dutch stirred the latent Viking spirit of the Lords of the Sea to claim their share of the goodly heritage of "Imperial Ind." Another distinguishing feature of our possession of Bombay is that in theory it was strictly pacific. When Charles II. married Katherine of Braganza the isle of Bombay was transferred as part of her dowry, and when one remembers that—to quote Macaulay—"our ancestors' idea of India might be described as a dim notion of endless bazaars, swarming with buyers and sellers, and blazing with cloth of gold, with variegated silks, and with precious stones; of treasures where diamonds were piled in heaps, and sequins in mountains," it may well be imagined that the general opinion was that the Crown of England had never had a more splendid appanage. But shimmering silk and lustrous cloth, diamonds and ruddy gold, seemed practically as far off as ever; they had to be fetched, and for some reason the King's government did not see its way to fetch them. At any rate, in 1668 the Crown granted to the East India Company, "at an annual rent of £10 in gold, the island of Bombay, to be held by them in free and common soccage." Some trouble was experienced by the Company in reducing their new territory into possession, and Sir Abraham Shipman was landed—a fleet of five ships-of-war enforcing his mandate—and authorised to assume command as the King's generalissimo. From that time the history of Bombay presents an unbroken record of crescent importance.

It cannot be said that the council at Bombay proved itself a careful foster-parent to the nascent army, which from the earliest days had been in embryo existence in the Presidency. In 1779, especially, the army under Egerton was made to appear ridiculous, chiefly on account of the wavering councils of the authorities, though Popham, Goddard, Bruce and Hartley soon showed what it could do. So early, however, as 1741, there were about 1,600 Native troops employed, some of whom—a sort of militia—must have presented a strange appearance. There was no attempt at uniformity in their costume, some affecting a naval and some a military garb, while "a few made themselves like South-Sea Islanders by bedizening themselves in the most fantastic manner; many wore scarcely any apparel at all, the usual piece of calico worn

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

round the body serving as raiment and uniform. Their arms were as various as their costumes—muskets, matchlocks, swords, spears, bows and arrows." In 1746 Major Goodyear raised an artillery corps and seven companies of infantry; thirteen years later the drill and discipline of the Native troops was assimilated to that of the Royal army; the following year the uniform was regulated; and by 1784 the Native army comprised 2,000 cavalry and 28,000 infantry. Passing over the general history of the next few years we find that at the commencement of the reign of Her Majesty, the Bombay army consisted of Artillery, and Sappers and Miners, of three regiments of regular Cavalry in addition to the Poona Horse (now the 4th Cavalry), and of twenty-six regiments of regular Infantry, the Marine Battalion (now the 21st Native Infantry), and some local corps. During the mutiny of the Bengal army, by far the greater part of the Bombay army remained loyal. To quote from General Macleod's account:—"The Cavalry, regular and irregular, stood firm, and of the then thirty-two regiments of Native Infantry, six gave much uneasiness at first—one of them recovered itself, but in two it was necessary to apply the pruning knife of extreme measures and prompt example to eradicate the evil; the effect was immediately successful, for they both then and ever since did their duty well and faithfully to the State, in garrison and in the field. The other three regiments so misbehaved themselves as to be disbanded. Of these three, the worst was only ten years old, having been raised in 1846. *Twenty-six* regiments out of *thirty-two* stood firm, loyal, and trustworthy, not only passively, but actively; for the many of them that were called on at that critical period did excellent service in the field in the several trying campaigns, both in and beyond the limits of their Presidency, and were highly commended by Sir Hugh Rose and the other distinguished commanders, and, considering the influence (for the Nana's emissaries reached the Mahratta as well as Hindostan territory) and example to which the men of the Bombay Army had been subjected for sixteen years before, I contend that the result of the test they underwent was *wonderful*."

The present establishment of the Bombay Army consists of seven regiments of Cavalry, exclusive of the Body Guard and Aden Troop; the Native Artillery; corps of Sappers and Miners; and twenty-six regiments of Infantry.

The GOVERNOR'S BODY GUARD* does not call for any lengthened notice. It dates from 1865, and the principal portion of its record relates to State functions of varied nature. The total strength is about seventy.

* The Governor's Body Guard has a scarlet uniform with blue facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 1st Bombay Lancers* date from 1817. We do not propose to enter into the various transition periods through which they have passed, but are perforce compelled to content ourselves with the more well known of the achievements with which they are identified.

They were amongst the earliest of the cavalry regiments of the Presidency, their particular designation of "Lancers" being of more recent date. Of the military operations embraced in the distinction "Ghuznee" we have treated in other pages of this work, while the accounts of Kennedy and Thornton give in full and graphic detail all the incidents of the time. With the troops who achieved this success, "most honourable to the British Army," were the 1st Bombay Lancers. Throughout that Afghan war—now intercepting convoys, now cutting off reliefs, now pursuing the foe scattered by the deadly rain of musket shot—we find the cavalry taking a prominent part. When the Sikh war of 1845 occurred, with its teeming record of gallant actions, the 1st Bombay Lancers were amongst the troops engaged, and in numberless instances rendered most efficient service. In the triumphs gained by Whish and Edwards throughout the campaign, and notably at Moultan, the regiment shared, though in some of the more prominent actions the cavalry were not very prominently engaged. The last distinction on their standard commemorates their services during the Mutiny "in several trying campaigns, both within and without the borders of their Presidency," and the General Orders published by Sir Hugh Rose and others bear ample testimony to the sterling aid they rendered.

The 2nd Bombay Lancers also date from 1817. After various services which, though important and invaluable, are yet unrecorded in the official distinctions, we find them, like their predecessors in notation, amongst the Imperial troops which crushed, we must hope for ever, the terrible Mutiny of 1857. They have been engaged since then in the Afghan War of 1879-80, in which they served in the Reserve Division of the Kandahar Field Force in the early part of 1880, and subsequently joined in the advance on that city and on the line of communication.

The 3rd Bombay Cavalry† (The Queen's Own) date from 1820, and may certainly claim to be one of the most fortunate and efficient regiments of the Presidency. To

* The 1st Bombay Lancers have "Ghuznee," "Afghanistan," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Central India." The uniform is dark green with scarlet facings.

† The Queen's Own have "Ghuznee," "Cabul, 1842," "Hyderabad," "Persia," "Reshire," "Khoosh-ab," "Bushire," "Central India," "Abyssinia," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is dark green, with scarlet facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

them belongs part of the triumph of Ghuznee and Cabul, and on one occasion their very eagerness involved them in some loss. When the order was given to advance to Ghuznee, a body of cavalry under Captain Delamaine was ordered forward to drive off a skirmishing force of the enemy; they pursued too far and were attacked by a large number of the enemy. "Among the slain were Captains Bury and Reeves, of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry. When a regiment, with some field-pieces, went to the front to recover the bodies of those who fell—fifty in number—they were all found to be deprived of their heads, hands, and otherwise shockingly mutilated. At Ghuznee, Captain Reeves' head was exhibited as that of General Nott, who, it was said, had been entirely defeated near Moodkur, himself killed, his army dispersed, and his guns taken." They were with the forces of the conquering Napier when the princely chieftains of Hyderabad surrendered their proud fortress; when it became necessary to chastise the Lord of the Lion and Sun, the Queen's Own lent their willing sabres to the cause. Reshire, Khoosh-ab, and Bushire recall their deeds of prowess, amongst which stand full conspicuously those of Moore and Malcolmson. Bushire was taken "almost without opposition," but at Khoosh-ab opportunity offered for the regiment to distinguish itself. The scene is thus described by an historian:—

"When the sun rose, the Persians, 6,000 infantry and 2,000 cavalry, were seen drawn up in order of battle near the village of Khoosh-ab, which name signifies 'pleasant water.' Our artillery having quickly silenced the enemy's guns, our handful of sabres advanced to the attack. In a moment they had scattered the enemy's cavalry, strewing the plain with corpses. They then dashed at the infantry, all of whom, save two or three battalions, forthwith broke and ran. One of the steady battalions, seeing that the British horsemen were close at hand, formed square. A squadron of the 3rd Bombay Light Cavalry, consisting of 120 sabres, gallantry led by Captain Forbes, aided by Captains Moore and Wren, Lieutenants Moore, Speirs, and Malcolmson, and Cornets Combe and Hill, rode straight at the square under a storm of bullets. The Persians stood firmly, firing rapidly, yet steadily, but our troopers were not to be denied. Well mounted, and carried away by his boiling impetuosity, Lieutenant Arthur Thomas Moore was a horse's length in front of all. Letting his sword hang by the sword-knot he took a rein into each hand, and, driving in his spurs, made his horse leap actually on to the bayonets. The gallant animal fell dead, but, by falling, made a gap by which the 3rd Bombay Light Cavalry poured in like a torrent." In

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the splendid charge which followed there were many instances of individual valour on the part of the troopers, one or two of which we will quote.

"Havildar Runjeet Singh was, while charging, struck by a bullet, which, entering the centre of the breast, lodged under his shoulder-blade. He did not pause or falter for a moment, but, continuing his furious career, entered the square, close to Lieutenant Moore. After riding through the confused mass of broken infantry, he was close to Captain Forbes in the attack on the guns in rear. He then received a second wound, which prevented him from wielding his sword. He nevertheless retained his grasp of it, and remained in the ranks till the fight was over. He then rode up to his commanding officer, and, saluting him, said that he was shot through the chest, that he knew his wound was mortal, but that he did not mind losing his life if his officer considered he had done his duty bravely. This hero was rewarded for his gallantry by being promoted from Havildar (sergeant) to Jemadar (lieutenant), and, notwithstanding his severe injuries, ultimately recovered."

Trooper Lall Khan evinced great intrepidity in the attack on the enemy's guns after the destruction of the square, dismounting under a heavy fire, and attempting to carry off a Persian gun from the midst of the enemy. Yet another officer, Lieutenant Malcolmson, found in that field of carnage the twin jewel, honour and fame.

"The tide of battle had rolled on, when Lieutenant Malcolmson missed Moore. Turning round in his saddle, he saw that his comrade was unhorsed, and in imminent peril, for his sword had been broken in his fall. Without a moment's hesitation, Malcolmson cut his way back through the broken ranks of the enemy, and calling to Moore to catch hold of his stirrup, brought him safely out of the press."

For this feat of gallantry Moore and Malcolmson received the Victoria Cross. Swiftly following on the Persian war came the Indian Mutiny, during which the 3rd Cavalry rendered excellent service.

Once again were they to the fore in the Abyssinian campaign, during which we read they had most severe work, having to march all day, and perform patrol and picket duties nearly all night. They never had but two nights per week in bed, and frequently not more than one. Throughout the war they were most actively engaged, and earned very high praise from the authorities. Their latest distinction commemorates the familiar Afghan war.

In this the Queen's Own were engaged for two months in outpost duty in the Kumai Pass during the second Afghan war, and were represented in the action on the Helmund,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

on the 14th July, 1880. At the fatal battle of Maiwand they were under "a murderous fire for four hours without a vestige of cover," remaining steadily in line as if on parade. When the terrible rush was made, and the infantry fell back, the Queen's Own charged gallantly, and the 1st Grenadiers "subsequently acknowledged publicly the great assistance" thus rendered. Lieutenant Owen of the regiment was killed, and as an instance of the terrible privations our officers and men had to endure may be mentioned the fact that Lieutenant Geoghegan was thirty-four hours in the saddle without food, during which time he had a horse shot under him. In the following month the Queen's Own again distinguished themselves at Deh Khwaja, and subsequently took an important part in the battle of Kandahar.

On the occasion of the visit of the Prince of Wales, they received the title of the Queen's Own, the Prince being appointed to the hon. colonelcy.

The 4th Bombay Cavalry * (Poona Horse) date from 1817, and their first distinction was gained before six months had elapsed. There are few instances of more splendid fighting throughout the whole history of our Indian warfare than the struggle at Corregaum,† between a thousand Bombay troops under Staunton and the whole Mahratta Army. Of this heroic thousand 350 were troops of the newly raised Poonah Horse, under Captain Swanston, and of these 350, 96 were killed and wounded.

The battle of Corregaum has been described by one of the best-known historians of India—Mountstuart Elphinstone—as "one of the most brilliant affairs ever achieved by an army, one in which the European and Native soldiers displayed the most noble devotion and most romantic bravery, under the pressure of thirst and hunger, beyond endurance." They were with the troops before Ghuznee, and pursued Azful Khan on his flight from his neighbouring vantage ground, and found yet another field for their prowess in the turbulent land of the Afghans. Side by side with the Queen's Own fought the Poonah Horse, sharing in all the hardships, and participating in all the successes, of Nott's brilliant campaign, and being, some hold, inadequately recognised for the service rendered. The battle of Meeanee (February, 1843) has been before described when dealing with H.M. 22nd Regiment. In this important engagement, "second to none in the warlike annals of India," the Poonah Horse were on guard in the rear, and did not consequently share in it as fully as some of the regiments. They took part in the

* The 4th Bombay Cavalry have "Corygaum," "Ghuznee," "Afghanistan," "Candahar," "Meeanee," "Hyderabad," "Persia," "Reshire," "Khooshab," "Bushire," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is dark green with light green facings.

† The place is written, with seeming indifference, Corregaum, Corygaum, or Koreigaum.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

battle of Hyderabad, and a few years later added to their standard the distinctions gained in Persia. This campaign afforded great opportunities to the Bombay army, of which they were by no means slow to avail themselves, and a short description of the hardships they had to encounter may not be out of place.

"On the first and second days of their march," writes a narrator, "our troops encountered some of the most unpleasant incidents of a tropical climate. First, a tempest of wind swept across them, bearing with it a mighty cloud of fine dry dust, which penetrated not only the ears, eyes, nostrils, and mouths of the soldiers, but seemed actually to force its way into the very pores of the skin. Before long this was exchanged for the other extreme of climatic misery. When our troops halted, to bivouac in order of march, there burst upon them a dreadful thunderstorm, the rain and the hail coming down in torrents, drenching to the skin both the officers and men, who were shelterless, as they had no such cover as tents or trees. The piercing wind that blew from the snowy mountains rendered their discomfort all the greater; but nothing could daunt the ardour of these troops, especially with such a leader as Sir James Outram." There were constant night alarms, sometimes under circumstances sufficiently amusing. An officer who was present thus describes one:—"It happened that a soldier in his shirt and trousers had wandered some distance from our camp during the night, when an alarm rose that the enemy were upon us. Men, scarcely awake, rose to their feet, rifle in hand, and seeing a white object in the distance rushing towards them, opened fire on it. The more the unfortunate man shouted—for he was within the white object, which was his shirt—the more rapid was the firing at him, until he came sufficiently near to be recognised. Fortunately, the darkness of the night and the hurried way in which the men fired, saved him from being hit."

On another occasion the Poonah Horse were themselves nearly the victims of zeal without knowledge. During some operations the camp had an alerte, "and the troops stood to their arms. A troop of cavalry in sight were alleged to be the enemy! A body of ours went skirmishing up to them, and fortunately, the moon shone forth in time to show that they were a patrol of our own Poonah Horse."

In the Naikra war (1868) some of the Poona Horse were employed as the personal escort of the Resident, and ably acquitted themselves in the fighting that took place. On one occasion the Risaldar in command was wounded three times by arrows, the last shaft penetrating the lung and proving fatal.

In the Afghan war the Poonah Horse were distinguished by their share in the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

succour given by General Brooke's force at Sinjiri to the straggling and hardly pressed fugitives from Maiwand, two of their number receiving the Order of Merit. Two more received the same envied distinction for their courage at Deh Uhwaja, where the regiment were engaged.

The 5th Bombay Cavalry* (Jacob Ka Risala) date from 1839, and owe their origin to the famous General John Jacob, that "able and distinguished soldier, the happy result of whose good deeds and extraordinary mental and administrative power still exist."

Closely connected with them in origin and achievements is the 6th Bombay Cavalry† (Jacob Ka Risala), dating, according to the official list, from 1846. It will be seen that the first six distinctions on their standards are identical, and we shall therefore treat of the campaigns as relating to both. The first distinction relates to one of the most wearying but successful events in that war in Scinde, by which the robber chief Beja Khan, the "Scourge of the Indian frontier," was compelled to tender absolute submission. Meeanee, Hyderabad, Punjaub—in all of which Jacob's Horse took a prominent part—have been before described; Mooltan, ever associated with the name of Herbert Edwards, added yet another distinction to the roll of those won by the splendid horsemen of Scinde. At Goojerat they were with the cavalry before which fled the hopeless mass of fugitives, the wreck of the mighty army of the Sikhs. Under their old commander, General Jacob, the 5th Bombay Cavalry took part in the Persian war, and subsequently rendered good service in the suppression of the Mutiny.

The Afghan campaign proved a fruitful harvest of honours for the Scinde Horse, though the regiment perhaps more than others identified with it — the 3rd Scinde Horse—is no longer to be found in the Army List. At Baghas, Kandahar, Takht-i-pul, Khusk-i-Nakhud, Girishk, Maiwand, wherever cavalry could act, there we find recorded some gallant deed of the Scinde Horse, while the names of Reynolds, Currie, Malcolmson, Gordon, and Monteith rise unbidden to the memory when we call to mind the gallant deeds done in that fierce and lengthy struggle.

The 7th Bombay Cavalry‡ (Belooch Horse) date, as at present constituted, from 1885, and have not consequently had an opportunity of gaining any of the distinctions

* The 5th Bombay Cavalry have "Cutchee," "Meeanee," "Hyderabad," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Persia," "Central India," "Afghanistan, 1878-79." The uniform is dark green, with white facings.

† The 6th Bombay Cavalry have "Cutchee," "Meeanee," "Hyderabad," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark green, with primrose facings.

‡ The 7th Bombay Cavalry have a uniform of dark green, with buff facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

borne by the other Cavalry regiments. The origin and composition of the regiment, however, leave little room for doubt that, when occasion offers, they will be no whit behind in valour and endurance.

The ADEN TROOP OF CAVALRY* in the Bombay Army date from 1867, when they were raised for service in the district whose name they bear. The effective strength is about a hundred of all ranks. The station, invaluable as a port, was attacked by our troops under Major Baillie in 1839, and after a brief resistance the British flag was planted by Lieutenant Rundle.

The BOMBAY NATIVE ARTILLERY† consist of two batteries, representing the larger force which in days gone by did such good service. For obvious reasons we cannot dwell long on the history of the Native Artillery. Very early in the annals of the Presidency do we find traces of it in embryo form; in 1746, for example, we read that Major Goodyear made a change in the system, by which some of the old Golundauzes and their assistant lascars were reduced. It is impossible to doubt that there were Native Artillery with the force which, in 1757, joined Clive in Bengal, and shared with the Madras Artillery "the superior share as regards that arm in the victory at Plassey." Through various changes and chances, the Bombay artillery gained and preserved a high reputation, till, at the commencement of the present reign, their establishment is thus estimated by General Macleod:—

"In 1838, the Native Artillery consisted of Golundauze, recruited similarly to the Native Infantry, but of superior standard. These men well maintained the character of Bombay Artillery, and their good services are still remembered and testified to by some of their old officers who knew them well." The following years afforded ample scope for the energies and skill of the gunners; Candahar and Quetta, Ghuznee and Cabul, Meeanee, Mooltan, Goojerat, the Mutiny, Persia, Abyssinia, Afghanistan, are but a few of the more important campaigns in which to a greater or lesser extent they have been engaged. But the amalgamation of the Indian with the Royal Artillery renders it unnecessary here to do more than record the fact of the mountain batteries which compose the Native Artillery of the Presidency bearing distinctions which tell of no inherited or representative honours, but of personal service ably rendered. The service establishment of a battery is about two hundred and fifty of all ranks, inclusive of course of drivers.

* The Aden Troop have a dark green uniform, with gold lace.

† No. 1 Mountain Battery has "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Abyssinia." No. 2 Battery has "Afghanistan, 1878-80." The uniform is dark, with scarlet facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE BOMBAY ARTILLERY.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The Corps of Sappers and Miners,* like the sister arm of the Artillery, have their actual origin very early in the history of the Presidency, though their present system of organization is of later date. Much of what has been said above respecting the Sappers and Miners of the other Presidencies applies, *mutatis mutandis*, to the Bombay corps, and we shall not, therefore, weary our readers with a repetition of the devolution of the present corps from its remote predecessors. Were, indeed, the Sappers and Miners the mere creation of the present reign, they might well claim that it was their pride—to paraphrase a once well-known couplet—

> "To build, not boast, a glorious name,
> No tenth transmitter of another's fame,"

so long and significant is the list of their honours. To the events which those distinctions commemorate reference will be made in the accounts of other regiments which shared in them, but it may be safely said that in many cases—as, indeed, may pretty generally be postulated—the important though unobtrusive work of the Sappers and Miners has done much to enable those distinctions to be added to the honour list of the army. The strength of the establishment is, roughly speaking, nine hundred and twenty of all ranks, distributed among four "service" and one "depôt" company.

The 1st Bombay Native Infantry† (Grenadiers) date from 1788, and claim their share in some of the best known in the early victories of the Imperial armies. We are compelled to pass over much of the less known part of their history, including the various changes which the 1st Grenadiers together with the other regiments underwent in the way of numeration, &c., as, in dealing with the army of Madras, we have sufficiently shown the general course such changes took.

They took part in the famous defence of Mangalore‡ under Colonel Campbell, a defence scarcely equalled for "brilliancy and bravery," and in the battle of Hyderabad (or Dubha), familiar as the action in which the 3rd Cavalry and Scinde Horse did such splendid work, and we will not linger longer than to say that in these battles, as in many precedent and contingent to them, the 1st Grenadiers behaved gallantly. So did

* The Corps of Sappers and Miners have "Beni-Boo-Ali," "Ghuznee," "Afghanistan," "Khelat," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Persia," "Reshire," "Khooshab," "Bushire," "Central India," "Abyssinia," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80," &c. The uniform is scarlet, with blue facings.

† The 1st Bombay Native Infantry have "Mangalore," "Hyderabad," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1878-80." Their uniform is red, with white facings.

‡ It will be seen that though the official birthday of the regiment is 1788, their participation in the defence of Mangalore is confirmatory of the fact that the nucleus of the Bombay army had been in existence long before that date.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

they in the crowded years which followed, though no distinctions emblazoned their colours till the recent Afghan war.

In this their chief duty to commence with was in the Bolan Pass, after which they took part in the disastrous battle of Maiwand, being commanded by Colonel Anderson. There is no need to dwell upon the sad story. From the chaos of despairing sounds has come down to us the last appeal of the brave Colonel to his "children" of the Grenadiers to keep steady; in the confused picture of terror and desolation a small group of men is seen making a last desperate stand, and amongst them are a handful of the Bombay Grenadiers. Out of 624 men who went into action that day, 347 were killed and 55 wounded. They subsequently took part in the defence of Kandahar and in the final defeat of Ayoub Khan's army.

The 2nd Bombay Native Infantry* (Prince of Wales's Own Grenadiers) date from 1788, and may be taken as a typical regiment of the Infantry of the Presidency. They were amongst the troops that accompanied Sir David Baird to Egypt, and shared with the 13th Bombay Infantry the honour of the "Sphinx" on their colours. Eighteen years later they greatly distinguished themselves at Koregaum, where over a fourth of their number were killed or wounded.† It was undoubtedly the splendid charge of the 2nd Grenadiers that snatched the victory from the foe, and left the remnant of Staunton's gallant band conquerors surrounded by piles of dead. The Mahrattas, whose numbers seemed inexhaustible, had captured a gun when occurred a deed of heroism rarely equalled. We will quote from the "History of the Mahrattas." "Lieutenant Thomas Pattinson, adjutant of the battalion,‡ lying mortally wounded, being shot through the body, no sooner heard that the gun was taken than, getting up, he called to the Grenadiers once more to follow him, and seizing a musket by the muzzle, rushed into the middle of the Arabs, striking them down right and left, until a second ball through the body completely disabled him. Lieutenant Pattinson had been nobly seconded: the Sepoys thus led were irresistible; the gun was retaken, and the dead Arabs, literally lying above each other, proved how desperately it had been defended." On the banks of the river, near the village, a marble column has been erected, on which are inscribed the names of those who fought and fell so nobly on that bloody New Year's day. A few months prior to this in point of date, namely in November, 1817, was fought the battle

* The 2nd Bombay Native Infantry have "Egypt" (with the Sphinx), "Koregaum," "Kirkee," "Abyssinia." Their uniform is red, with white facings.

† Fifty killed, and a hundred and five wounded.

‡ The 2nd Grenadiers were then known as the 2nd Battalion of the 1st Bombay Native Infantry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of Kirkee, where the 2nd Grenadiers formed part of the force under Colonel Burr. Burr's total strength was under three thousand; that of the Peishwa was twenty-five thousand! The description given by Grant Duff in his history is so graphic that we cannot resist quoting it.

"Those only who have witnessed the Bore in the Gulf of Cambay, and have seen in perfection the approach of the roaring tide, can form the exact idea presented to the author at sight of the Peishwa's army. It was towards the afternoon of a very sultry day; there was a dead calm, and no sound was heard except the rushing, the trampling, and neighing of the horses, and the rumbling of the gun-wheels. The effect was heightened by seeing the peaceful peasantry flying from their work in the fields, the bullocks breaking from yokes, the wild antelopes startled from sleep bounding off, and then turning for a moment to gaze on this tremendous inundation which swept all before it, levelled the hedges and standing corn, and completely overwhelmed every ordinary barrier as it moved."

Though the principal honours of the day fell upon another Bombay regiment, the 2nd Grenadiers most signally distinguished themselves. In 1840 they were again busily engaged. "During our long campaign in Scinde and Afghanistan," says Captain Neill, "many a gallant soldier fell; but among the noble spirits that fled, there was not one more chivalrous and daring than Walpole Clarke." This officer, a lieutenant of the 2nd Bombay Grenadiers, had for his bravery been appointed to a corps of Scinde Irregular Horse, and early in May left the fort of Kahun, about twenty miles west of the Suleiman Mountains, in south-eastern Afghanistan, with a convoy of camels, escorted by 50 horse and 150 foot. His object was to obtain supplies. Having marched about twenty miles, on his return to Sukkur he directed a portion of the infantry to return to Kahun and the rest to bivouac. In this position he was attacked by more than 2,000 Beloochees. Leaving his troopers to protect the camels, he dashed against the enemy at the head of his little band of infantry. He was soon shot down. They perished to a man, fighting desperately to the last; and the cavalry, overpowered by numbers, fled on the spur. All the stores were taken by the elated Beloochees, who overtook the party on the march to Kahun, and left none alive to tell the tale. We must pass over the period which elapsed between that campaign and the war in Abyssinia, where the 2nd Grenadiers won their last distinction. In this campaign they were "employed constantly and in detached parties in helping to make the railways . . . and this harassing duty, in the climate of that region in the hottest of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

its seasons, told so much on all ranks that . . . very soon only one British officer was left fit for duty." The Hon. Colonel of the Regiment is H.R.H. the Prince of Wales.

The 3rd Bombay Native Infantry* (Light Infantry) also date from 1788. Seedaseer, the first name on their colours, commemorates a fierce action fought on the 6th March, 1799, when the 3rd, the 5th, and another Bombay regiment which formed the right brigade of the army under Colonel Montressa, were suddenly surrounded by Tippoo's legions. The odds were so overwhelming, that Montressa's little force was "only saved from annihilation by the bravery with which the Sepoys maintained an unequal struggle." They were reinforced by some of H.M's 74th and 77th, and the Mysoreans were beaten off with a loss of 1,500 men. "Thus," writes an historian, "were 11,800 of Tippoo's best troops defeated by only 2,000 of ours, but amongst our losses were Captains Thomson and Shott, of the 3rd Light Infantry." They took an active part in the siege of Seringapatam, after which, save for comparatively unimportant operations, they were not actively employed till the expedition against the Beni-Boo Arabs, when they were with General Smith in his final suppression of these ferocious pirates. Their next important campaign was that against the Sikhs from 1845 to 1849, commemorated by the distinction "Punjaub." Under Dundas they joined the army besieging Mooltan in December, 1848, and afterwards, under the same commander, participated in the battle of Goojerat. In the Abyssinian war they were amongst the first regiments ordered to the front, the 3rd Bombay and H.M.'s King's Own following the 25th Bombay within three days, but the history of that campaign has been too often related to warrant us doing more than mentioning the share the 3rd Bombay Light Infantry took in it.

The 4th Bombay Native Infantry,† or Rifle Corps, have the same official date of origin as that of the preceding regiments. In the army before Seringapatam, they were in the left Brigade under Colonel Wiseman, and in the assault were with the other Bombay flank companies under Colonel Migram. Their loss was not heavy, being only fourteen of all ranks. After Seringapatam, they took part in the capture of Dummum, Hooley, and Syringby, gaining considerable praise from the commanding officers. Beni-Boo-Ali and Bourbon—strangely inverted in the official order—have been before described; the Bombay Rifles followed Dundas to Mooltan, and served throughout the

* The 3rd Bombay Native Infantry have "Seedaseer," "Seringapatam," "Beni-Boo-Ali," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Abyssinia." Their uniform is red, with blue facings.

† The 4th Bombay Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Beni-Boo-Ali," "Bourbon," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Persia," "Reshire," "Khooshab," "Bushire," "Central India," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is rifle-green, with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Punjaub campaign; on their colours are the distinctions won in Persia, after which they rendered good service in the operations in Central India, which followed the suppression of the Mutiny proper.

In Afghanistan, which completes the catalogue of their many important campaigns, their duties, though onerous, did not involve them in much actual fighting, though they rendered good service at the battle of Kandahar, keeping the enemy in check at the Bala Wali Kotal.

The 5th Bombay Native (Light) Infantry * also date from 1788, and their first two actions of importance were those already described—Kirkee, and the famous capture of Seringapatam. Very early did the 5th acquire the character of an excellent regiment. They were famous for their marching powers, and for their then comparatively short, dark set of Bombay men, a peculiarity which gave the regiment the sobriquet of the "Kalee Pultan," or black regiment. In 1821 they took part in the Beni-Boo-Ali expedition, and their next distinction recalls an achievement which General Macleod well says was "so soldierlike and creditable, that, had it happened in these days, the renown of it would have attracted far more notice." The gallant Walpole Clarke, of the 2nd Bombay Grenadiers, had left Kahun for that foraging expedition from which he was never to return, and Lewis Brown, of the 5th, with a detachment of the regiment, were left to garrison the fort. They made a splendid and stubborn defence from June till August, on the 12th of which month the gallant Major Clibborn, of the 1st Bombay Grenadiers, set out to relieve him. In the Pass of Nuffoosk, however—a pass, "the aspect of which might have appalled even Swiss or Scotch mountaineers"—he was attacked by an overwhelming mass of Beloochees, nearly half his men killed, and himself compelled to effect a disastrous retreat. "Left thus unsuccoured, Captain Brown, having only a garrison consisting of three Sepoy companies with one gun, had to capitulate; but his bravery won him most honourable terms, which were not violated." The 5th served in the China war of 1860, and the list of their distinctions closes with the familiar "legend" of the recent Afghan war, their connection with which, however, was more prosaically useful than exciting.

The 7th Bombay Native Infantry† are also officially dated from 1788. Their history traverses the familiar ground on which Seedaseer, Seringapatam, and Beni-Boo-

* The 5th Bombay Native Infantry have "Seedaseer," "Seringapatam," "Kahun," "Beni-Boo-Ali," "China, 1860-62," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." The uniform is red, with black facings.

† The 7th Bombay Native Infantry have "Seedaseer," "Seringapatam," "Beni-Boo-Ali." Their uniform is red, with white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Ali are the salient landmarks. In the last-named operations the 7th were in the right Brigade with H.M.'s 65th Regiment, which sustained the brunt of the action. Since then they have been more or less actively employed, notably in some of the more recent Burmah expeditions.

The 8th Bombay Native Infantry* dates from 1796. Many years passed before they took part in any campaign commemorated on their colours. The share taken by the Bombay troops in the wars which marked the early years of the present reign are matters of common knowledge. The 8th served in these, and took part in some of the later operations in the Afghan war of 1879-80.

The 9th Bombay Native Infantry† date from 1788, and took part in the siege of Seringapatam. Throughout the Punjaub campaign, and notably at Mooltan, they rendered good service. The Afghan war broke for the 9th a long period of comparative quiet, and during their sojourn in the Khojak Pass they had some smart skirmishes with the enemy, in all of which they were successful, displaying considerable dash and energy.

The 10th Bombay Native Infantry (Light Infantry)‡ date from 1797, but do not appear to have taken part in any of the better-known campaigns which preceded the Mutiny. In this they rendered good service in Central India, where Rose and Stewart proved the loyalty of the Bombay troops; and their next important employment was in the Abyssinian war, followed by that in Afghanistan.

The 12th Bombay Native Infantry§ date from 1798, and their first distinction is that of Kirkee, to which reference has been made. Only a detachment of the regiment under Captains Donnelly and Mitford were actually engaged, the rest being stationed at the village as guard over the hospital and stores. They served in Afghanistan in 1842, sharing with other Bombay troops the hardships but *not* the honours of Nott's campaign, and at Meeanee gained particular praise for their brilliant courage in supporting the gallant 22nd, and capturing several guns. They repeated this conduct at Hyderabad, again closely following the 22nd, and contributing a very considerable share to the "brilliant victory . . . in which the army displayed all the best qualifications of the

* The 8th Bombay Native Infantry have "Hyderabad," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with white facings.

† The 9th Bombay Native Infantry have "Seringapatam," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with black facings.

‡ The 10th Bombay Native Infantry have "Central India," "Abyssinia," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with black facings.

§ The 12th Bombay Native Infantry have "Kirkee," "Meeanee," "Hyderabad," "Central India." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

bravest troops." Their roll of distinctions ends with "Central India," the details and importance of which have been before referred to. To this regiment belonged Fitzgerald, whose name is inseparably connected with the Scinde Camel Corps, an officer who, to quote the authority before cited, "possessed wonderful mental and bodily energy, was of a stalwart and magnificent physique, indomitable in pluck, reckless of his health, a staunch friend, a boon companion, known and loved wherever he went, and in St. Paul's Cathedral, in the heart of London, the memory of this stalwart and well-known officer is perpetuated by the erection of a marble pulpit."

The 13th Bombay Native Infantry* date from the early part of 1800. Very speedily did they experience

"The stern delight that warriors feel,"

for they were amongst the troops ordered from India to join in the operations in Egypt of 1801. At Kirkee, as the 1st Battalion of the 7th Regiment, the 13th carried off the honours of the day. Out of the 86 killed and wounded, 50 belonged to the 13th, and their valour elicited special mention in the General Order issued by the Commander-in-Chief. The following is the official account of the battle, so far as it affects the 13th (1st of the 7th):—

"A body of Gokla's regular infantry made an attack in solid column on the 1st—7th regiment, which was on the left of the line, and who had scarcely succeeded in repelling it and a number of horse, when a select body of the enemy's cavalry, seeing their infantry repulsed and pressed by the battalion, who could with difficulty be restrained from pursuing them, made a determined charge on the corps, some of the men wheeling round the flank, and repeating their attack from the rear. The bravery of the men, however, compensated for the disorder into which they had been thrown by the previous attacks, and enabled them, under circumstances of great difficulty, with the powerful co-operation they derived from the left brigade of guns, and a part of the Bombay Regiment, to beat off the assailants, who left many men and horses on the ground, withdrawing to a distance, and never afterwards hazarding a repetition of their attack.

"The light companies of the 1st—7th, which had at first preceded the line, were sent to the rear to keep in check a large body of horse which had watched Major Ford's movement to our support, and who now came down in rear of our right flank."

* The 13th Bombay Native Infantry have "Egypt" (with the Sphinx), "Kirkee," "Beni-Boo-Ali," "Central India," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Under Colonel Milnes they again distinguished themselves a day or two later in the fight which took place on the banks of the Moota Moola. The distinctions of Beni-Boo-Ali and Central India have been before noticed. "Our forces landed," we read in an account of the expedition, "on the bleak, arid, and rocky peninsula, fabled of old as the Rose-garden of Iran, and drove back all who attempted to resist them, and on the 2nd March gained possession of the whole fortified position before sunset. The right brigade, composed of 400 rank and file of H.M. 56th Regiment, and 300 of the 7th Native Infantry, under Colonel Warren, sustained the brunt of the action, and a very heavy loss. Of the Arabs 500 were killed and wounded, and 236 taken prisoners, together with all the guns they had captured from Captain Thompson. Our losses were 29 killed and 173 wounded. The tribe was completely quelled." The 13th did not take part in the Abyssinian war, but were included amongst the Bombay troops which served in Afghanistan in 1879-80.

The 14th Bombay Native Infantry* date from the same period as the regiment just mentioned. They are not fortunate enough to have gained any distinctions.†

The 16th Bombay Native Infantry‡ also date from 1800. Compelled as we are to notice only the conspicuous features in the history of each regiment, we will confine our remarks to the record of the 16th in the Afghan War of 1879-80. For some time they were quartered at Kach,§ and, while there, repulsed, after three hours' hard fighting, a large force of Pathans, numbering some two thousand. The valuable service rendered by the regiment may be estimated by the fact that Colonel Pearce, who was in command, was mentioned in orders and highly praised by the Governor-General.

The 17th Bombay Native Infantry‖ date from 1803. Like the 14th, our remarks on which apply equally to the 17th, they have no distinctions.

The 19th Bombay Native Infantry¶ date from 1817, and is the only Bombay Infantry regiment which has "Ghuznee" and "Afghanistan." The doings of the column under Wiltshire are familiar to all students of that most eventful period. On their return to India they fought throughout the Punjaub Campaign, and took part in the siege of

* The 14th Bombay Native Infantry have red uniform, with yellow facings.

† It must be remembered that a detailed account of the Bombay Army has yet to be written, and it is impossible in the present work to give more than the outlines, or to enter into any of the remoter questions connected with origin or claims of representation of the various regiments.

‡ The 16th Bombay Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

§ This was the left wing and the headquarters.

‖ The 17th Bombay Native Infantry have red uniform, with yellow facings.

¶ The 19th Bombay Native Infantry have "Ghuznee," "Afghanistan," "Punjaub," "Mooltan," "Goojerat," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Moultan and the battle of Goojerat. To the 19th belongs the honour of contributing one of the most heroic and dramatic incidents in the history of the recent Afghan War. We refer to the gallant defence of Dubrai by Major Woudley and a small detachment of the regiment. According to Shadbolt's account, the party consisted only of the Major, two Sepoys of the regiment, one Duffadar, and two Sowars of the 3rd Scinde Horse, and some servants. The only survivor of the detachment wrote:—"At eleven o'clock the post was attacked by some eight hundred men. We defended it as long as our ammunition lasted, and then the enemy rushed in in a body. I was standing next to the Major Sahib, who was defending himself with his sword, and I saw him cut down, and I am certain we killed over twenty-five of the enemy." Subsequently, the 19th were employed in defensive work outside Kandahar, being frequently exposed to attacks. On one occasion, when the working party had to retire under a heavy fire, a Havildar and private "displayed great gallantry in assisting Lieutenants Waller and Jones, R.E., in bringing in a wounded man," and were duly recommended for the Order of Merit. The 19th greatly distinguished themselves on several occasions, notably on the 15th and 16th of August, when they repulsed overwhelming numbers, but at a heavy loss in killed and wounded, including Major Le Poer French and Lieutenant Stayner. Through the rest of the campaign, including the battle of Kandahar, they were distinguished for their courage and soldierly qualities.

The 20th Bombay Native Infantry* date from 1817. General Macleod, who takes the regiment as a typical one, remarks that when raised "it was composed of men of every caste that in those days enlisted as soldiers, for *then* Sikhs, Punjaubees, Afreides, Afghans, and Goorkhas formed no portion of the regular Indian Army. Purwarrees, Mahrattas, Sortees, Deccannees, Mussulmans, Jews, Purdasees (*i.e.* men enlisted in Bengal and North-West Provinces) made up the total, varying from time to time in different proportions, all amenable to strict discipline, and giving no trouble whatever as to "caste," the intricacies of which never interfered with duty or discipline, and were well understood and met by their officers, British and Native.

"On the first day of the month, muster day, every recruit in the Bombay Army enlisted in the interior was marched up to the head of his regiment, and holding in his hand a portion of the 'Colours,' took in his own peculiar dialect this oath of allegiance —'By these colours, I swear I will be faithful to and never desert them all my service;

* The 20th Bombay Native Infantry have "Persia," "Reshire," "Khooshab," "Bushire." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

I will go wherever I am ordered, I will do whatever I am ordered, and in every place and at every time I will be the faithful servant of the State.' And whether by land or sea, in crossing the ocean to foreign wars, in Afghanistan, or to the Persian Gulf, Abyssinia, or to perform any duty similar to their British comrades, those mingled classes of the 20th *never* deviated from their oath." The principal service of the 20th has been in Persia, the various engagements in which have been before described, and we will only add that they were amongst the regiments left to garrison Bushire for a time under General Jacob.

A brief notice must, however, be given in passing, to the gallant conduct of two Sepoys of the regiment at the storming of Fort Bushire, on the 9th December, 1856. Sir James Outram recommended them both for the Victoria Cross, but his recommendation was not attended to. "One of the two men was Subadar Major Mahomed Shereef. He was with the leading section of Captain Wood's company—the Grenadiers—in the assault. He was shot through the leg, but, emulating the example of his captain, he continued to lead on his men, and would not fall out to have his wound dressed until the capture of the fort was complete, and all opposition had ceased. Sepoy Bheer Bhut, of the same regiment, also greatly distinguished himself on the same occasion, displaying not only the most signal gallantry, but also an heroic fortitude under extreme suffering. Whilst advancing to the assault a musket shot shattered his right arm to pieces. Nine hundred and ninety-nine out of a thousand men would have, under such circumstances, gone to the rear for surgical treatment, and no one would have dreamt of blaming them for such a natural proceeding, for a man with a shattered arm is of no use in the ranks. Bheer Bhut's high spirit, however, enabled him to overcome his pain and weakness. By a supreme effort of will he not only kept himself from sinking fainting to the ground, but he actually continued to fight. His right arm being helpless he could not take cartridges from his pouch, but his comrades supplied him with them, and, marvellous to relate, he, with his left arm only, continued to load and discharge his musket."

The 21st Bombay Native Infantry,* the old Marine Battalion, are accorded the earliest official birthday of the Bombay Army, dating from January, 1777. Their history recalls to memory the Indian Navy of former days, which derived its strength nearly entirely from Bombay, and to which was assigned the duty of "guarding the

* The 21st Bombay Native Infantry have an anchor and laurel wreath with a motto, signifying in Hindoostanee, *Per mare, per terram.* They also bear the following distinctions:—"Persian Gulf," "Beni-Boo-Ali," "Burmah," "Aden," "Hyderabad," "Punjaub," "Abyssinia." Their uniform is red, with emerald green facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Malabar coast, and protecting the interests of Britain and India in the Gulfs of Persia and Arabia." The natives who served as marines on board the vessels of the navy were supplied by the Bombay Marine Battalion. It may well be conceived how full of interest would be the full history of this battalion, which recalls the origin and traditions of our own Royal Marines, and in how many of those stubborn sea-fights they helped to retain and strengthen the growing power of our Eastern Empire; in how many unrecorded but gallant affrays they taught the fierce robber chiefs that the supremacy of the Mistress of the Seas was safely entrusted to the Indian Navy and Marines. But we must pass on to glance at the achievements of the regiment in its present organization as commemorated by its distinctions. The most prosaic account of the doings of the British and their Native troops in the Gulf of Persia reads almost like one of Kingsley's or Marryat's stirring "tales of adventure." The Goassamees—as the most powerful tribe of the pirates of the Gulf was named—waxed in daring and ferocity until in May, 1797, writes Grant, "they had the hardihood to capture a British vessel charged with public despatches." This act of insolence was before long followed by an attack upon a Company's cruiser, using for the purpose the very arms and ammunition which, on some plausible pretext, they had obtained from that ship. So matters went on till, in 1804, the Bombay Government began to take active steps, but political considerations prevented any very decided improvement. Captain Mignan, of the Company's service, has left a graphic account of one of the most formidable of these terrible pirates, whose reckless daring was only equalled by their ferocious cruelty. His end was in keeping with his life. One day, rendered confident by the terror caused by his frequent successes, he attacked a large ship and saw that his defeat was certain. Representing to his crew that it was better to perish by their own deed than at the hands of the enemy, he rushed below, fired a match leading to the magazine, and again appeared on deck with, in his arms, his only son. The vessels were lashed together. In a second a terrible explosion occurred, and victors and vanquished alike were hurled into eternity. It seems strange that the numberless atrocities perpetrated by these men were allowed to go so long unpunished. It was not, indeed, till 1819 that the government of Bombay determined to extirpate the pirates, and they then found that they had underrated their strength. In that year a force—including some Bombay Marines—were despatched under Sir W. Keir Grant, and after some mishaps, achieved a decided victory. Before long, however, the troops which had been left at Kishme sustained a severe repulse at the hands of the Beni-Boo-Ali Arabs; and, in

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

1821, Major-General Smith was sent in command of the expedition, the complete success of which has been before noted. With this expedition the Marine Regiment were associated. They took part, too, in the first Burmese campaign (1824), and the pages of Laurie, Havelock, and Snodgrass give ample evidence of the severe nature of the duty which devolved upon them, as might be expected from the nature of the task. They assisted in the capture of Aden; Hyderabad and the Punjaub record the services rendered by them throughout that anxious period of struggle; they took part in the ill-recognised service in Afghanistan, 1840-42.

Though the 21st do not bear any honours specially connected with the Mutiny, we cannot refrain from quoting a testimony to their loyalty recently given by so distinguished an officer as Sir Frederick Goldsmid.

"In contradistinction to the darker pictures of that period, I cannot," he said, "but recall the fact, one which I think it pertinent to mention on the present occasion, that it was through the loyalty of two native officers of the Bombay 21st Regiment, the outbreak was prevented at Kurachi, and the authorities were enabled to seize the twenty or thirty main offenders, and bring them to punishment. Those two native officers came forward, and gave information to their European superiors of the intended action of the mutineers."

The participation of the regiment in the Abyssinian expedition strongly emphasises the applicability of their motto. In that campaign, the Marine Battalion, with the other native troops, "invariably performed, under trying circumstances of heat, cold, and occasional privation, their onerous duties with a cheerfulness and alacrity which won the confidence and official recognition of the distinguished commander."

The 22nd Bombay Native Infantry* date from 1818, and have always been recognised as a smart and efficient regiment. They have not, however, participated in any of the better known of the Indian campaigns. In 1839 they served in the Scinde Reserve Force, and suffered severely from "the deadly fever which broke out in Patta, on the Indus, and which laid low or rendered unfit for service hundreds of them."

The 23rd Bombay Native (Light) Infantry,† though dating officially from 1820, have an earlier record, as will be seen by their distinction of "Kirkee." Respecting

* The 22nd Bombay Native Infantry have red uniform, with emerald green facings.

† The 23rd Bombay Native Infantry have "Kirkee," "Persia," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with emerald green facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

this regiment General Macleod writes as follows:—"The 23rd was composed of a tall body of men, with a large proportion of Purdasees. It was embodied with the Bombay Army in May, 1820, and had 'Kirkee' on its colours. Then it was given over from the Peishwa after the operations in the Deccan in 1818-19, and it had the distinctive privilege of wearing, instead of the stock, three rows of white beads. In this regiment Outram rose, and was its adjutant. He left it to subdue and conciliate the then almost savage Bheels, when he made himself dear to them, useful to the State, and history has done him due justice in recording such honourable service." The distinction of "Light" Infantry was accorded to the 23rd after the Afghan war of 1840. They served in Persia, and in the Afghan war received special thanks from the authorities for the zealous and efficient way in which they performed the duties—principally convoy and escort—which fell to their share.

The 24th Bombay Native Infantry * date from 1820, and took part in the capture of Aden some nineteen years later. They served in Central India, and took part in the Afghan war, performing most arduous outpost and escort duties and suffering heavy mortality.

The 25th Bombay Native (Light) Infantry† date from May, 1820, a few days after the official birthday of the two preceding regiments. They fought in the Afghan war of 1840-42, arriving at Quetta after the murder of Sir A. Barnes at Cabul, and for some time occupied a fort outside the city. "The severity of the winter may be judged when the snow lay deep all along the many miles between Quetta and the Durwaza, and many of the recruits marching to join the 25th Native Infantry died between Scinde and Quetta from exposure to the cold." They then joined General England's column, and occupied Kandahar during the critical struggle which gained for other troops a medal and distinction. On their return to India they fought at Meeanee and Hyderabad, and a few years later were prominent in the good service they rendered during the Mutiny. At Meeanee, where, in echelon of battalions, our troops advanced, to use Napier's words, "as at a review over a fine plain swept by the cannon of the enemy," the 25th were the second battalion, and, with the 12th Native Infantry, were particularly praised by the general. Sir Robert Phayre, then a lieutenant in the regiment, was severely wounded in the action. Under Sir Hugh Rose they fought most brilliantly in Central India. At

* The 24th Bombay Native Infantry have "Aden," "Central India," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is red, with emerald green facings.

† The Bombay Native Infantry have "Meeanee," "Hyderabad," "Central India," "Abyssinia." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings and gold lace.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Ghasin they followed H.M.'s 89th into the "imminent deadly breach," and through the town, every street of which was fiercely contested. At Gwalior the 25th were particularly prominent. An account of the capture is as follows:—"On the 19th June, 1858, Sir Hugh Rose fought a victorious action at Gwalior, and by 4 P.M. was in possession of the city. The celebrated rock citadel still held out, but attack on it was deferred till the next day, for the troops were tired, and it was known that the garrison was small. The impetuosity of two young officers precipitated events. Lieutenant Arthur Rose, 25th Bombay Native Infantry, was sent with a guard to take charge of the police station. A few shots having been fired from the fort, the idea came into Lieutenant Rose's head that he would capture it. Lieutenant Waller, of the same regiment, happened also to be posted near the police station, and to him Rose suggested an attack on, as it were, 'their own hook.' Rose pointed out to Waller that though the exploit was dangerous, the honour would be all the greater if they succeeded. He addressed his words to willing ears, and Waller consented. The two subalterns taking with them a blacksmith with a hammer, deliberately in open day ascended the inclined road which led to the summit. Fired at continually as they proceeded, they succeeded with the help of the blacksmith in breaking open six gates successively. Passing through the last they found themselves on the top of the building, and a severe hand-to-hand fight took place. Rose, while encouraging his men, was shot through the body by a Sepoy, who then rushed forward and inflicted two wounds on him with his sword. Waller hastened to his assistance and cut the fellow down. He was, however, too late to save his comrade, who was mortally wounded and died a few hours later."

The chief subsequent achievements of the 25th have been in Abyssinia and the more recent Burmah campaign.

The 26th BOMBAY NATIVE INFANTRY * were raised in 1825. Their first active service was with the Scinde Reserve Force, during which they suffered severely from disease, after which their principal experience has been gained in Persia, where they remained for some short time after the conclusion of the war. They also served against the Naikras, and gained considerable *éclat* in that troublesome little campaign.

The 27th BOMBAY NATIVE INFANTRY, or 1st Belooch Regiment (Light Infantry) † date from 1844, and are amongst the finest regiments in the army; indeed, General

* The 26th Bombay Native Infantry have "Persia," "Khooshab." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

† The 27th Bombay Native Infantry have "Delhi," "Abyssinia," "Afghanistan, 1879-80." Their uniform is dark green, with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Macleod says of them that "their services and efficiency were never surpassed by those of any other, no matter what Presidency or Native nationality." The Beloochees (the 27th, 29th, and 30th Regiments) are, says a writer, "composed of men of many nations, being of the class known to the Indians as Poorbeea, though called Beloochees; yet these men without fear of losing caste accepted the strange firearms, used the greased cartridges, and fought gallantly against their mutinous comrades in the north-western parts of India." The 1st Beloochees specially distinguished themselves at Delhi, in order to reach which in time they made their memorable march of twelve hundred miles in the hottest part of the year. It is a somewhat strange coincidence that the previous 27th Bombay Native Infantry were one of the few regiments of the Presidency which mutinied, and it will be remembered that it was in punishing them that Lieutenant Kerr, at the head of his Mahratta Horse, gained the Victoria Cross. The next campaign in which the 1st Beloochees were engaged was the one in Abyssinia, in which they well maintained their high reputation. In the Afghan war they were engaged during both campaigns keeping open supplies and performing other important and responsible duties. "For their physique and military bearing, steadiness, and good conduct," writes Shadbolt in his exhaustive narrative, "the regiment received a warm encomium from Sir R. Temple." They have since been employed in Burmah.

The 28th Bombay Native Infantry* date from 1846, though their first record of note is the Afghan war of 1880. They took part in the sortie from Kandahar on the 16th of August in that year, and on that occasion suffered severely, Colonel Newport and thirty troopers being killed, and Colonel Nimmo being thrice wounded. In nearly every sortie made from the city they took part, and on the 1st September they took a prominent part in the decisive battle fought beneath its walls. They formed part of the Indian contingent in the Egyptian war, and fought at Hasheen and in the somewhat disastrous affair of the 22nd of March. This has been more fully described in our remarks on the Berkshire Regiment, but we may mention that the 28th most creditably acquitted themselves, Major Singleton of the regiment being specially distinguished.

The 29th (the Duke of Connaught's Own) Bombay Infantry,† or 2nd Belooch Regiment, date from 1846, and gained their first laurels in the Persian war, all the distinctions gained in which are emblazoned on their colours. They were amongst the

* The 28th Bombay Native Infantry have "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80," "Suakin, 1885," "Tofrek." Their uniform is red, with yellow facings.

† The 29th Bombay Native Infantry have "Persia," "Reshire," "Khooshab," "Bushire," "Kandahar, 1880," "Afghanistan, 1879-80," "Egypt, 1882," "Tel-el-Kebir." Their uniform is dark green, with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

troops detailed to stay for awhile in Bushire. They joined the army in Afghanistan in the autumn of 1878, and were attached to General Biddulph's Division. They fought at Takht-i-pul and Khushk-i-Nakhud, at Khelat-i-Ghilzie and Shah Jui, and in August, 1880, joined the army under Sir F. Roberts and fought in the battle of Kandahar. On the outbreak of the Egyptian war, the 2nd Beloochees were amongst the regiments warned for service, and eventually joined Sir H. Macpherson's column, fighting in the first phase of the war, and distinguishing themselves at Tel-el-Kebir. H.R.H. the Duke of Connaught is Hon. Colonel of the regiment.

The 30th Bombay Native Infantry,* or 3rd Belooch Battalion (late Jacob's Rifles), date from 1858. They owe their origin to General Jacobs, whose name they bear, and to whom it was due that, while the native troops were armed with the old musket, Jacob's Rifles were equipped with the very superior weapon which had been invented by their founder. The first—and only—important warfare in which they have been engaged was the Afghan war, and the battle with which they are most associated is Maiwand. On this fatal occasion Jacob's Rifles, under Colonel Mainwaring, were posted on the extreme left, and very early began to experience the whole shock of the struggle. They were forced back step by step. In the overwhelming charge made towards the end by the Ghazis, the regiment is reported to have been "completely rolled up," but some were left to join their comrades of the Bombay Grenadiers and of the 66th in their last desperate stand. As may be imagined, the loss was very heavy; Captain Smith was killed at the very commencement of the action, Lieutenants Cole and Justice soon followed, of the Native officers and men there fell no fewer than two hundred. Seldom indeed has it fallen to the lot of a British or British-Indian regiment to count amongst its services so terrible a struggle as that at Maiwand. So completely does Time obscure impressions which at first seemed indelible, that it is probable few now realize the awful episodes of that July day. The more detailed account of the part sustained by Jacob's Rifles shows that at first they were in the rear, but a wing was shortly ordered up to the left. "*Three hours* were thus spent under fire of the Afghan cannon. The shot from the enemy's guns, and from the carbines of a mass of cavalry, who fired at a distance, tore amongst the British guns and infantry, and cut up the ground in every direction around them. This alone was enough to shake the steadiness of the best troops in the world, much less that of native soldiers, whose method of warfare lay in attack, not in passive slaughter."

* The 30th Bombay Native Infantry have "Afghanistan, 1878-80." Their uniform is dark green, with red facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Jacob's Rifles then formed part of the garrison of Kandahar; and on the 16th August, Lieutenants Salmon and Adye, who were both attached to the regiment, highly distinguished themselves by affording assistance to officers and men wounded at Deli Khwaja. Captain Harrison similarly distinguished himself at Maiwand. Before the regiment returned to India, their loss amounted to over three hundred of all ranks.

Space will not permit of our treating of the various departmental establishments of the Bombay Army. In them—as in the sister services of the other Presidencies—are men of all ranks who have deserved well of their country, who have upheld that country's honour at many a critical juncture, and who have aided not a little to the establishment on its firm basis of the mighty and beneficent Imperial rule. True it is that there are not wanting here and there those who question this stability, who belittle the might and carp at the beneficence. But those whose voices have greatest weight, point to the native army as at once a factor and a proof of the stability we boast, and cite with pride the numerous instances—some of which we have alluded to—of that "mutual goodwill and esteem which has bound together the British and Native forces, and carried them triumphantly through many a well-contested field of battle against outnumbering foes."

The consideration of the MILITARY FORCES OF THE DOMINION OF CANADA brings before us a system not hitherto considered in these pages. There is no "regular" army, but foes and rebels have before now learned to their cost that there is an armed nation. A poet of the neighbouring country of America gave utterance to the graphic, if somewhat hackneyed, couplet about the "embattled farmers," who "fired the shot heard round the world." The description is exactly applicable to the Canadian Militia, save that their arms have been borne only in loyal service to the Imperial Crown.

We shall not far err when we look for some of the forefathers of the Canadian Militia of to-day in the levies raised in Virginia in the middle of the 18th century, when the French—to whom Canada then belonged—commenced hostile operations against the New England States. Earlier even than that had Colonial forces proved their worth; with the troops under Pepperell, which took Louisburg in 1745, were some local levies, and it is worthy of note that the party which, at Fort Duquesne, fired the shot that "kindled the world into a flame,"* was commanded by George Washington, then an able and trusted officer in the British army. Doubtless, too, others of their prototypes

* Bancroft.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

are to be sought for in the ranks of those who, loyal to the Crown of France, fought so stubbornly and, it must be added, so savagely against the British at Lake George, Fort William Henry, Ticonderoga, and Quebec. For it must not be forgotten that Canada was at first an exclusively French possession, its complete cession to England being so comparatively recent as 1763, when it was effected by the Treaty of Paris. Indian history has shown us, as in the case of the Sikhs and Goorkhas, that fierce and resolute foes make oftentimes the most valued subjects. In the case of Canada we are reminded of the boast made by Shakespeare's typical Prince and Englishman:

"Percy is but my factor, good my lord."

Mindful of the courage, the tenacity of purpose, and warlike achievements of French Canada—mindful, too, with pride of the circumstances under which the "lilies on the white flag" were displaced for the Royal Standard of England, we can claim with justice that France was but our factor in the brave story which the Dominion claims as its own. The years which followed the Treaty of Paris were eventful ones for the newly-won daughter-land. It has been well said that "no part of our world-wide Colonial domain has passed through so many or such stormy stages of existence. Nowhere within the circuit of the Crown territory have peace and war, union and disunion, loyalty and rebellion, followed each other in such quick succession; nowhere have the loyalty of the subject and the prestige of the nation been more sorely tried, and nowhere have they been more nobly vindicated or more heroically sustained than in Canada.* Scarcely a score of years passed before the American States threw off their allegiance to the Crown of England, and amongst those who fought most bravely for "king and country" were the mixed population of Canada. But even then there was but little "mixture"—at any rate, in a harmful sense. To adopt the happy phrase attributed to one of the earliest governors, the French Canadian soon became, so far as the outside world was concerned, "an Englishman speaking the French language." Perhaps there are few more noticeable facts in the history of nations than the active, as distinguished from mere passive, loyalty of the Canadians at the period of the revolt of the States.

"The readiness of the Canadians," remarks a writer, "to see the long frontier along which two-thirds of them live converted into an Anglo-American battle-ground, was the more surprising, if we reflect on the relations existing between themselves and the States. Averse as they are to American rule, superior as they think themselves to the foibles and peculiarities of the 'Yankee,' the intercourse between the two countries,

* The name "Canada" is a corruption of "Kanata," an Iroquois word for a village.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

public and private, has for many years been one of the closest intimacy." In the revolt of the States, as in the war of 1812, and subsequently, the national character appeared to indicate, not obscurely, the best results of the fusion of races. "The British Canadians of the west did not belie their descent, the French population of the east woke up to the fight with the gay and gallant spirit of their chivalrous forefathers." In the fighting which took place, the national traits forced themselves into observation in a thousand ways. Not more various are the natural characteristics of their country than are the temperaments of her warriors. "It is a country of extremes, and Nature conducts all her operations in North America on a gigantic scale. The lakes are inland seas; the rivers are as wide as what the men of Dover and Holyhead call channels; what is called in England a home-view is a thing quite unknown in Canada and the Western States; their woods are forests and their plains are prairies; the hottest and coldest days at Quebec show every year a variation of a hundred and twenty degrees; their fair weather is the most beautiful in the world, and there are days rough, foul, and dingy as Erebus; their winds are often hurricanes, and rain falls like an avalanche. That the country is not mountainous may be gathered from the fact that for nine hundred miles along the whole extent of the Grand Trunk Railroad, which nowhere makes any very great détour, there is not one tunnel, and very few cuttings of any considerable depth. There are many steep abrupt eminences in the province, and it is remarkable that many of these exist where the character of the surrounding scenery is flat."

The earlier history of our relations with Canada affords, indeed, a notable instance of the vagaries played by the whirligig of time. Then British armaments were dispatched to America as to a friendly and subject dependency, while Canada welcomed the French troops that arrived within her territories, and were there reinforced by the unerring rifle of the settler and the deadly scalping knife of the native. Now, whenever apprehension of "strained relations" arises—never, it is to be hoped, destined to pass beyond the apprehensive stage—it is with America. Canada is loyal to the uttermost. It will be of interest to note in this connection the opinions held by thoughtful men of the value to the mother country of the Dominion at the time of the war of 1812, when, as now, some were asking, *Cui bono?* The late Mr. Coffin, in his admirable work on the war—a work to which we shall more than once have occasion to refer—wrote: "It is beyond dispute that the North American provinces and Canada especially were indispensable to England at the period of the great war in Europe. At the time that she was excluded from the ports of the Baltic, her best supplies of timber came from Canada,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and the non-intercourse acts of the United States had thrown her for this article almost exclusively on the resources of the North American colonies. One of the strongest arguments for war in the Congress of the United States was that employed in 1811 by Mr. Porter, the chairman of the committee on foreign affairs, in reference to the conquest of Canada. 'These provinces,' said the speaker, 'are not only immensely valuable, but almost indispensable to the existence of Great Britain, cut off, as she now is in a great measure, from the North of Europe.' Canada, in fact, made rich return for the expense of defending her by the supplies afforded to the West India Colonies and to meet the home demand. The war with Napoleon proved the value of these colonies, and a war with Russia might show it again."*

The principal occasions on which the military forces of Canada have been engaged in actual hostilities are the War of American Independence, the war of 1812, the rebellion of 1837-38, the Fenian raid, the Red River expedition, and the North-West rebellion. The earliest date of any regiment on the present organisation is 1855, but no sketch of the history of the Canadian Militia would be complete without some notice of the earlier and more important wars, in which the predecessors of the present force established their claim to rank amongst the warriors of the time. It would, indeed, be impossible to give an adequate idea of the fighting capacity of the Dominion Militia without so doing. It was remarked, during the war which terminated in the capture of Quebec, that the provincial soldiers who, under General Johnson, contributed not a little to the decisive victory at Lake George, in the morning fought like boys, about noon like men, and in the afternoon like devils ;† and a later and more judicial review has put it on record that "with regard to the fighting qualities of the Canadian soldiers, there is no reason to doubt that, when properly led by their officers, they would show the magnificent qualities already shown by the Anglo-Saxon and Gallic races on the European and American battle-fields."

It will assist to a due appreciation of the military history of the Dominion if we quote in this place a review of the defensive features of the country.

Earthworks have been built along the western entrance to the harbour of Toronto. At Kingston there are moats, battlements, and escarpments, though we are told that they are but a semblance. "Martello towers, too, dot the circumference of the harbour,

* The above was written in 1864.

† The remark is attributed to the French General, Dieskau, who was taken prisoner and sent to England, where he remained some time. Considering the savagery displayed more or less on both sides, it is satisfactory to record that he highly eulogised the courtesy of the Colonial officers.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

HALIFAX GARRISON ARTILLERY.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and with an Armstrong gun planted on the platform at the top of them, seem of undeniable utility in protecting the entrance of the St. Lawrence, and the Rideau Canal to Ottawa. At the mouth of the Niagara river is our only other fortification along the lake. Within three hundred yards of a similar building on the American side, stands Fort St. George, the smaller and less pretentious of the two, but apparently of greater strength and solidity than the lath-and-plaster looking barrack on the opposite shore."

Near Niagara, some fifteen miles or so from the city of that name, once more important than now, is rising a village and town in the neighbourhood of which many events in "the history of Canada have taken place, the battle of Queenstown Heights, memorable for the victory and death of Brock; the battle of Lundy's Lane; and in later years, the celebrated seizure of the *Caroline*."

The constitution of the present Militia Force is as follows:—

Cavalry: Fourteen Regiments, inclusive of the School Corps and Body Guard and four Independent Troops.

Field Artillery: Seventeen Brigades.

Garrison Artillery: Nineteen Brigades.

Mountain Artillery: One Brigade.

Engineers: Three Companies.

Mounted Infantry: One Company.

Infantry: Ninety-six Brigades, exclusive of the Infantry School Corps and the Governor-General's Foot Guards. Three independent companies.

The military districts are Ontario, Quebec, New Brunswick, Nova Scotia, Manitoba, British Columbia, Prince Edward Island. Ontario is divided into four districts, having eight Brigade Divisions; Quebec into three, having the same number; New Brunswick is one, having three Brigade Divisions; Nova Scotia is one, having the same number; Manitoba, British Columbia, and Prince Edward Island respectively constitute the 10th, 11th, and 12th Military Districts. Bearing in mind what we have before observed as to the dates of the present organization, it will be seen that the existing regiments *as such* are unable to make the claim of corporate identity with the old corps whose names have been made so familiar by their prowess at Quebec, Lake George, Queenstown, and Chateauguay, and by the leadership of Brock and Prevost, Macknab, Robinson, and Evans. The early chronicle of the Militia achievements has been thus summarized: "The Canadian Militia is celebrated in history; and if agricultural industry and peaceful occupations have during late years led them to abandon the sword-hilt for the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

plough-handle, there is no reason to doubt that in younger veins there still flows the blood of the gallant North-East Loyalists, and the descendants of those who fought with Carleton and Brock are inspired with the same patriotism and horror of annexation that nerved the hardy muscles of their ancestors. In 1775, during the first aggression of the States after their renunciation of allegiance, it was chiefly owing to the Militia of the province that the enemy, after a brief winter campaign, in which Montgomerie was killed under the walls of Quebec, were driven back across the frontier. Again, in the war of 1812, when tardy reinforcements from England added but little to the strength of the regulars, it was to the local Militia that General Brock and Sir George Prevost were chiefly indebted for successes which terminated in a peace signed at Ghent in 1814, a peace by no means satisfactory to the Canadians, who were just beginning to turn the tables on the invaders by frequent inroads upon American territory."

We shall glance very briefly at the events which led to the capture of Canada; to the revolt of the colonies which cemented the new-welded relationship of the Dominion and mother country; to the war of 1812, aptly described as "an episode in the story of a young people glorious in itself and full of promise." We shall refer to the warlike occurrences of the present reign, in which many individuals of the present army have distinguished themselves, and we shall trace as far as is possible within our limits the history of the existing corps, and their connection, transmitted or actual, with the struggles of the country.

"Ancient history" is falling out of fashion, yet it is doubtful whether many works have been written of late years equalling in interest the now well-nigh forgotten works, *Montcalm and Wolfe*, or Knox's History of the Louisbourg and Quebec expeditions. We obtain glimpses of British soldiers fighting in an unknown territory, under unfamiliar circumstances, against foes formidable for their very strangeness. We see the Indian, round whom novelists have wrought so strange a glamour of sentiment and romance, in his true colours, in which mingle all shades of lust, ferocity, and squalor, brightened by gleams of savage heroism and untaught chivalry. We see the Provincials—English and French—exhibiting with the traditionary qualities of their race characteristics acquired in prairie warfare and settlement raid. When the struggle commenced, "the English occupied a mere patch of land on the eastern seaboard of America, hemmed in on all sides by the French, who occupied not only Canada in the north and Louisiana in the south, but possessed a chain of posts connecting them, so cutting off the English from all access to the vast countries of the west." The English colonists, though superior

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

in number to the French, and possessing the colonising instinct, in which they are unrivalled, were weakened by interprovincial divisions and jealousies, and were thus able to render but fitful assistance to the royal troops at the commencement of the struggle. They had, however, an important source of strength in the friendship which the traders had cultivated with the Indians. So effectively, indeed, had they shown the latter the identity of their interests with British supremacy, that in 1751 the emissary of the French Governor of Canada reported that English influence was supreme in the valley of Ohio. The first overt act of hostilities was the capture of an English fort garrisoned by forty men by a French force of some five hundred, shortly followed by the surprise by Washington, at the head of the Virginia regiment, of a reconnoitring body of the enemy. Events marched fast then. England and France were formally at war, the imprudent appointment of General Braddock to the command of the British troops gave a temporary advantage to the French. Virginians and Canadians were pitted against each other at Little Meadows and Lake George; Mohawks and Iroquois were ranged on opposite sides; Lyman led the men of Connecticut and Massachusetts to victory against Dieskau. Then appeared on the scene the giants of the conflict, Montcalm, de Levis, Vaudreuil; Amherst, Howe, and Wolfe. The massacre at Fort William Henry was followed by the destruction of the French settlements on the Gulf of St. Lawrence; while the French were successful at Ticonderoga, the English captured Louisbourg and Duquesne, and destroyed Fort Frontenac. Of the sixteen thousand troops whom Montcalm commanded at Quebec a large portion were Canadians; with Wolfe were several provincial regiments from New England. During the siege the British commander issued proclamations calling upon the Canadians to stand neutral and promising them full protection of their lives and liberties, a promise eloquently prophetic of what was shortly after—and ever since—to be observed. There is no need to describe how Quebec was captured, but in pages devoted to the early history of the Provincial Militia it will not be out of place to emphasize the fact that it was at the head of the Louisbourg Grenadiers that the heroic Wolfe met his death. The victory was followed by the flight of the French; before long Montreal—the old Mont Royal of the days of Cartier—was besieged by the English; and "on the 8th September, 1760, Vaudreuil signed the capitulation by which Canada and all its dependencies passed to the English Crown."

It was but natural that some friction should exist in a country thus transferred abruptly from one power to another, and whose population was composed of the compatriots of their past and present co-subjects. No drastic measures were taken, such as

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

those the fictitious causes and consequences of which have been immortalised in the sweet stately lines of "Evangeline." It is, of course, somewhat heartrending to realise that the simple Acadian farmers, whom their eulogist describes as alike

> "free from
> Fear that reigns with the tyrant, and envy, the vice of republics,"

should, according to the prosaic muse of actual history, have refused in despite of treaties to give up their "allegiance to the crown of France, erected forts, and in various ways sought to aid their countrymen in a project for conquering the province." Yet so, undoubtedly, it was, and considering the position of Great Britain at the time, it is scarcely to be wondered at if the Government of George III. considered that so much patriotism should be transferred from a state where it was not to be distinguished from treason. Five years later, when all the colonies belonging to France in North America became the property of England, the pastoral dwellers in Acadie were allowed to return to their homes in the fruitful valley on the condition of their avowing themselves British subjects. When Canada was surrendered to Great Britain the population, English and French, were left to "settle themselves." After a few years legislation was tried, but without much effect so far as removing the grievances of the mixed population, and in 1775 the rebellious States of America thought they had but to speak the word and Canada would hasten to throw off her allegiance. Never was expectation so falsified. "The sometime French on the north of the St. Lawrence had no sympathy with the sometime English on the south. They welcomed the crowd of loyalists, as they were called, who crossing the river, came to continue their allegiance to the British Crown in Quebec and Montreal, and prompt measures were taken to renew the defences of the border, and to support the mother country in her efforts to suppress the revolution. Old Canadians who had done battle with British troops now prepared to fight by their side, and colonial loyalists who had lately taken part with their brethren in the conquest of Canada now made ready to turn their arms against their former comrades."* It was to be no exhibition of mere lip loyalty. An army of between four and five thousand men at once invaded the north; Chambly, St. John's, and Montreal were captured by Montgomery, and the outlook became gloomy. We cannot better summarize the results of the American attempt upon Canada than in the words of the writer above quoted:—"But Benedict Arnold (in

* Fox Bourne, "The Story of Our Colonies."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

command of another division of the invading force) fared ill in his attempt upon Quebec. Scant provisions and bad weather caused trouble on the march, and the garrison of Quebec held out till it was reinforced by fugitives from Montreal and the other captured forts. The conquerors of these forts passed down the St. Lawrence to aid their comrades, and in December the whole besieging force was united, under Montgomery, to attack Quebec, in which nearly all the defenders of the Colony were congregated. They were not thought very formidable. Only nine hundred British troops were there, and it was expected that the civilians under arms would easily be turned from their allegiance. But they were firm and brave. On the 8th of December Montgomery summoned the town to surrender. His flag was fired upon, and his messengers were ignominiously expelled. After some other futile efforts, Montgomery attempted to surprise the town by a device similar to that in which, as a subordinate, he had shared with Wolfe sixteen years before. Like Wolfe, he paid for his valour with his life on the heights of Abraham. But there the likeness ended. The assailants, panic-stricken at their loss, hastily retreated; and in spite of the energy shown by Arnold, they refused to repeat the attack. They loitered in Canada and its neighbourhood for several months, and reinforcements came from New England. But reinforcements also came from Old England. The intruders were expelled step by step from Montreal and all the other forts which they had taken, and in September, 1776, the wreck of the invading army went home to report that the attempt to conquer Canada was hopeless." May such be the lament of all who at any time threaten or attempt the conquest—not of Canada alone—but of any particle of land over which waves the meteor flag! In this war of loyalty against rebellion did the soldiers of British Canada first act together, and if we do not dwell at greater length on their achievements it is because we shall find more visible traces of the origin of the present military system in the war of 1812, a war which the incidents of the rebellion of the States rendered inevitable. As an historian aptly puts it: "The people on both sides were dissatisfied with the results of the contest. Neither had had enough; each had still an old grudge to settle. The British were keen for a fight, the Americans were keener, and grasped at the first inviting opportunity."

This war, as did the rebellion, found the Canadians still chafing and immersed in domestic and internal dissensions, and once again did the Americans calculate on a half-hearted resistance, if not on a general adherence. It was even asserted by a Minister in Congress that America could take Canada without soldiers. "We have only to send officers into the provinces, and the people, disaffected towards their own government,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

will rally round our standard." Again was the expectation disappointed. The Americans judged others by themselves; they had found rebellion sit easily enough on their own shoulders, and naturally expected that the Canadians, because they had grievances which they wished to be redressed, would with equal facility throw fealty to the winds. The splendid militia battalions raised within six weeks by the Dominion gave an answer easy to be understood. The Canadians "desired justice from England, but they had no wish to swerve from their allegiance, and they had no liking for the republicanism, in their judgment violent and offensive, of the United States." Probably, too, an innate sense of chivalry prevented them from choosing this moment of all others for adding to the troubles which threatened the very existence of Great Britain, as the successive waves of some ocean tempest assault with ever crescent fury the stout old ship which rides them so fearlessly. "Three days after the American declaration of war," writes Alison, "Wellington crossed the Agueva to commence the Salamanca campaign. Six days after, Napoleon passed the Niemen on his way to Moscow at the head of 380,000 men." At the actual outbreak of the war the military strength of Canada was very weak. Irrespective of the regiments of the regular army, the Upper and Lower Provinces between them did not amount to 4,000 men "not all called out, unarmed and undisciplined, and possessing little of the appearance and quality of soldiers, except pluck." War was declared on the 18th June, 1812; before barely three weeks had elapsed the American General Hull invaded Canada; on the 17th July Captain Roberts with two hundred men, of whom a hundred and sixty were Canadian Voyageurs, captured the American fort on Mackinaw Island; before a month was over the gallant Brock led the York Volunteers to the capture of Detroit. This was the first occasion on which the Militia had been engaged, and all Canada was electrified. And well it might be. Brock's force was about 400 militia, 300 regulars, and the allied levies of the Shawanee Indians numbering some six or seven hundred. By the capitulation extorted from the Americans, "the whole of the Michigan territory, Fort Detroit, a ship of war, thirty-three pieces of cannon, stores to correspond and military chest, 2,500 troops, and one stand of colours" were surrendered to the British. Such was the first syllable of the answer to the American boast, "We have the Canadians as much at our command as Great Britain has the ocean."

The Canadian Voltigeurs and Fencibles were actively employed in guarding the frontier, and so efficient had the Militia become, that when what Christie describes as "a light brigade of élite" was formed under the command of Colonel Young of the King's, the Fencibles and the flank companies of the embodied Militia were included in it. The

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Americans, meanwhile, were concentrating their forces, and showed some activity at Niagara and Detroit. Some skirmishes and a smart naval exploit on the part of Lieutenant Elliot, made the Americans arrogantly sanguine; they were going to walk through Canada and annihilate the British Power.* The Canadian Militia bided their time. Under the energetic command of the gallant Brock they were becoming a strong and imposing army, and the battle of Queenstown Heights gave a stern check alike to the braggadocio and the advance of the rebel army. The victory at Queenstown Heights was a memorable event in the history of the Canadian Militia; in the roll of the conquering regiments we find the titles which still linger in the Canadian Army; in the Militia list of to-day are still to be read the names which had become as household words, on the 13th of October, when

"Many a darkness into the light had leapt
And shone in the sudden making of glorious names."

"There is not," writes the eloquent historian of the war, "on this continent a more imposing situation or a lovelier scene than is presented from the noble plateau immortalised as Queenstown Heights. Rising in rich undulation from the alluvial shore which, at a distance of seven miles, subsides into Lake Ontario, they form the height of land through which, for twenty miles back, the river and cataract of Niagara cleave their resistless way. They trend away westerly until they reach Hamilton, and constitute the great embankment which dams back the superincumbent waters of Lake Erie. The noble river, boiling, rushing, eddying,—which, 500 yards wide, rushes through the gorge at the right-hand side of the spectator, now spanned by a gossamer bridge, 800 feet of wire tracery,—separates, as with a barrier of steel, the 'clearings' of experiment from the domain of experience—the United States from British territory. In the early morning before day broke, the desperate few of the enemy, the 'forlorn hope,' had manned the first boats, and under the command of Colonel Van Ranselaer, gained the Canadian shore. The force there stationed consisted of two companies of the 49th and about 200 of the York Militia. One 18-pounder gun was in position, on a spur of the heights, and a carronade raked the river from a point about a mile below. The American force, covered by the fire of two 18-pounders and two field-pieces from their own side, effected a landing with little loss. One officer was slain in the boats by a ball from the gun at the point.

* The following extract from the Brock Correspondence thoroughly bears out the contention that the people on both sides were, as Napier would put it, "of a ready temper for battle." Colonel Baines, in relating his visit to Denborn, writes of the American Militia :—"I found a very general prejudice prevailing with Jonathan of his own resources and means of invading these provinces, and of our weakness and inability to resist, both exaggerated in most absurd and extravagant degree."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

More troops and some militiamen crossed, until about 1,300 men were in line, and in front of them the British outposts. The resistance made was desperate, the assailants were as resolute. The voices of the American officers could be heard above the rattle of the musketry with the cry of 'On, men! on! for the honour of America.' The reply again was a dogged cheer and the rattle of musketry. In a short time Colonel Van Ranselaer was desperately wounded in four places. Good men and officers had fallen around him. The captains commanding the 40th companies had both fallen wounded. The fire of the 18-pounder was of no avail in that part of the field. It would have been more fatal to friend than to foe. At this moment Brock rode up. Awakened at daybreak by the firing, and fully anticipating attack, he called for his good horse Alfred, and, followed by his staff, galloped up from Fort George. He passed without drawing rein through the village, reached the 18-pounder battery, dismounted, and was covering the field through his telescope, when a fire was opened on the rear of the field work from a height above, which had been hardily gained during this brief interval by Captain Wool and a detachment of American regulars, up an almost inaccessible fisherman's path. The volley was promptly followed by a rush; Brock and his suite had no time to remount; they quickly retired with the twelve men who manned the battery. There was neither space, nor time, nor thought for generalship—all was sheer fighting. Williams, of the 49th, with a detachment of 100 strong, charged up the hill against Wool's men, who were repelled, but reinforced, charged again; notwithstanding which 'in the struggle which ensued the whole were driven to the edge of the bank.' Here, with the storming foe before them, a precipice of 180 feet behind, and the roaring Niagara beneath, some craven spirit quailed—an attempt was made to raise the white flag—Wool tore it down and trampled it under foot. The re-inspired regulars opened a scathing fire of musketry. Brock, who, in front, roused beyond himself, had forgotten the general in the soldier, conspicuous by his height, dress, gesture, and undaunted bearing, was pointing to the hill, and had just shouted, 'Push on the brave York Volunteers,' when he was struck by a ball in the right breast, which passed through his left side. He fell. His last words were, that his death should be concealed from his men, and that his remembrance should be borne to his sister; and thus died a brave soldier, an able leader, and a good man, who honoured by his life and ennobled by his death the soil on which he bled, and whose name remains, ever beloved and respected, a household word and a household memory in Canada."

The fight was yet undetermined. The "brave York Volunteers," with their dead

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

chief's last words ringing in their ears, pushed on, and by their fierce charge forced the enemy to spike their gun and retire, but even as they charged MacDonnell who led them fell mortally wounded. The position of both parties was critical, but that of the Americans the more so, owing to the unreliable character of many of the provincial levies. These men who but a few days before had been loudest in shouting "Forward" were now the stubbornest in holding back. The brave Wool was fighting gallantly and desperately in their very sight, but these heroes who were so determined to "do or die," now quailed at the sight of danger, and urged qualms of conscience and constitutional scruples as a plea for their poltroonery. Canada, forsooth, was not New York State, and they could not lawfully risk their precious lives, except in defence of their native soil.* General Sheaffe now took command of the Royal troops. Advancing from Fort George with about eight hundred men, including companies of the Lincoln and Chippewa Militia, he attacked the Americans on their front and left. The end came quickly now. "The Americans fought on manfully but hopelessly. The fatal semicircle narrowed more and more—a volley here—scattered shots there—amid the wild yell of the Indian, the shout of the soldier, the shriek of the wounded, the hoarse word of command, amid smoke and dust, and tumult, and groans and execration, the last vengeful rush was made, and every living American swept from the summit of that blood-stained hill. . . . Major-General Wadsworth and about 1,100 American officers and soldiers surrendered, unconditionally, prisoners of war. The American loss by bullet, steel, and flood had been near 400 men."

We have said that the victory at Queenstown Heights was a memorable one for the Canadian army. Amongst the provincial troops engaged were Cameron's, Howard's, and Chisholme's companies of the York Militia; Crook's and McEwen's flank companies of the 1st Lincoln; Nellie's and W. Crook's companies of 4th Lincoln; Hale's, Durand's, and Applegate's companies of the 5th Lincoln; Major Merritt's Yeomanry corps, and a party of Swayzee's Militia Artillery; Captain R. Hamilton's and Stone's flank companies of the 2nd Lincoln and Volunteer Sedentary Militia.

But we will continue the retrospect of the war. A strong body of Americans† attacked Fort St. Regis, garrisoned by Lieutenant Rototte and some twenty men. After some sharp fighting, in which the lieutenant and seven men were killed, the remainder were taken prisoners. Mr. Coffin adds: "In a cupboard of the wigwam of the Indian Interpreter was found a Union Jack, on gala days the worthy object of

* Coffin.

† Numbering about four hundred.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Indian adoration. This windfall was announced to the world as the 'Capture of a stand of colours.' 'The first colours taken during the war.' Dozens of them might have been obtained at far less cost in any American shipyard." Retaliation followed swiftly. Colonel McMillan led some hundred and forty men of the Cornwall and Glengarry Militia, with some of the Welsh Regiment, against the American Fort at Salmon River. The Loyalist troops were little more than a third of the number which captured the "first stand of arms during the war" at St. Regis, and the garrison was at least twice as strong as the devoted little band under Rototte. The result, however, was that "one captain, two subalterns, and forty-one men were taken, with four batteaux and fifty-seven stand of arms." The Cornwall and Glengarry men cannot be accused of parsimony in the return of compliments.

If it is true that "ridicule kills," the Canadians may be credited with the practical annihilation of the American General Smyth, nicknamed by his ungrateful countrymen General Von Bladder. The pictures illustrating the fable of the frog and the ox are familiar to all, and it needs but to give to the ox the features of the great Napoleon, and to the frog those of the redoubtable Smyth, to thoroughly appreciate the position. A lively, if flippant, historian of our own day, in describing the tension which existed between England and the United States fifty years later, wrote, "Mr. Seward always was a terribly eloquent dispatch writer." Smyth was beyond all expression eloquent—or what he intended to be eloquent—as a proclamation utterer. The most bombastic addresses of Napoleon were, to use a colloquialism, scarcely "in it," with those which Smyth promulgated. His army was styled the "Army of the Centre," and the things that army was going to accomplish were terrifying to contemplate. Smyth began by capturing, at the head of four hundred men, a battery manned by between sixty and seventy British. He then retreated, leaving a garrison of about the same number, who were promptly all made prisoners after a feeble resistance. He then made another demonstration in force, which one gun and some musketry threw into confusion, and General Von Bladder collapsed under a thousand punctures of contempt and indignation.

With the dawn of 1813 the Canadian Militia made another leap towards lusty life and vigour. "In addition to the force already raised, the Militia was augmented by a draft in Lower Canada. A battalion was embodied in Quebec (the 6th) for garrison duty. A Canadian Fencible Regiment, a regiment of Glengarries, and a regiment of Voltigeurs were recruited diligently and with success. The New Brunswick regular regiment (the 104th) in the month of March explored, for the first time, the wintry wilderness

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

lying between Fredericton, on the river St. John, and the St. Lawrence." With regard to the Voltigeurs, an extract from the *Quebec Gazette* of 1812 gives the following reference to this renowned corps.

"This corps (of Voltigeurs) now forming under the command of Major de Salaberry, is completing with a despatch worthy of the ancient warlike spirit of the country. Captain Perrault's company was filled up in forty-eight hours, and was yesterday passed by His Excellency the Governor; and the companies of Captains Duchesnay, Panet, and L'Ecuyer have now nearly their complement. The young men move in solid columns towards the enlisting officers with an expression of countenance not to be mistaken. The Canadians are awaking from the repose of an age secured to them by good government and virtuous habits. Their anger is fresh, the object of their preparation simple and distinct. They are to defend their King, known to them only by acts of kindness, and a native country long since made sacred by the exploits of their forefathers." The newly-raised troops had soon opportunity to flesh their maiden blades. In January, Proctor, at the head of some Regulars and Militia, completely defeated Harrison at French Town, with a loss of two hundred and fifty killed, and five hundred and thirty prisoners, including three field officers and Harrison himself. In February it was determined to make a demonstration against Ogdensburg, a strong military post on the American side of the St. Lawrence, and occupied by a somewhat formidable garrison. This demonstration was led by Colonel MacDonnell, the commanding officer of the Glengarry Fencibles. Something like personal feeling spurred MacDonnell on this occasion. He had been insulted by the American leaders; had, in fact, been actually challenged to measure his strength against theirs on the frozen arena of the mighty St. Lawrence. He was ready enough to pick up the gauntlet, and his men, the Glengarries, raised entirely in Central Canada, were every whit as eager as was he. These Glengarries, of whom we shall hear more later on, were the immediate successors of the old Scottish loyalists, who, as early as 1785, had begun to emigrate to the Dominion, and to whom were added, almost bodily, the old Glengarry Regiment raised by MacDonnell of Glen Urquhart for the British service, and disbanded in 1803. These fine soldiers were, thanks to the exertions and interest of their founder and chaplain, allowed to emigrate *en masse* to the colony already peopled by many of their kindred. Jacobites and Hanoverians, Tories and Whigs, Catholic and Protestant, they were now all united for the old country. They might cavil as to the extent of the royal prerogative, but they had nothing in common with the men who had discarded

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

prerogative and loyalty alike, and so, as the historian puts it, "regardless of names, genealogies, or dynasties, they looked to the principle, and whether it was for James, or whether it was for George, struck heartily home to the abiding sentiment of Claverhouse :—

'Ere the King's crown comes down, there are crowns to be broke.'"

These were the men that stern old MacDonnell led against Ogdensburg. He amused the enemy for awhile by feigning to be merely exercising. When he had thus lessened the distance, forming his men into two columns, he dashed across. Though met by a heavy fire, the left column, commanded by the chief himself, carried all before them, and then by terrible exertions got their guns up to the front. The right wing, commanded by Captain Jenkins of the Glengarries, had a harder task. Straight in front of him were seven guns well supported. The column was broken, as well it might be, yet none shrank from his cheery "Come on!" His left arm was hit; still he led them on. Then the uplifted sword sank as his right arm was shattered. Still his voice failed not nor his gestures till he fell from loss of blood, still, it is pleasing to relate, to be spared to his king and country for many years. The Glengarries pushed home, MacDonnell's cannon opened against their assailants, and Ogdensburg was captured. Amongst those who distinguished themselves were Captain Lefebevre, of the Royal Newfoundland Regiment, Colonel Frazer, Lieutenants Empey and M'Aulay, and Ensigns MacDonnell, Kerr, and Mackay, all of the Glengarries and other Militia troops. The men of the Glengarries and Militia fought again at York and Fort St. George, vindicating their gallantry against irresistible odds. In the attack upon Sackett Harbour, Newfoundlanders, Glengarries, and Voltigeurs fought side by side with some of the most famous regiments in the royal army. The Militia again contributed in part to the brilliant affair at Thorold, where Lieutenant Fitzgibbon of H.M.'s 49th, with some 30 men and some Indians, took prisoner Colonel Bœrstler of the American army with "542 men, two field-guns, and the colours of the 14th U.S. Regiment." Though not directly, save as above mentioned, bearing on the triumphs of the Canadian Army proper, the incident is so replete with gratifying interest to all subjects of Her Majesty's Empire that we will briefly relate it. Fitzgibbon, with some 30 men of H.M.'s 49th, was in garrison at Beaver's Dam. This the Americans determined to capture, and a force of nearly 700 men under Bœrstler was told off for the purpose. Fortunately, the projected expedition, though kept studiously quiet, became known to a worthy Canadian named Secord, invalided from the Militia by wounds received at

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Queenstown Heights, who was then residing within the American lines. He and his wife determined to give warning to Fitzgibbon. But the journey was twenty miles, Secord was a cripple, and the American pickets were terribly on the alert. His wife determined to go. By a judicious exercise of woman's wit, she managed to dispel the suspicions of the sentries, and then, through a country infested by wolves and snakes, and swarming with Indians whose political bias was unknown, she journeyed on, till at nine o'clock of that same evening she reached the threatened garrison. Forewarned is forearmed with such men as Fitzgibbon. He sent off to Major de Haren of his regiment with the tidings, and awaited the attack. The American force in due course set out, but soon found themselves opposed by some Indians, who harassed their progress, and by a sharp fusilade from some ambushed militiamen. Fitzgibbon then assumed the offensive. Coming upon Bœrstler's force "scared out of their senses" by the Militia and Indians, he disposed his 30 men—about a twentieth of his opponents!—to the best advantage, and summoned Bœrstler to a parley. Making the most of the Militia and Indians, and dwelling with repeated emphasis on the expected reinforcements under de Haren, he convinced Bœrstler that his best course was to capitulate. Even then the position was embarrassing. The American force was ludicrously in excess of his own, but, fortunately, de Haren arrived in the nick of time, and the brilliant feat of arms was accomplished.* Shortly afterwards, another dashing exploit was performed by Colonel Clark, of the 2nd Lincoln, who, taking advantage of the 4th of July festivities on the part of the Americans, crossed the river and captured Fort Schlosser, bringing back a considerable amount of booty and some 15 prisoners. A detachment of the same regiment—the 2nd Lincoln—with some men of the 3rd, accompanied Colonel Bishopp and their own commander, Clark, in the equally brilliant capture of Black Rock.

The end of the campaign was approaching, but ere its close round one body of Canadian soldiers was to flash a blaze of glory whose gleam is still undimmed. We refer to the Voltigeurs raised by Colonel de Salaberry. On the retreat of the American general, Hampton, Salaberry followed in swift pursuit at the head of his Voltigeurs, and came up with his enemy at the Four Corners. He first attempted to surprise the camp, but an accidental discharge betrayed his whereabouts, and brought against him the advance guard of the enemy. These, numbering eight hundred men, Salaberry charged with fifty

* Mrs. Secord, to whose loyal devotion it was due that Fitzgibbon was able to turn the tables on his assailants, was alive when the Prince of Wales visited Canada. His Royal Highness had an interview with the aged heroine, and subsequently sent her a graceful and welcome memento of his visit in the form of a handsome cheque.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of his Voltigeurs and a few Indians, driving them back in confusion. On the 22nd of October began the battle of Chateauguay. Salaberry's advance guard consisted of a detachment from the Beauharnois Militia, the 5th Incorporated Militia, the Voltigeurs, and the Canadian Fencibles. The victory was decisive; some twenty prisoners were taken, upwards of a hundred Americans were killed or wounded, and Hampton was in full retreat. The loss to the Canadians was two killed and sixteen wounded. The historian of the war has handed down to us the names of some of those who particularly distinguished themselves. Amongst them are Ferguson, de Bartzch, and Levesque of the 5th; L'Ecuyer, the two de Chesnays, Guy, Johnson, Powell, Hebben, Vincent, Pelletier, Vervais, Dubois, and Caron of the Voltigeurs; Daly of the Fencibles; Bruyere of the Chateauguay Chasseurs; Longton and Huneau of the Beauharnois Militia. Of Longton is related an incident which recalls, not dimly, the picture of the brave old Cosmo of Bradwardine given in the graphic pages of "Waverley." Like the Baron, Longton saw nothing ridiculous in prayer before battle. "Kneeling down at the head of his company, he offered up a brief and earnest prayer. 'And now, *mes enfans*,' said he rising, 'having done our duty to God, we will do the same by our king.' Here spoke out the olden spirit of chivalrous devotion, which the history of a thousand years has made the heritage of the Canadian people."* To show the spirit and excellence of the Canadian soldiers may be mentioned the feat achieved by the Canadian Fencibles on this occasion. On the 24th of October, MacDonnell (of Ogdensburg fame) was at Kingston with the battalion of Fencibles organized by him. Sir George Prevost sent him to join Salaberry's force. He embarked his men within a few hours, successfully passed the dangerous rapids, crossed Lake St. Francis—a storm raging at the time, disembarked on the Beauharnois shore, and in the dead of night threaded the forest which lay between him and the bank of the Chateauguay, accomplishing the whole journey of 190 miles in sixty hours, without one man of the six hundred dropping out of the ranks.

The war yet smouldered on, however. A terrible act of cruelty on the part of the American General McClure in burning the town of Niagara, fanned into a flame as fierce as that he had kindled the desire of the Canadians for revenge. Murray captured Niagara; Riall, in the fierce spirit of the day, proved that the American villages of Lewiston, Manchester, and Youngstown, flared every whit as brightly as did Niagara.

"With these acts of retribution," writes McMullen, "the justice of which was admitted by the sufferers themselves, while they denounced the conduct of their own

* Coffin.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

army in commencing such a mode of warfare, closed the campaign of 1813, which terminated to the complete disgrace of American arms. With the exception of the extreme portion of Western Canada, the enemy did not hold a single position on British soil, and the possession of Amherstburg was more than counterbalanced by the loss of Niagara. His large armies had been beaten back by mere petty detachments, and, dispirited and discouraged, were compelled to retreat into their own territory, the laughing-stock of the military men of Europe. Not only was the conduct of the British regulars much better than that of the American, but the Canadian Militia, of French, British, and American extraction, had also proved themselves infinitely superior, both for aggressive and defensive warfare, to the Militia of the enemy. This circumstance goes far to establish the fact that the climate of Canada is more favourable to the growth of a hardy and military population, than the milder and more luxurious regions farther south. The conquest of Canada was as remote as ever, and the fact began to force itself on the attention of the American people that they must emerge from the contest with little honour and no profit whatever."

The following year a small party of Militia, under Lieutenant Metcalfe, took prisoners forty Americans; under Hancock some Fencibles and Voltigeurs, with a couple of companies of H.M. 13th, covered themselves with glory in the defence of the Mill of La Colle. Five thousand Americans advanced to the siege; Hancock's whole force did not amount to five hundred men. Yet these five hundred twice charged the overwhelming force opposed to them, and held their flimsy ramparts for four hours in the face of an artillery fire, which, had it been well directed, would have pulverised the mill like a plaster model. "As evening approached, their ammunition began to run short. Still they did not quail. Not a man spoke of surrender, and the daring front they had shown during the day deterred the enemy from assaulting their position with the bayonet. At six o'clock Wilkinson retreated from the Canadian grist mill, completely foiled and beaten." Drummond followed this up by a victory at Oswego, counterbalanced by Riall's defeat at Fort Erie. Then followed the battle of Lundy's Lane, "the most fiercely contested and bloody in its results of any fought in Canada during the war!" The Americans were five thousand strong, the British about sixteen hundred, a fair proportion being Canadian Militia, who distinguished themselves by their splendid resistance to a prolonged attack by superior numbers. But it is beyond our province to detail the events of the war, save so far as they assisted to educe and consolidate the characteristics of the Canadian Militia. Battle followed battle in quick succession.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

McKay, McDowell, Pilkington, Tacker, Sherbrooke, as opportunity offered, led the Royal and Canadian forces to victory against the enemy. By this time the latter had thoroughly learnt the bitter lesson that the success of their attack upon Canada was hopeless, and the final retreat of Izard, in October, was the last event of a war which completely burst the bubble of the American Invasion.

To the student of history the causes, conduct, and result of this war present considerations almost unique. To the Canadian of to-day its record is a subject of justified boast. Few stranger phenomena in the annals of national conflicts can be cited than the conduct of the recently naturalised Canadians on this occasion. As an historian has put it, "The most extraordinary feature of this war was the course pursued by the great bulk of the Americans, apart from the United States Loyalists, who had emigrated to Canada. . . . These men willingly enrolled themselves in the Militia, and gallantly aided to stem the tide of invasion." The Militia soldier of our own day can boast with pride of his forerunners, who had so greatly borne so great a part in a war which resulted in the humbling and weakening of an arrogant and aggressive foe.

So far as the history of the Militia is concerned, we may pass over the years which intervened between 1814 and 1837. In this latter year commenced what is called—according to the bias of the speaker—the Lower Canadian Rebellion or the Agitation of the Patriots. The origin of the disturbance must be sought for in the growth of the feelings of dissatisfaction, possibly inevitable before two nationalities, more or less hostile by tradition, could be welded into one people. External attack might, and, as we have seen, did, effect a temporary cohesion, but the combination, as one would say in the laboratory, was merely mechanical, and the inimical elements were still in suspense.

The man whose name is always and rightly associated with the organizing and conduct of this rebellion was Louis Papineau. According to some accounts, Papineau was a "man of men," the trusted guardian of the rights of the people, the chivalrous opponent of tyrants. At a meeting of the "Patriots," "les Fils de la Liberté," as they were styled, held at Saint-Ours in May, 1837, Wolfred Nelson moved, in impassioned language, the following amongst other resolutions: "Que pour parvenir plus efficacement à la régénération de cette province, le Bas-Canada doit, comme l'Irlande, se rallier autour d'un seul homme. Que cet homme a été marqué de Dieu, comme O'Connell, pour être le chef politique, le régénérateur d'une nation; qu'il a été doué pour cela d'une force d'esprit et d'une éloquence incomparables, d'une haine de l'oppression et

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

d'un amour pour sa patrie que rien, ni promesses, ni menaces, ne pourrait jamais ébranler." Papineau addressed vast meetings to which women and children came overnight; people swore by him, hung on his words as veritable oracles, and dedicated to him a statue of Liberty.

Other opinions give us a very different view of this popular idol. "As the Canadian rebellion," wrote McMullen, "differed in all respects from the American War of Independence, so was the impassioned, prejudiced, and imprudent Louis J. Papineau the antipodes of the sober, impartial, and prudent George Washington. One loved himself, the other loved his country. The Canadian advocate, whose battles had ever been those of words, regardless of his countrymen, desired to raise himself to supreme power in the state; the American soldier, who had faced many a danger by flood and field, sought only the happiness of his fellow citizens. It is evident," continues the historian, "that he recked nothing of the misery, the bloodshed, the privation which must attend a rebellion. He fought for his own hand. He had neither a good cause, a good counsel, nor money to reward his friends. He was a brilliant orator, but no statesman; a clever partisan orator, but a miserable general officer; a braggart in the forum and a coward in the field." Perhaps the best idea of the final attitude of the "patriots" which precipitated the rebellion may be gathered from an extract of a speech made by Papineau in the House of Assembly. Ignoring prudence and loyalty alike, he openly advocated republicanism. "The time has gone by," said he, "when Europe could give monarchies to America; on the contrary, an epoch is now approaching when America will give republics to Europe."

But he reckoned without the innate loyalty which has been before referred to as a distinctive feature of the Canadian nation. Others than the "patriots" could and did organize; the Militia began to bestir themselves; for one shriek of frenzied treason there arose a chorus of loyal addresses eloquent of a stern determination to oppose force by force.

The actual position was not satisfactory.

The unsettled peace of the past few years had not been conducive to military organization. "The military force in both provinces was very weak, and invited rebellion. In Upper Canada, thirteen hundred regular troops, including artillerymen, were scattered here and there from Kingston to Penetanguishene, in Lower Canada; about two thousand soldiers garrisoned Quebec, or, at other points, awed nearly half a million of partially or wholly disaffected habitants. Nor was the Government better off in other respects, as

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

regarded defensive or offensive military operations. Twenty-two years of profound peace had made sad havoc with gun carriages, limber wheels, and all manner of warlike munitions. The powder in the musty magazines was damp; muskets, swords, and bayonets had long rusted in inglorious ease; and bedding and blankets had disappeared before successive generations of moths."

Montreal became the first headquarters of the Government troops, and three volunteer companies—cavalry, artillery, and infantry—were rapidly formed; Gore marched against St. Denis; Weatherall was dispatched against St. Charles. Papineau at this crisis acted as demagogues before and since his day generally have acted. He kept well out of the way of danger, leaving some of his braver colleagues to bear the brunt. Wolfred Nelson, "the noblest Roman of them all," proved himself no despicable commander. The rebels gained a decided success at St. Charles, though their numerical loss was greater. Two captives, Lieutenant Weir and Chartrand, a militiaman, were murdered. The success was a very fleeting one. Weatherall annihilated the insurgents at St. Charles, and his militia and volunteers "bitterly avenged their murdered comrades." The rebel leader, Brown, fled, leaving his dupes to take care of themselves; the volunteers routed a body of the enemy at St. Armands, and General Colborne repeated the lesson of St. Charles at St. Eustache, where Girod, a nominee of the invisible Papineau, was at the head of a considerable force. Girod ran away, and four days afterwards committed suicide to avoid capture. The frontier Militia scattered another body of insurgents commanded by Robert Nelson; the Glengarry Militia, under Colonel McDonald and Fraser, captured Beauharnois; the Odelltown and Hemmingford Militia defeated another body of rebels at La Colle Mill. The final stroke of the war, if war it can be called, was dealt by three hundred of the Odelltown Militia under Colonel Taylor, who utterly routed about a thousand of the enemy, and so ended the lower Canada Rebellion of 1837-8.

"Internal rebellion and piratical invasion had been alike repressed by the gallant Militia of the Canadas and the firm attitude assumed by its civil government and military authorities. Open violence and the warlike strength of eight millions of people in the United States had failed to sever this country from Great Britain in the Three Years' War beginning with 1812: secret treason and partial internal disaffection had proved equally impotent in that direction."

After the termination of the Papineau rebellion, the next important occurrence which called out the military strength of Canada—fortunately not involving them in actual

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

warfare—was the American Civil War. As was inevitable in the case of countries so closely adjacent, the relations between the two became strained. For a time, indeed, Canada was a species of common "refreshing" ground for both belligerents. Between fifty and sixty thousand Canadians served in the ranks of either North or South; to the latter, the Dominion afforded a convenient refuge for non-combatants; the North availed itself largely of Canadian help in obtaining supplies. Then came the familiar episodes of the escaped slave Anderson and the seizure of the Trent. The political atmosphere became still more charged with the electricity which at any time might flash and thunder into the horrors of war. The Northerners felt aggrieved at the criticism passed by Lord Palmerston on their conduct at the battle of Bull Run; the discomfiture of the ill-organized levies of the North was, they thought, referred to with unnecessary contempt as the "unfortunate rapid movement" of the Federal soldiers. A peremptory letter was dispatched by Lord Palmerston, Government troops were sent to Canada, and thirty Volunteer Companies were called out to guard the frontier.

But no hostilities took place, and the soldiers of Canada had to wait another three or four years before the theatrical Fenian inroad again called them to the front. It is, unfortunately, a matter of history that this movement owed whatever of gravity it possessed to the more than passive sympathy of the United States. If the Fenian attack were but successful, they seem to have thought, the coveted territory of Canada might yet come under the dominion of the Stars and Stripes.

To insure its being successful help was required, and help—scarcely concealed and always eager—was forthcoming. It was given out that on St. Patrick's Day the victims of tyranny, the sons of Erin, the implacable foes of the British Lion—and all the rest of it—would make a descent on Canada. The reply was equally prompt. "In less than twenty-four hours fourteen thousand men sprang to arms to defend their country." It proved, after all, a flash in the pan, this quasi manifesto of the rebel leader Sweeny, but a few months later a more serious movement was made, intended to synchronize with the assassinations and dynamite murders planned for Great Britain. The American Government almost openly sympathized with the arrangements; forthwith blackguards, the scum of the armies of the Civil War, appeared amongst the Fenians as generals, colonels, and majors—seldom anything lower than a major—and with them were some real soldiers with a deep-rooted dislike to Great Britain, and a still more deeply rooted craving for money and notoriety. A movement was soon

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

made. General O'Neill entered on Canadian territory and established himself at Limeridge.

The Queen's Own (Toronto), a company of Hamilton Volunteers, and the York and Caledonian Volunteers were soon at Port Colborne under Colonel Peacock. An encounter followed; the Queen's Own behaved with marked valour; but an unfounded scare of cavalry compelled a hurried retreat, though it is believed that the rebel loss was considerably in excess of that of the Canadians, which was under thirty in killed and wounded. Meanwhile some more volunteers under Colonel Dennis had been fighting gallantly, taking prisoners sixty rebels (only ten less than Dennis's whole force), and subsequently making a desperate resistance, resulting in their practical extermination, when attacked by the main body of the enemy under O'Neill. Reinforcements arrived for the Fenians, which the American Government was "powerless" to prevent, but their leader had lost all hope. *Sauve qui peut* was the order of the day, and such Fenians as were found on Canadian soil were ignominiously put into prison. More inroads were made during the following few weeks. The usual amount of "tall talk" habitual with Irish malcontents and other demagogues, was indulged in, and—the Fenian invasion of Canada was at an end. But injury was caused and outlay. At one time no fewer than forty thousand Volunteers were under arms, and during the summer companies defended every conceivable point of invasion. "Canada bewailed the death of her college youths and young men of Toronto. But their blood was not shed in vain. It speedily bore fruit; and in connection with the gallant manner in which a great volunteer force had sprung to arms, raised the country in the estimation of the world."

These various disturbances had had a most strengthening effect upon the Militia organization. The volunteer energy which the invasions and perils had called forth had convinced the authorities and the country alike that there was no want of fighting material, and that of the best, in the mixed nationalities of the Dominion. It is true that for a time the Militia *organization* was principally a paper one. This was remedied early in the present reign, when a re-organization of the Militia substituted permanent corps, and a certain number of years' service, for those hitherto established for a few months' service, or a particular emergency. The Militia Army List for Upper Canada alone showed one hundred and six complete regiments, with the full complement of officers and staff, the names of the two latter grades filling eighty-three closely printed octavo pages. There were four battalions of incorporated Militia, organized and clothed like the troops of the line; twelve battalions of provincial Militia, on duty for a stated period; thirty-one corps of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Artillery, Cavalry, coloured companies, and riflemen; while most of the Militia corps had a troop of Cavalry attached to them. Thus with a population of four hundred and fifty thousand souls, Upper Canada could easily assemble forty thousand men in arms without seriously distressing the country."

The Red River Campaign was the next opportunity that offered for the Canadian Militia to give evidence of their worth. A fresh arrangement of the regiments was about this time made; as will be seen, the official date of many of those in existence is given as about this time. It will be desirable therefore to describe somewhat in full the causes and incidents of the campaign, though if its importance is to be judged by the quantity of blood shed, it must perforce disappear altogether. The Red River Campaign was a bloodless one, but had the generalship been less brilliant or the quality of the forces less sterling than it was, the record might and certainly would have been very different.

The following passage from Captain Huyshe's narrative of the expedition will convey in a few words the steps taken for the organization of the little army to be commanded by Colonel Wolseley.

"The expeditionary force, as finally constituted, numbered about 1,200 fighting men, of whom two-thirds were militia, and the remainder regular troops. The latter consisted of the first battalion 60th Royal Rifles, 350 strong; detachments of Royal Artillery and Royal Engineers, twenty men each, with a battery of four 7-pounder brass mountain guns, and a proportion of the Army Service and Army Hospital Corps. The former consisted of two battalions of Rifles, one from each province, raised for two years by voluntary enlistment from the drilled Militia. These two battalions were named respectively the 1st or Ontario Rifles and the 2nd or Quebec Rifles. The regiments of infantry were divided into seven companies of fifty strong (including three officers), with the object of making them more handy and available for boat service by putting each company into a brigade of five boats. The selections for this service were most strict, and none but men of the strongest and hardiest constitutions were permitted to go, it being rightly decided that on an expedition of this nature, about to plunge into an unknown and uninhabited wilderness, every sick man would be a more than ordinary encumbrance.

"The enlistment of volunteers for the Ontario battalion proceeded briskly. The medical examination of the men was very strict, and numbers were rejected as physically unable to stand the fatigues they were expected to undergo. Great was the disappointment of the rejected, and many a threatening and angry look was cast

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

on the medical officers. But so great was the anxiety of the young men of all classes in Ontario to go to the Red River that many who could not get commissions as officers preferred shouldering a rifle in the ranks to being left behind."

The Quebec Battalion was not so fortunate in its enrolment, owing to the existence of some vague idea that the war was directed against the French Canadians, as such, and to the mistaken notion that Frenchmen would be taking arms against "their brethren." The enlistment proceeded slowly, and, "inasmuch as two-thirds of the officers appointed to the Quebec Battalion were French Canadians, the English-speaking Canadians objected to serve under French officers." Not, indeed until enlistment was allowed from Ontario did the battalion complete its numbers.

The recruits for the two battalions were sent to Toronto as fast as they were enlisted and were there formed into companies, and served out with arms and clothing, under the superintendence of Colonel Feilden of the 60th Rifles, to whom their organization had been specially confided.

The Americans were not slow to seize the opportunity of showing their sympathy with the troublers of Great Britain's peace. They closed the canal, stopped even a ship unconnected with the operations, and thereby entailed a vast amount of extra labour on the expeditionary force. In consequence of these difficulties, "Colonel Wolseley despatched two companies of the 1st Ontario Rifles on the 14th May, to form a garrison at the Sault under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Bolton, Royal Artillery, the Deputy-Assistant Adjutant-General to the force, for the passage of the troops and the transport of the stores across the portage. The departure of these companies, the first detachment of the Red River force which left Toronto, was hailed with delight by the people of Ontario, who had set their hearts on the success of the expedition, and were determined to carry it through. Colonel Bolton arrived safely at the Sault, and immediately set to work to complete the road across the portage and get the stores re-shipped on Lake Superior.

"Just at this time the hydra-headed Fenian organization began again to raise its head, and threaten the peace and security of Canada. Two more companies of the 1st Ontario Rifles were, therefore, sent off on the 16th to increase the garrison at the Sault, and Colonel Bolton was directed to be on the alert to guard against a raid from the American side, as the Fenians had openly declared their intention to annoy and interfere with the expedition."

But if the carrying out of the expedition proper was unattended by bloodshed, the scenes which necessitated it had a tragic hue. Anything more horrible than the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

murder of Thomas Scott it is impossible to conceive. Riel had captured Fort Garry, and held in durance there some fifty or sixty British subjects. The inhabitants of Prairie Portage determined—putting aside with pardonable impetuosity the negociations which were unwisely transferring Riel from the position of a vulgar rebel to that of a belligerent power—to rescue these prisoners, whose sufferings had been described by Scott, who had himself escaped. A rough-and-ready Volunteer force was organized and equipped, and Major Boulton, of the Royal Canadians, attached to Colonel Dennis's surveying party, took the command. Major Boulton himself explains that his object in joining the Volunteers was to keep them strictly within the limits of their declared intention—the rescue of the prisoners. The expedition was a failure, and on its return forty-seven of its members were treacherously taken prisoners by Riel. Major Boulton was condemned to death, but after great exertions the chief of the rebels was induced to pardon him.

It does not happen to many men to live to describe their sensations when under sentence of death from an unscrupulous and desperate demagogue, but this, fortunately, is the case with Major Boulton, who, in his account of the subsequent North-west Rebellion, gives in simple, telling words the story of those terrible days of suspense. One coincidence is sufficiently remarkable for us to notice here. After the sentence had gone forth, a sentry was appointed to sleep in Boulton's room. "That night," says the Major, "I slept on the bare floor without a pillow, covered with my buffalo rug, and with the sentry as my only companion. During the night I was continually disturbed by the sentry, who would come and wake me, go down on his knees, and pray and groan.* I sent him away repeatedly, but only to return again. He was in great trouble and concern about me, and the next morning when they unlocked my door he was in a state of lunacy. The excitement of being locked up with me had proved too much for him, and his mind was unstrung. Another sentry was placed in the room, a tall man, about six feet two inches in height, who lay down all day in the corner. About three o'clock I was aroused by a peculiar gurgling noise, which caused me to go over and look at my sentry. I found that he was dead. It was found that the man had died of apoplexy. He was then carried out, but without placing another sentry over me. In fact I think the guards had become superstitious." As before observed Boulton was eventually reprieved, after a good deal of theatrical attitudinizing on the part of Riel. Not so with Scott. Riel sent delegates to "solicit

* Major Boulton records his opinion that his guards were averse from the murderous proclivities of Riel.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the suffrages of the prisoners for his election." Scott strenuously, though perhaps rashly, advised his comrades to have "nothing to do with these men." A sham court-martial was formed, and Scott was condemned to death the same day. The details are so terrible that we will give the *ipsissima verba* of John Bruce, a former colleague of Riel.

"Six soldiers had been chosen to shoot Scott. I have here again to write the name of a man whose behaviour in that circumstance reflects on him the greatest honour. Augustin Parisien, one of the six soldiers, declared openly that he would not shoot at Scott; in fact, he took off the cap from his gun before the word of command 'present' was given. Of the five balls remaining, only two hit the poor victim, one on the left shoulder, and the other in the upper part of the chest above the heart. Had the other soldiers missed the mark undesignedly, or had they intentionally aimed away from Riel's victim, is not known. However that may be, as the two wounds were not sufficient to cause death, at least sudden death, a man named Guillemette stepped forward and discharged the contents of a pistol close to Scott's head while he was lying on the ground. This ball, however, took a wrong direction. It penetrated the upper part of the cheek and came out somewhere about the cartilage of the nose. Scott was still not dead, but that did not prevent his butchers from placing him, *alive and still speaking*, in a kind of coffin made of four rough boards. It was nailed and plated in the south-eastern bastion, and an armed soldier was placed at the door. This would seem like a story made at one's ease, if there were not several credible witnesses who, between the hours of five and six in the evening, heard the unfortunate Scott speaking from under the lid of his coffin, and it was known that he had been shot at half-past twelve. What a long and horrible agony, and what ferocious cruelty was this on the part of his butchers! The words heard and understood by the French Metis were only these: 'My God! My God!' Some English Metis, and those understanding English, heard distinctly these words: 'For God's sake take me out of here or kill me.' Towards 11 o'clock—that is after ten and a half hours of frightful agony—a person, whose name I shall withhold for the present, went into the bastion, and, according to some, gave him the finishing stroke with a butcher's knife, with a pistol according to others. After having inflicted the last blow on poor Scott, that person said, as he was coming back from the bastion, 'He is dead this time!' The corpse was left for a few days in the south-eastern bastion, being guarded by the soldiers, relieving each other in turn."

Scott may fairly be taken as a representative of the class from which many of the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Militia were drawn. "It should be borne in mind that he was not taken prisoner with arms in his hands. On the first occasion, before the prisoners were captured in Dr. Schultz's house, he had gone boldly down to the Fort to ask Riel to give safe conduct to the ladies and children who were in danger there, and Riel's only answer to his peaceful mission was to thrust him into prison. Nor on the second occasion was he armed; so this murder has no extenuation, and for cold-bloodedness and deliberate butchery poor Scott's fate has scarcely a parallel."

It was obvious that measures must be taken to vindicate the outraged authority of the Queen. Some twelve hundred men were ordered to be constituted into an expeditionary force, the details of which have been above noted. From first to last the Militia performed the duties assigned to them in a manner which satisfied to the uttermost their gallant but somewhat punctilious commander, and the general order promulgated by the Duke of Cambridge on the conclusion of the operations may be confidently referred to by the Dominion Army as an undeniable testimony to their efficiency.

"*G. O.*

"His Royal Highness, while thanking the Regular troops for their exertions, wishes especially to place on record his full appreciation of the services rendered by the Militia of the Dominion of Canada, who were associated with them throughout these trying duties.

"(Signed) R. AIREY,
"*Adjutant-General.*

"Horse Guards, *November*, 1870."

Beyond another demonstration by the redoubtable O'Neill in the autumn of 1870, to meet the possible danger of which local levies again came to the front, no further operation of importance occurred till the still recent North-west Rebellion of 1885. Into the details of this rebellion we propose to enter somewhat at length, as it is beyond question that its suppression—effected as it was by Dominion troops only—is at once a triumph and a landmark in the annals of the Canadian Militia. Once again it was Riel who caused the disturbance.

He had been, to a certain extent, tolerated since the collapse of his late attempt; indeed, when the Fenians threatened the frontier in the autumn of 1870, Riel and some of his colleagues organized companies for service against them, and these companies were actually inspected by Governor Archibald. But the murder of Scott and others

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

was still unexpiated, and in October, 1874, Riel was outlawed, while Letine, who had been president of the sham court-martial, was sentenced to death. Both sentences were subsequently modified to banishment for five years.

In 1885 it was determined by the Government to survey and allot the vast and sparsely occupied tracts of the north-west. Difficulties arose, unfounded claims were made, and their rejection denounced as Governmental tyranny. Riel, who had during the intervening years managed to acquire the character of a rebel leader in reserve, came to the fore, commenced to agitate, and formed a provisional government, of which he was, of course, the head. It immediately became necessary to levy contributions to sustain the dignity of this said government. "From levying they got to seizing, and from seizing stores they got to seizing prisoners. Of the possession of prisoners, Riel, in days gone by, well knew the value." To Riel the acquisition of power seems to have acted as did those terrible potions of old time, which destroyed a man's sense and goaded him on to suicidal madness. When interviewed by a delegate from the Government he declared that it was blood that he wanted. "It is blood, blood; we want blood; it is a war of extermination." He then commenced to threaten the delegate, M'Kay, abusing him in unmeasured terms, and finally declaring that his should be the first blood. After a good deal more strutting and fuming, he subsided with a ludicrous rapidity. The only parallel that we can recall is the well-known dramatic incident which occurred at Mr. Bob Sawyer's historical supper party. Mr. Noddy and Mr. Gunter were going to do all sorts of dreadful things. Mr. Noddy said Mr. Gunter was no gentleman; Mr. Gunter threatened to throw Mr. Noddy out of the window. Eventually Mr. Noddy admitted that he had ever entertained a devoted personal attachment to Mr. Gunter, and the latter declared that upon the whole he rather preferred Mr. Noddy to his own brother. Riel duplicated the parts of Noddy and Gunter. After threatening M'Kay to kill him in five minutes, declaring he was a scoundrel, a robber, and a thief, and calling a committee to try him for his life, he quieted down to requesting M'Kay not to make so much noise, and finally apologised, adding that he entertained great respect for him and was very sorry not to have him on his side!

The first actual hostilities occurred at Duck Lake towards the end of March, 1885. The Government troops, consisting of about a hundred men under Major Crozier, were surrounded by a very superior number of rebels, and only by the coolness of Major Crozier and his force was a complete massacre avoided. As it was, twelve men were

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

killed, nine of them being Prince Albert Volunteers, and Captain Moore and twenty-five others wounded. This engagement, writes Major Boulton, was the signal to the Government to take decisive steps to prevent the recurrence of such a rising, and to show the power of Canada to maintain her laws. Riel now determined upon more active measures and organization. The Indians were to be pressed to war with him against the Government, and forthwith he—

> "Bade his messengers ride forth
> East and west, and south and north,
> To summon his array."

The crisis was a grave one. The population to whom Riel's appeals were addressed were only too likely to be beguiled by the delusive pictures he drew; the Fenians were known to be on the alert to seize any opportunity that disturbance in the Dominion might offer; and there were not now, as on former outbreaks of the sort, imperial troops to serve as a nucleus for such military operations as might be necessary. "Without the guiding experience of past expeditions, without any knowledge of how to deal with an armed rebellion, thousands of miles from the central authority, and without the steady military training in the field of any of her officers or men, Canada had to undertake the task of arming, equipping, transporting, and commanding the military expedition which was now deemed necessary." The commander-in-chief was General Middleton, whose laurels had been won in India and New Zealand, and he recognised the necessity of so dealing with the rebellion that the snake should not be merely scotched but killed. The unfortunate affair at Duck Lake showed the danger of attempting to achieve anything without a strong force, and this General Middleton set himself to organize. He found, however, "that the only available forces there were the 90th Battalion, which had just been organized under the late Colonel Kennedy; a troop of cavalry under Captain Knight, and a field battery of artillery under Major Jarvis. The 90th had been called out on the 23rd, and promptly answering to a full roll-call at their headquarters, had armed and equipped themselves for service, and were soon ready for the field. The left wing of the 90th was sent forward on the 25th under Major Boswell, to Troy, a station on the main line of the Canadian Pacific Railway, which was to be used as the base of operations for the column under the immediate command of the General himself. In the emergency many retired military officers in Winnipeg came forward and offered their services.

"The other troops called out and promptly answering the call, were the Governor-

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

General's Body Guard under Colonel Denison; the 10th Royal Grenadiers, under Colonel Grasett; the Queen's Own Rifles under Colonel Millar, and 'C' School of Infantry under Major Smith, all of Toronto. These regiments were brigaded under Colonel Otter, Commandant of the Infantry School. The late Colonel Williams was authorized to raise a provisional battalion, which came to be familiarly known as 'The Midlanders,' being composed of two companies from the 46th Battalion, and one each from the 15th, 40th, 45th, 47th, 49th, and 57th Battalions, all situated in the Midland district.

"Colonel O'Brien was authorized to raise a battalion called the 'Simcoe Rangers,' composed of four companies of the 35th Simcoe, and four companies of the 12th York Rangers. The 65th Mount Royal Rifles of Montreal, under Colonel Onimet, were also called out for active service. Colonel Scott of Winnipeg was commissioned to raise a regiment, known as the 91st Battalion, which was drawn from Winnipeg and the surrounding towns. Lieutenant-Colonel Osborne Smith, C.M.G., was also commissioned to raise a battalion in Winnipeg called the '92nd or Winnipeg Light Infantry.'

"In addition to these forces, a detachment of fifty sharpshooters was selected from the Governor-General's Foot Guards under Captain Todd of Ottawa. On the 31st of March the 7th Fusiliers of London, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Williams, and the 9th Battalion, Quebec, under Colonel Amyot, were also called out. A provisional battalion was formed from detachments of the 66th, the Halifax Garrison Artillery, and the 63rd, under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Bremner. The Quebec School of Cavalry, under Colonel Turnbull, and 'A' and 'B' Batteries of Quebec and Kingston, were also called out and ordered to the front. Later on the Montreal Garrison Artillery, under Colonel Oswald, were ordered to proceed to garrison Regina.

"Captain Dennis was commissioned to raise an Intelligence Mounted Corps, composed of surveyors; and local companies were gazetted at Birtle under the command of Captain Wood, at Regina under Captain Scott, at Battleford under Captain Nash, at Emerson under Captain Whitman, at Yorktown under Major Watson, at Qu'Appelle under Captain Jackson, besides a local company at Calgary. The Rocky Mountain Rangers under Captain Stewart, and the Moose Mountain Scouts under Captain White, were also put in commission."

Such is the succinct account of the composition of the Canadian force given by Major Boulton, who had—as we have above seen—ample reason to anticipate with pleasure the final suppression of Riel. Major Boulton himself raised a body of Cavalry, "Boulton's Scouts," and with him were associated Captain Gardiner, Captain

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Johnstone, Lieutenant Pigott, and Lieutenant Gough. Another mounted force was raised by Captain French. General Middleton divided his force into three columns, under the leadership of himself, General Strange, and Colonel Otter respectively. Some idea of the severe nature of the task to which the army was devoted may be gathered from the fact that the troops from Quebec had to travel by rail two thousand five hundred miles, and those from Nova Scotia and New Brunswick three thousand miles, to arrive at the positions assigned to them.

A gratifying proof that "Cœlum non animum mutant" holds true with regard to the loyalty of the Canadians was supplied by a letter which reached the authorities a few days after hostilities commenced. It was dated from Chicago and was forwarded by Mr. Grant, formerly a Lieutenant in the Governor-General's Foot Guards.

"We, the undersigned, subjects of her most gracious Majesty Queen Victoria, at present resident in the United States of America, learning with regret of the outbreak of a rebellion in the North-West Territories of her Majesty's dominions, beg most respectfully to notify her Colonial Representative of our willingness to aid in the suppression of the same, and will cheerfully answer to the call of duty, should our services be required.

"In thus tendering our services, we wish to show our deep sense of loyalty and devoted attachment to her Majesty.

"God save the Queen."

In commenting upon this letter, the Report of the Deputy Minister states that to many of the signatures appended were added the titular ranks the bearers had formerly borne in the active Militia, and that inasmuch as many similar declarations and offers were received, it might with justice be claimed "that those who have passed through a period of service in the ranks of our Militia never forgot their military life and training; and secondly, that even as residents of the great and prosperous Republic, they are far from forgetting the flag to which they owe allegiance."

It must not be forgotten, again, in estimating rightly the value of the services performed by the army of Canada in this campaign, that the season was terribly inclement. Roads were knee-deep and often waist-deep; the winds were bitterly cold, and charged with half-frozen sleet; and morasses of slush and water bordered, and even covered, the routes. The narrator we have before quoted records that on one occasion he was unfortunate enough to fall into the water up to the waist. On getting out, his clothes were

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

frozen literally as hard as boards, so hard and stiff, at any rate, that he had to be lifted on to his horse. The thermometer at that time was 15° below freezing. Another difficulty which must have assumed prodigious proportions to a young and untried force was that of the transport of supplies. As the official report puts it:—"Canada, suddenly sprung into a war 2,000 miles away from the chief centres of population, found herself without even the barest skeleton of either an hospital branch or a commissariat branch, or a transport service. Food for 5,000 troops had to be provided. The attendant army of teamsters, foragers, surgeons, and others who wait upon the troops had also to be supplied. There was no Government depôt of food supply. There was not even a round of hard tack or a ship's biscuit in store. The season was the worst possible time of the year, for winter had not disappeared nor spring set in. The snow was too soft to bear heavy teams. The grass was not long enough for the use of horses and cattle. There was no shelter along the wide stretches of prairie.

"What the work is may be seen from the fact that on May 28th last, there left Calgary for Edmonton a convoy, three miles long, consisting of 178 ox and Indian pony-carts; 45 four and two-horse teams; and 80 double bull waggons, each hauled by ten huge oxen, conveying two or three hundred tons of supplies."

Yet few campaigns can show a better record of due and sufficient supply.

As before observed, General Middleton divided his force into three columns, the composition of which was as under.

The first column, commanded by General Middleton:—

'A' Battery (Quebec);
90th Battalion (Winnipeg);
Infantry School Corps;
Boulton's Scouts;
10th Battalion Royal Grenadiers;
Frende's Scouts;
Winnipeg Field Battery;
Dennis' Scouts (Surrey);
Midland Battalion.

The second column, under Colonel Otter:—

'B' Battery (Kingston);
Queen's Own Rifles;
Infantry School;

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Todd's Sharpshooters;
Winnipeg Field Battery;
35th Batttalion.

The third column, under General Strange:—

65th Battalion;
Winnipeg Divisional Battalion (32nd);
Strange's Rangers;
Mounted Police.

Other of the troops were stationed at various places; amongst the regiments thus accounted for being the Governor-General's Body Guard, the 7th, 9th, 66th, and 91st Battalions, the Winnipeg Troop Cavalry, and the Quebec Cavalry School.

The chief engagements of the campaign were those of FISH CREEK, CUT KNIFE HILL, BATOCHE, and the operations connected with the proceedings against Poundmaker and Big Bear. It will add to a full appreciation of the part played by the Militia, if we quote whenever practicable the unvarnished reports of the officers to whom the accomplishment of these undertakings was entrusted.

The march to Fish Creek was an arduous one, and may claim a high position in the annals of military endurance. From Qu'Appelle to Clark's Crossing, where General Middleton encamped before the action, is nearly two hundred and twenty miles, and this distance he covered in ten days. Arrived at the Crossing, he had to await reinforcements and to reconnoitre the position, and on the 24th of April—less than a month after the General left Winnipeg—the attack was made.

Skirmishers were thrown out in front, and on them fell the first brunt of the encounter. The enemy were securely ensconced in a ravine—so securely that one Indian brave stood out in full view of our men and performed a war-dance, with the object, it may be assumed, of encouraging his comrades and intimidating the atttacking party. Naturally in the latter portion of his object he did not succeed, but it was emphatically a *mauvais quart d'heure* that the gallant advance guard spent. Major Boulton, who was well to the fore, has given us a graphic description of the situation.

"The leading section," he says, "had not been gone many minutes, when I heard bang! bang! and immediately after, a volley was fired at us, which, however, struck the trees in front. I gave the command, 'Left wheel, gallop!' and we charged down upon thirty or forty mounted men who were standing in the shelter of a bluff. When we came upon them, they at once turned their horses and bolted for a ravine or gully about

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

a hundred and fifty yards distant, dismounting as they galloped. I instantly gave the word to my men, 'Halt! Dismount! Extend in skirmishing order, and lie down!' Simultaneously the enemy, who were in the ravine and out of sight, opened a murderous fire upon us. I said, 'Fire away, boys, and lie close; never mind if you don't see anything, fire!' my object being to keep the enemy down in the gully and hold them in check till the supports came up. The rebels would pop up from the ravine, take a snap shot, and disappear in an instant. The General at once sent back Captain Wise, A.D.C., to hurry up the main body, in which duty his horse was shot. We here sustained the whole of the enemy's fire, which was very hot and unfortunately fatal. Captain Gardiner, who was beside me, was the first to say, 'Major! I am hit.' Almost immediately Langford called out that he was hit. Bruce was the next victim. Then poor D'Arcy Baker called out, 'Oh, Major! I'm hit!' as he received his death wound by a bullet crashing into his breast. Then Gardiner called out, 'I am hit again!' Langford, too, was wounded a second time. I told the wounded to drag themselves to the rear the best way they could and get out of further danger; ordering the remainder to hold on and fire away." The main body soon came up, and the fight began in earnest at the mouth of the ravine, whose dense undergrowth and adjacent willow copses afforded excellent cover for the rebels. The 90th and the 'C' School of Infantry were soon in the thick of it, and despite the perplexing nature of the conflict, the enemy being unseen, showed a steady front, and poured in a continuous fire on the most salient positions. Here, too, the artillery performed yeomen's service, seizing a small plateau, and from it raking the enemy's position. Gradually the ravine was forced and the flanks clear, but in the process many, both officers and men, were killed or badly wounded. The left column, with whom were the Grenadiers and some Winnipeg Artillery, succeeded in crossing the river, and the hotly contested action was brought to an end, the rebels being decisively defeated. Our loss was about eight killed and forty-four wounded." The official account supplies some further details.

"Mounted Infantry scouts spread out well in front," reported General Middleton, "with support of Mounted Infantry, under Major Boulton, about 200 yards in rear. An advanced guard of the 90th Battalion about 300 yards in rear of that, and the main column about 200 or 300 yards in rear of the advanced guard.

"On approaching some bluffs, just as the left advanced scouts were circling round, we suddenly received a heavy fire from a bluff and some ground sloping back on our left, which fire was luckily too high to do mischief, having been evidently fired in a

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

hurry, owing to the approach of the left scouts. Major Boulton instantly ordered his men to dismount, let loose their horses (two of which were immediately shot) and hold the enemy in check. This was done by them most gallantly, the flankers and files in front falling back on the main body.

"The advanced guard on arrival extended and took cover in the bluff nearest us, and, as the main body came up, two more companies of the 90th were extended, the rebels advancing up out of the ravine, into which, however, they again speedily retired, and a heavy fire was exchanged; but having sent a party round to the house on the enemy's right, the enemy gradually retired along the ravine, while our men advanced slowly to the crest of a deeply wooded part running out of the main ravine. In this former ravine a small party of the rebels made a stand, in what we found afterwards to be some carefully constructed rifle-pits. . . . Captain Peters, with great pluck and dash, led the dismounted men of 'A' Battery, supported by a party of the 90th under Captain Ruttan, and gallantly attempted to dislodge them, but they were so well covered and were able to bring such a heavy fire on the party advancing without being seen, killing three men —two artillerymen, and one of the 90th (the body of one artilleryman was afterwards found within eight or ten yards of their pits)—that I resolved to leave them, contenting myself with extending more of the 90th in front to watch them, and sending some shells into the bluff now and then. During the action a messenger from the left column arrived asking if they should bring troops across, and I directed the 10th Grenadiers to be brought over, which was done by means of the scow most expeditiously, one company with Lord Melgund arriving about 1 o'clock P.M., and two other companies under Lieutenant-Colonel Grassett later on, with two guns of the Winnipeg Field Battery, under Major Jarvis. As the affair was nearly over then, I contented myself with extending a company of the 10th on the right centre to assist in watching the ravine where the enemy's rifle-pits were, the other companies being on the extreme right in support, and ultimately remaining there until the wounded were removed to the camp-ground, which had been selected in the meantime. I would here beg leave to draw particular attention to the crossing of these troops who, though luckily not required, might well have been. To fully appreciate the rapidity with which this was done, in spite of the difficulties that existed, the river must be seen: wooded heights on each side 100 feet high—at bottom, large boulders encrusted in thick sticky mud—a fringe of huge blocks of ice on each side, a wretched scow carrying about sixty men at most, pulled with oars made with an axe, and a rapid current of about three or four miles an hour, were the obstacles that

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

were surmounted by dint of determination and anxiety to join with and aid their comrades."

It seemed probable shortly afterwards that further fighting was imminent.

Two nights after the battle of Fish Creek, the force was alarmed by the report of a rifle and a summons, "Guard, turn out!" "The whole camp was astir at once, and, in the most orderly and self-possessed manner, fell in on their parade-ground within three minutes from the first alarm. The General, who was on horseback in a moment, rode off to visit the pickets and ascertain the cause of alarm. Three mounted men were reported as having been seen approaching the near picket, and not answering to the challenge the sentry fired, but nothing more was heard of them. After half an hour's anxious wondering the troops turned in."

On the 1st May Colonel Otter marched to chastise the turbulent Poundmaker, and found plenty of hard work cut out for him. The encounter between the police and rebels at Duck Lake had seemingly given the required impetus to the Indians under Poundmaker and Big Bear to commence hostilities. They had been busy before the arrival of Colonel Otter at Battleford. A Belgian named Bernard Tremont was shot while at work in his stock yard; the Farm Instructor on the Stony Reserve, a man named James Payne, was murdered by the Indians, who had obtained entrance on the pretext of demanding rations; a trader of Battleford named Smart was shot dead four miles from his home by an ambuscade of Indians. Previous to Otter's arrival the defence of Battleford was practically committed to the Mounted Police, with whom were the Battleford Rifles, a garrison far too small to successfully resist the inroad which appeared imminent. Colonel Otter therefore determined to march to Battleford, which he reached three days after poor Smart had been killed. The country which he had to traverse is described as "a vast unoccupied prairie, covered with luxuriant vegetation and furrowed paths known as buffalo runs." His arrival was signalised by an outbreak of incendiarism on the part of the Indians far and near; the flames from stack and homestead made livid the sky. It was necessary to take action at once. Poundmaker with a considerable force occupied a strong position at Cut Knife Hill, and against this position marched, on the 1st of May, a detachment of Otter's force, about 300 strong. "The attacking column was composed of the Mounted Police and Scouts, under Colonel Herchmer, with Captain Neil in advance, and the line of march was by the south side of the Battle River, going west in the direction of Poundmaker's reserve. Following the police were the artillery, with two seven-pounders and the Gatling under

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Major Short, with Captains Rutherford and Farley, and Lieutenants Pelletier and Prower. After them came 'C' School of Infantry, under Lieutenant Wadmore and Lieutenant Cassels, G.O.R.; the half company of Ottawa Sharpshooters, under Lieutenant Gray; No. 1 Company of the Queen's Own Rifles, under Captains Brown and Hughes, and Lieutenant Brock; the Battleford Rifles, under Captain Nash and Lieutenants Marigold and Baker, brought up the rear with the ammunition and forage transport. The staff consisted of Lieutenant Sears, Brigade Major; Captain Mutton, O.O.R., Brigade Quartermaster; Brigade Surgeon, F. W. Strange."

The position of the enemy was somewhat similar to that they had taken at Fish Creek, but they appear to have been unmindful of the proper precautions to protect against a surprise, a fact which enabled Colonel Otter to escape the embarrassment which would otherwise have been inevitable. The Indians made a charge, advancing with their blankets held in front of them, and approaching by fits and starts and in an irregular formation. It would seem, too, that they relied, not a little, upon the traditionally terrifying effect of their war-whoops, and the scene is described as one likely to strike terror into the hearts of raw and inexperienced troops. A somewhat formidable attack on the rear was defeated by Captain Nash and Lieutenant Marigold at the head of the Battleford Rifles. Shortly after twelve o'clock Colonel Otter, having accomplished the object of his reconnaissance, determined to retreat, a movement attended with most serious difficulties, but which by a skilful disposition of the Artillery and the Rifles was effected in a masterly manner. The casualties on our side amounted to eight killed and thirteen wounded. The official account furnished by Colonel Otter is as follows, and will give a somewhat clearer view of the parts played by the troops engaged.

"I determined on a reconnaissance in force, and left Battleford on Friday, the 1st inst., at 2 P.M., with the following troops, viz:

"75 Mounted Police, of whom 50 were mounted, Captain Neale; 80 'B' Battery, R.C.A., Major Short; 45 'C' Company, I.S.C., Lieutenant Wadmore; 20 G.G. Foot Guards, Lieutenant Gray; 60 Queen's Own Rifles, Captain Brown; including the Ambulance Corps of same Regiment; 45 Battleford Rifles, Captain Nash; One Gatling gun and two seven-pounders belonging to Police; the latter being selected as more easy of transport than the nine-pounder guns; and a train of 48 waggons to carry men, rations, and stores.

"The disposition of our force was as follows. In the centre of the front line, and just behind the brow of the hill, was the Gatling, flanked on either side by a seven-pounder

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

brass gun, all under the personal supervision of Major Short, ably assisted by Captain Rutherford.

"The support of these guns consisted of the garrison division of 'B' Battery. Immediately to the rear, resting in a slight declivity, were the horses of the police and the waggon train; these were so well placed by Captain Neale that only two casualties occurred through the day, viz., the loss of two horses, one of the waggon train and Captain Rutherford's charger. On either flank of the artillery were the police. To the right and right rear was 'C' Company and detachment of Guards. To the left, lying on the lower edge of the hill, and extending nearly to the creek, was the Queen's Own; and protecting the right rear and ford was the company of Battleford Rifles. The positions thus described were, with some slight changes, retained by these corps more or less throughout the action.

"Too much praise cannot be given to the officers, non-commissioned officers and men engaged throughout the whole action for their admirable coolness and gallantry; the circumstances were most trying to raw troops, who without sleep or breakfast found themselves opposed to a cunning and determined enemy, thoroughly acquainted with the ground, adopting a new style of warfare and in numbers nearly double."

The most important operation of the campaign, namely, the capture of Batoche, has yet to be chronicled. The attacking party marched from Fish Creek on the 7th of May, Boulton's Scouts being in advance, and after due reconnaissance had been made, an attack was delivered on the 9th. The first of the general attack was made by the Grenadiers, supported by the artillery, and it was at this juncture that Captain Howard, of the United States Army, performed such good service with the Gatling. Bush, concealed rifle pits, entrenchments, and dense woods, added to the difficulties of the attack.

The enemy occupied the head of the gully leading to the river, and this was cleared in a most brilliant way by Colonel Williams at the head of the Midland Regiment. Reinforcements arriving, it was determined to make a concentrated effort very shortly.

"The night which we had now to spend," writes one who was there, "will ever be a memorable one to the little force encamped before Batoche. In the corral, formed by about two hundred and fifty waggons, were enclosed some six hundred horses and about eight hundred men, besides teamsters. As soon as the men had their supper, strong pickets were placed outside the corral, in front of the waggons. The Midland, under Colonel Williams, with one company of the 90th, under Captain Forrest, took up a position on the edge of the bank overlooking the valley, to prevent a surprise from the enemy at that point; and during the whole night it kept up a dropping fire into the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

bush which clothed the bank of the river. This was done to prevent the enemy in any numbers sneaking up under cover to surprise the little force, and to keep the men awake; two-thirds of the force kept vigilant watch on all sides, as sentries, pickets, and skirmishers; for it was felt by the General that if there was any enterprise in the enemy we would be exposed to a night attack, which, in our crowded position, would have been very harassing, if not serious. Before dawn next day the teamsters were all roused and the troops astir, in case that hour should be selected for an attack. The greatest danger would have been the stampeding of the horses, as it would have embarrassed our movements, so the teamsters were ordered to stand by them. But dawn came and early morning passed without any disturbance, and the men got their breakfast in peace; thus a bright Sunday morning opened upon a scene of war and anxiety."

Early on Monday another reconnaissance was made and everything was now in order for the final onset. The fighting was at first very hot. Before long a messenger arrived from the insurgent Riel with a view to secure the safety of the women and children in his camp.

The Midlanders, the Grenadiers, and the 90th were soon in the thick of it; the artillery came thundering up; before the enemy could realise the position the attacking force had been skilfully manœuvred into a strong line extending over a mile. A charge, a deadly hail of bullets, a steady determination rendered furious by the death of their comrades—and the avenging army of Canadians was in the stubbornly held town of Batoche.

Riel, after scheming to obtain good terms for himself, decamped, shortly to be captured by some scouts.

In accordance with the plan we have adopted, we subjoin here the official account of this, the most important engagement which the newly organized army of Canada had yet undertaken.

General Middleton writes: "My force was then composed of:—

'A' Battery, two guns, 86 officers and men; Winnipeg half Battery, two guns, 40 officers and men,; one Gatling gun.

10th Royal Grenadiers	210	officers and men.
90th Regiment	254	,, ,,
Detachment Midland Regiment	81	,, ,,
Boulton's Mounted Infantry .	65	,, ,,
French's Scouts	28	,, ,,
Total	724	

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"Two companies of the Midland, 60 men in all, under Lieutenant-Colonel Williams, were extended on the left and moved up to the cemetery, and the Grenadiers, 200 strong, under Lieutenant-Colonel Grassett, prolonged the line to the right beyond the church, the 90th being in support. The Midland and Grenadiers, led by Lieutenant-Colonels Williams and Grassett, the whole led by Lieutenant-Colonel Straubenzee, in command of the Brigade, then dashed forward with a cheer and drove the enemy out of the pits in front of the cemetery and the ravine to the right of it, thus clearing the angle at the turn of the river. During all this time a heavy fire was kept up from the other side of the river, which annoyed our advance. This was kept down as we best could by a few of the Midland Regiment in pits on the bank of the river, and one company of the 90th Regiment was sent to support Lieutenant-Colonel Williams on the extreme left. The Midland Regiment and Grenadiers kept pushing on gallantly, led by Colonels Straubenzee, Williams, and Grassett, until they held the edge of the bluffs, surrounding the left part of the plain, where the houses were. Just before this a most promising young officer, Lieutenant Fitch of the Grenadiers, was killed. At this period one of the Winnipeg Battery guns was got into position where it could shell the houses on the plain, but after two or three rounds it was disabled and a gun from 'A' Battery took its place, and fired a few rounds, but not much damage was done, as the houses were not brick or stone. During this time I advanced the 90th so as to prolong the line of attack, and eventually brought down the Surveyor's Scouts, Boulton's Mounted Infantry, and French's Scouts, and dismounting still further prolonged the line on the right. The Gatling was now ordered up in front of the 90th to take the houses in flank, which was gallantly done by Lieutenant Rivers, 'A' Battery, and Captain Howard, and after a few volleys a general advance was made, with rattling cheers, and the whole of the houses were taken, the prisoners released, and the position virtually captured. It was at this period that the late lamented Captain French was killed by a shot from the ravine, while looking out of the window at Batoche's House. This officer's loss was keenly felt and mourned by the whole force. He had been with the force from the commencement and he was always ready for the front, and his cheerfulness and good-humour was proverbial and had a cheerful effect on the whole camp. I had already brought Captain French's name to your notice in terms of strong recommendation. A Company of the Grenadiers was sent along the river on our left up to the house of the rebel Champagne, and a company of the 90th was sent well forward on the right, as a few desultory shots were fired from a ravine there, and by evening all firing ceased, an-

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

I sent up to the camp for the men's blankets and food, and we bivouacked for the night around the buildings.

"As regards the actual number of men engaged out of my total force of 724 officers and men, owing to having to leave 100 men to protect my camp, leaving wounded and sick men, cooks, ammunition carriers, assistants to ambulances, etc., I was only able to bring 495 men into the engagement, and this included the artillery and Gatling, which owing to the nature of the position were not able to do so much damage as the infantry. So that with about 400 men we drove with heavy loss a force of (taking the lowest estimation) 600 half-breeds and Indians, many of them armed with long-range rifles, and who were considered the finest and best prairie fighters in the country, out of a strong position, carefully selected and entrenched by themselves.

"In concluding, I trust I may be allowed to think that the country has every reason to be proud of the conduct of its Volunteer Militia in this its first essay in arms, unassisted by regular troops, and it has equal reason to be proud of the Department which called out, equipped, and transported to the scene of action, from distances varying from 300 to 3,000 miles, this force, and, without failure in commissariat or transport, enabled the officer commanding to carry out, under exceptional circumstances, a successful campaign in less than four months."

It remains to notice that part of the campaign which fell to the lot of General Strange's column. Very shortly after the first news of the insurrection became known General Strange was appointed to the command of the Alberta district, and was instrumental in raising a troop of horse known as the Alberta Mounted Rifles.

It fell to General Strange's column to avenge the horrible massacre of Frog Lake, by which on the 2nd of April—Maundy Thursday—thirteen British subjects were murdered in cold blood. Some of the occupants of Fort Pitt, some thirty in number, threw themselves on the mercy of Big Bear, and the remainder, thanks to the courage and adroitness of Inspector Dickens of the mounted police,* reached Battleford. General Strange's column arrived at Fort Pitt on the 25th of May, and at once determined to make a demonstration in force against the hostile Indians who were still in the locality. As a consequence of this demonstration, and the subsequent operations, the turbulent Big Bear fled, and eventually surrrendered. The principal incidents of the expedition are described by General Strange in the following terms:—

"On receiving this intelligence from Major Steele on the evening of the 27th and that

* A son of the celebrated novelist.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the enemy were in his front, and that the scouts had counted 187 lodges, I immediately marched with all the troops at my disposal, leaving a company of the 65th under Captain Giroux to fortify and protect what remained of Fort Pitt. Camp equipage and stores I left behind, marching without tents. I had only three days' rations, no supplies having reached me since I left Edmonton, and the force was on reduced rations. My force consisted of 197 Infantry, rank and file, and twenty-seven Cavalry and one nine-pounder M.L.R. gun. Wishing to advance quickly I used all available waggons to carry W.L.I. detachment, and sent 65th detachment down river in flat boats to effect junction within striking distance of enemy.

"On reaching Major Steele I corralled the waggons under Captain Wright; I could not spare a guard to leave with them, but the teamsters were mostly armed. Advancing about four miles I found the enemy occupying a very advantageous position on a thickly wooded ridge from which they were signalling. I immediately extended and attacked, and drove them from the position without loss on our part. Major Steele with N.W.M.P. and scouts under his command, carried the position on the left with the assistance of one Company W.L.I. . . . The 65th, who, however, left their boats and advanced with alacrity on the first sound of the firing, leaving their uneaten dinners behind them. . . . had no blankets, great coats, or rations, having left everything in the boat, and their comrades in the W.L.I had little to share with them.

"At daybreak on the 28th I again moved foward towards Frenchman's Butte, finding numerous trails joining the enemy's forces from every direction. About 6.30 A.M. we found the enemy occupying an apparently impregnable position, presenting a salient hill forming a bare glacis slope, entirely exposed to fire from rifle-pits, in thick bush extending along the crest. The creek expanding into Muskeg covered the front and flanks of the position, which extended about two miles.

"Having reconnoitred to the edge of the creek without being fired on, as the enemy wished apparently to draw us into an ambuscade, I returned to the crest of the hill and brought up the gun, which opened fire and quickly drew a heavy response, and I deployed the small force at my disposal, throwing forward Major Steele's police and scouts dismounted down the hill to a fringe of willow brush near the edge of the creek. The 65th, under Lieutenant-Colonel Hughes, with two companies W.L.I. under Major Thibeaudeau, extended on their right. The two companies W.L.I. under Lieutenant Colonel O. Smith on the hill in support, Major Hatton, Alberta Mounted Rifles, covering right flank where the wood was thickest.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"The field-gun under Lieutenant Strange and Sergeant O'Connor, N.W.M.P., did good work, silencing some of the rifle-pits, and changing its position to enfilade in succession each face of the hill and rifle pits. It was subsequently ascertained that six at least of the enemy were torn by shells which exploded in the pits. . . . All the troops did their duty steadily to my entire satisfaction. My thanks are specially due to Major Dale, Brigade-Major; Major Steele, commanding Cavalry; Lieutenant-Colonel Smith and Hughes, commanding battalions; Captain Wright, Transport Officer; Lieutenant Strange, A.D.C., and Surgeon Pennefather, who made arrangements for the field hospital, and Surgeon Pari."

The whole force of the expedition was finally concentrated to effect the capture of this evanescent chieftain, who eventually, on being pursued by detachments under Colonel Otter and Colonel Irvine, surrendered to Sergeant Burton of the Mounted Police. So practically ended the Rebellion in the North-West, so far as the military are concerned.

We will now consider somewhat more in detail the composition of the force regarded as a factor in the fighting strength of the Empire. A recent commission elicited various opinions which are of undoubted interest in this connection. Sir Selby Smyth records his opinion that the Canadians possess, "in a marked degree, qualities to make excellent soldiers, being both hardy and industrious, used to rough life, easily subjected to discipline, and willing to submit to necessary authority. . . . There are no better soldiers than Canada can produce." Another authority, in a somewhat critical summary, quotes Batoche to prove that Canadians do well if well led, and in which emphasis is laid on the final dashing movement. "Colonel Staubenzee walked unconcernedly up and down the line and spoke to the men lying down under cover, or to their officers, saying what he was going to do, after which he gave the command to 'charge,' which was responded to with a cheer. It was the first charge of the campaign, and it brought a new life into the men, and the next news that General Middleton received in camp was that Batoche was taken, with many rebel prisoners."

The force as at present organized may be said to date from the year 1855, and consists, as has been said, of the Active Militia and the Sedentary Militia, composed of battalions of cavalry, artillery, and infantry, officered after the fashion of the British service, during good behaviour, and recruited by men who undertake to serve for three years. The Sedentary Militia consists of all those, under the age of sixty, who are not enrolled in the Active militia, and are capable of bearing arms, with the ordinary exemptions.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The whole is commanded by a major-general, with the assistance of an adjutant-general and permanent staff.

The origin of the Permanent Force may be referred to the time when the Imperial troops were quartered in Canada, and when it was permitted individual officers and men who wished to obtain a more thorough military training to spend a brief period with regiments to learn their duties. This led to the institution of military schools in the various provinces, where short and long courses of instruction can be obtained and certificates granted. With the growth of the country these schools were enlarged, and a small permanent force was organized, composed first of two battalions of artillery, and subsequently schools of cavalry and infantry, until now the permanent force of the country consists of about two thousand men, including the Mounted Police, which is one thousand strong. This force is divided up into permanent corps, of about one hundred and fifty men each, which form the various schools of instruction throughout the country for artillery, cavalry, and infantry tactics and drill. The Active Militia are called out annually to do twelve days' drill, which is generally performed in brigade camp, or under canvas at battalion headquarters.* Military schools have been established, and efficiency in all branches has been sedulously cultivated by the institution of competitions in the various arms, the excellence attained in which has been frequently observed in the meetings held in England. It may, indeed, be safely asserted that Canada supplies in a marked extent positive and overwhelming proof of the vast value in a military sense of the "uncalled capital" which should be at the command of the Empire and its Sovereign.

In any account of the Canadian Army mention must of necessity be made of the Royal Military College at Kingston, which is aptly described as "foremost amongst the military institutions of the Dominion, and a credit alike to it and to the mother country." This college was founded some fifteen years ago (in 1875), and was organized at once on a military basis, the gentlemen cadets being duly enlisted and during their period of pupilage being subject to the Queen's Regulations and "such other rules and regulations as Her Majesty's troops are subject to." They constitute, in fact, a Cadet Battalion in separate companies. Four commissions are granted yearly in the Imperial Army—one in each arm—to graduates in the college, lieutenancies in the Militia being given to those graduates who do not obtain these commissions.

By the Regulations, graduates of the Royal Military College of Canada holding rank in the Militia, but not at the time belonging to any corps of Active Militia, will wear the

* We have availed ourselves of Major Boulton's able summary of the present position of the force.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

infantry uniform when they desire to appear in uniform, with the exception that the badge or head-dress will be, instead of a numeral, the College Crest encircled with motto surmounted with Imperial Crown—crest, a mailed arm upholding a maple-leaf; motto, "Truth, Duty, Valour."

The Dominion Artillery Association above referred to dates from 1875, and has a continuous record of progress to boast since that date. To quote from the official report of last year—"The affiliations represent a force of about 3,000 officers and men, every one of whom took part in the several competitions, which were of a purely technical nature, and carried out under the supervision of the Inspector and Assistant Inspector of Artillery." The patron is the Governor-General, and the vice-patrons the Lieutenant-Governors of the various Provinces, with the Commander-in-Chief of the Militia, and the Adjutant-General, Colonel Walker Powell, to whose indefatigable exertions it is mainly due that the Militia Force in Canada has attained its present state of efficiency.*

The Dominion of Canada Rifle Association dates from 1877, and is under the patronage of the Governor-General, the list of vice-patrons being somewhat more extended than that of the Artillery Association—the General and Admiral in command of H.M. Military and Naval Forces, North America, the Minister of Militia, and the Premiers of the Dominion and the Provinces being added to those mentioned as the vice-patrons of the Artillery Association. In our reference to the several regiments we shall take opportunity to mention some of the triumphs won by members of the two Associations.

We will now consider, somewhat more in detail, the composition of the Army of Canada.

The Permanent Corps consist of the Cavalry School Corps, Quebec; the Regiment of Canadian Artillery; the Company of Mounted Infantry; the Infantry School Corps. The organization of the Permanent Corps dates from 1886, a statute passed in that year authorising the raising of one troop of cavalry, three batteries of artillery, and not more than five companies of infantry—the whole strength not to exceed one thousand men, and to be in addition to the ordinary active Militia. Not only do these permanent corps provide a splendid training establishment for all ranks, but, when occasion arises, as it did in the North-West Rebellion, they constitute a sort of *corps d'élite*, being composed of men who have had longer military training. It may not be out of place here

* The writer takes this opportunity of acknowledging the courteous assistance which has been afforded him as well by Colonel Walker Powell as Mr. C. F. Just, the Librarian of the Agency for the Dominion in England.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

to refer to the regulations affecting uniform which apply to the Dominion army. These are as follows:—

The uniform of the Militia is similar to that worn by the regular army; the facings of Cavalry are buff, Artillery scarlet, and Infantry corps clothed in scarlet are blue; those of Rifle corps clothed in green are scarlet; the 5th Battalion are permitted to wear the "kilt" with "bonnet" of established pattern of Highland regiments.

It will be of interest, moreover, to notice the regulations affecting the colours of the Infantry regiments. These are to be of silk, three feet nine inches flying, and three feet deep on the pike, exclusive of the fringe, which is about two inches in depth—the length of the pike, including the Royal Crest, to be eight feet seven and a half inches; the cords and tassels to be crimson and gold, mixed.

The Royal, or first, colour of every regiment is to be the Great Union, the Imperial colour of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, in which the cross of St. George is conjoined with the crosses of St. Andrew and St. Patrick, on a blue field. The first colour is to bear in the centre the Imperial Crown, and the number of the regiment underneath in gold Roman characters.

The regimental, or second, colour is to be of the colour of the facing of the regiment, with the Union in the upper canton. The number of the regiment is to be embroidered in gold Roman characters in the centre. On this colour, too, are to appear "the devices, distinctions, and mottoes which have been conferred by Royal authority; the whole to be ensigned with the Imperial Crown." As regards the precedence of the various corps the order is as follows:—

1st, The Gentlemen Cadets of the Royal Military College.
2nd, Cavalry School Corps.
3rd, The Governor-General's Body Guard of Cavalry.
4th, Regiments, Squadrons, and Troops of Cavalry.
5th, Regiment Canadian Artillery.
6th, Field Batteries.
7th, Garrison Artillery.
8th, Engineers.
9th, Mounted Infantry School Corps.
10th, Infantry School Corps.
11th, The Governor-General's Foot Guards.
12th, Battalions of Infantry and Rifles.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

13th, Provisional Battalions and Companies of Infantry or Rifles not in Battalion.

14th, Naval Brigades.

The corps of each arm take precedence according to the date of formation.

Before, however, considering the regiments in existence, some mention must be made of two other corps, one of which has ceased to exist, and the other, while retaining its Canadian title, has become merged in a regiment of the Imperial Army.

In 1841 was raised the ROYAL CANADIAN RIFLE REGIMENT, which had a career of some thirty years, being only disbanded in 1870, after having achieved a high position as a regiment. The uniform was somewhat similar to that of the King's Royal Rifles, the famous 60th, which, it will be remembered, originally bore the title of the Royal American Regiment.

The ROYAL CANADIANS, now the 1st Battalion of the Prince of Wales's Leinster Regiment, are the other corps to which we refer. Not only do they claim mention here on account of their strictly Canadian origin, but because, so far as we know, their formation was the first instance of a Colonial corps, as such, being raised for the Imperial Service. The period of the formation of the Royal Canadians was a memorable one. The Indian Mutiny was assuming proportions of terrible seriousness; people—and these not alarmists alone—began to fear for the integrity of the empire. Little wonder was it then that the proposal to raise the Royal Canadians was received with enthusiasm. The whole of the men and nineteen of the officers were to be Canadians, the rest of the latter were to be appointed from the Imperial Army. "The regiment," writes an author before quoted, "was organized in the old historic citadel of Quebec. For want of better, it was uniformed in the relics of bygone ages, stowed away among the military stores of the country. It only lacked pigtails and powder to make it appear as if one of the Duke's veteran battalions of the Peninsula had come to life. Especially curious to the people of England was the motley uniform of the 100th, for the old coatee had been long forgotten; and on our arrival in England we marched to Shorncliffe camp in this picturesque but obsolete uniform. The English people wondered what kind of soldiers had landed on their shores."

In the summer of 1858, the Royal Canadians left Canada for England, 1,200 strong, and on arrival at Shorncliffe were clothed in the ordinary uniform of Royal regiments, the Prince of Wales presenting them with their colours, and with the title of the Prince of Wales's Royal Canadian Regiment. It is indeed claimed that this was the first public ceremony performed by His Royal Highness. After service in Europe for some eight

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

years, the regiment returned to Canada, again going to England the following year, and afterwards serving in India and elsewhere. Many, however, of the first members of the regiment left it upon the completion of ten years' service, and remained in Canada, a goodly number of them taking an active part as militiamen in the rebellion of 1870. Amongst these may be mentioned Colonel Cassault, one of the first lieutenants of the regiment; Colonel Duchesnay, Colonel Fletcher, Colonel De Bellefeuille, Colonel Van Straubenzie, who joined the regiment in England; Colonel Grasset, who commanded the Royal Grenadiers in the campaign of 1885; Captain Hudson, of London, Sergeant-Major Burn, Lieutenant Carriere, Lieutenant Brown Wallis, Sergeant-Major Rance, Quarter-Master Grant, Lieutenant William Palmer Clark, Lieutenant J. G. Ridout, of Toronto, Colonel Lake, of Broadview, N.W.T., Carrol Ryan, E. A. Bailey, and many others, all qualified by discipline in the regiment.

The general militia of the Dominion—Cavalry, Artillery, Infantry, and Rifles—as they now stand, are as under:—

Cavalry.

The Governor-General's Body Guard for Ontario. Dragoons.

1st Regiment of Cavalry. Hussars.
2nd Regiment of Cavalry. Dragoons.
3rd Provisional Regiment of Cavalry. "The Prince of Wales's Canadian Dragoons."
4th Regiment of Cavalry. Hussars.
5th Regiment of Cavalry. Dragoons.
6th Regiment of Cavalry. Hussars.
8th "Princess Louise's New Brunswick" Regiment of Cavalry. Hussars.
The Queen's Own Canadian Hussars.

Independent Troops.

King's Troop of Cavalry. Hussars.
Prescott Troop of Cavalry. Dragoons.
The Princess Louise Dragoon Guards.
Winnipeg Troop of Cavalry. Dragoons.

Field Artillery.

1st Brigade of Field Artillery.

Field Batteries.

Durham Field Battery of Artillery.
Gananoque Field Battery of Artillery.
Hamilton Field Battery of Artillery.
Kingston Field Battery of Artillery.
London Field Battery of Artillery.
Montreal Field Battery of Artillery.
Newcastle Field Battery of Artillery.
Ottawa Field Battery of Artillery.
Quebec Field Battery of Artillery.
Richmond Field Battery of Artillery.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Shefford Field Battery of Artillery.
Sidney Field Battery of Artillery.
Toronto Field Battery of Artillery.
Welland Canal Field Battery of Artillery.
Winnipeg Field Battery of Artillery.
Woodstock (N.B.) Field Battery of Artillery.

Garrison Artillery.

1st "Halifax" Brigade of Garrison Artillery.
British Columbia Brigade of Garrison Artillery.
Montreal Brigade of Garrison Artillery.
New Brunswick Brigade of Garrison Artillery.
Prince Edward Island Brigade of Garrison Artillery.
Coburg Battery of Garrison Artillery.
Digby Battery of Garrison Artillery.
Gaspe Battery of Garrison Artillery.
No. 1 Battery, Levis Garrison Artillery.
No. 2 Battery, Levis Garrison Artillery.
Lunenburg Battery of Garrison Artillery.
Mahone Bay Battery of Garrison Artillery.
Pictou Battery of Garrison Artillery.
No. 1 Battery, Quebec Garrison Artillery.
No. 2 Battery, Quebec Garrison Artillery.
No. 3 Battery, Quebec Garrison Artillery.
Toronto Battery of Garrison Artillery.
Yarmouth Battery of Garrison Artillery.
Mountain Artillery, Sault Ste. Marie Half Battery.

Engineers.

Brighton Company of Engineers.
Charlottetown Engineer Company.
Montreal Company of Engineers.

Infantry and Rifles.

Governor-General's Foot Guards.
1st Battalion "Prince of Wales's Regiment."
2nd Battalion "Queen's Own Rifles of Canada."
3rd Battalion "Victoria Rifles of Canada."
5th Battalion "Royal Scots of Canada."
6th Battalion "Fusiliers."
7th Battalion "Fusiliers."
8th Battalion "Royal Rifles."
9th Battalion Rifles, "Voltigeurs de Quebec."
10th Battalion "Royal Grenadiers."
11th Battalion of Infantry, "Argenteuil Rangers."
12th Battalion of Infantry, "York Rangers."
13th Battalion of Infantry.
14th Battalion "The Princess of Wales's Own Rifles."
15th Battalion, "Argyle Light Infantry."
16th "Prince Edward" Battalion of Infantry.
17th "Levis" Battalion of Infantry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

18th "Prescott" Battalion of Infantry.
19th "Lincoln" Battalion of Infantry.
20th Halton Battalion "Lorne Rifles."
21st Battalion "Essex Fusiliers."
22nd Battalion "Oxford Rifles."
23rd "Beauce" Battalion of Infantry.
24th "Kent" Battalion of Infantry.
25th "Elgin" Battalion of Infantry.
26th "Middlesex" Battalion of Light Infantry.
27th "Lambton" Battalion of Infantry, "St. Clair Borderers."
28th "Perth" Battalion of Infantry.
29th "Waterloo" Battalion of Infantry.
30th "Wellington" Battalion of Rifles.
31st "Grey" Battalion of Infantry.
32nd "Bruce" Battalion of Infantry.
33rd "Huron" Battalion of Infantry.
34th "Ontario" Battalion of Infantry.
35th Battalion of Infantry, "Simcoe Foresters."
36th "Peel" Battalion of Infantry.
37th "Haldimand" Battalion of Rifles.
38th Battalion "Dufferin Rifles of Canada."
39th "Norfolk" Battalion of Rifles."
40th "Northumberland" Battalion of Infantry.
41st "Brockville" Battalion of Rifles.
42nd "Brockville" Battalion of Infantry.
43rd "Ottawa and Carleton" Battalion of Rifles.
44th "Welland" Battalion of Infantry.
45th "West Durham" Battalion of Infantry.
46th "East Durham" Battalion of Infantry.
47th "Frontenac" Battalion of Infantry.
49th "Hastings" Battalion of Rifles.
50th Battalion of Infantry, "Huntingdon Borderers."
51st Battalion of Infantry, "Hemmingford Rangers."
52nd "Brome" Battalion of Light Infantry.
53rd "Sherbrooke" Battalion of Infantry.
54th "Richmond" Battalion of Infantry.
55th Battalion "Megantic Light Infantry."
56th "Grenville" Battalion, "Lisgar Rifles."
57th Battalion of Infantry, "Peterborough Rangers."
58th "Compton" Battalion of Infantry.
59th "Stormont and Glengarry" Battalion of Infantry.
60th "Missisquoi" Battalion of Infantry.
61st "Montmagny and L'Islet" Battalion of Infantry.
62nd Battalion, "St. John Fusiliers."
63rd "Halifax" Battalion of Rifles.
64th Battalion of Rifles, "Voltigeurs de Beauharnois."
65th Battalion, "Mount Royal Rifles."
66th Battalion, "Princess Louise Fusiliers."
67th Battalion, "Carleton Light Infantry."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

68th "King's County" Battalion of Infantry.
69th "1st Annapolis" Battalion of Infantry.
70th "Champlain" Battalion of Infantry.
71st "York" Battalion of Infantry.
72nd "2nd Annapolis" Battalion of Infantry.
73rd "Northumberland" Battalion of Infantry.
74th Battalion of Infantry.
75th "Lunenburg" Battalion of Infantry.
76th Battalion of Rifles, "Voltigeurs de Chateauguay."
77th "Wentworth" Battalion of Infantry.
78th "Colchester, Hants, and Pictou" Battalion of Infantry, "Highlanders."
79th "Shefford" Battalion of Infantry, "Highlanders."
80th "Nicolet" Battalion of Infantry.
81st "Portneuf" Battalion of Infantry.
82nd "Queen's County" Battalion of Infantry.
83rd "Joliette" Battalion of Infantry.
84th "St. Hyacinthe" Battalion of Infantry.
85th Battalion of Infantry.
86th "Three Rivers" Battalion of Infantry.
87th "Quebec" Battalion of Infantry.
88th "Kamouraska and Charlevoix" Battalion of Infantry.
89th "Temiscouata and Rimouski" Battalion of Infantry.
90th "Winnipeg" Battalion of Rifles.
91st Battalion, "Manitoba Light Infantry."
92nd "Dorchester" Battalion of Infantry.
93rd "Cumberland" Battalion of Infantry.
94th "Victoria" Battalion of Infantry, "Argyle Highlanders."
95th Battalion, "Manitoba Grenadiers."
96th "District of Algoma" Battalion of Rifles.

INDEPENDENT COMPANIES.

New Westminster Rifle Company. St. John Rifle Company.

St. Jean Baptiste Infantry Company.

It must be remembered that previous to the period of Confederation each province had its separate Militia service, and under the Regulations and Orders, such of the officers of those Militia corps who were not re-enrolled on the passing of the Act of 1868, are considered as officers "on the retired list from the Militia of the province to which they belong," and are permitted to use the uniform of their regiment. It should not, moreover, be forgotten that the organization of the Militia is due almost entirely to Sir George Cartier, who was responsible for the "Militia and Defence Act" of 1868, on the lines of which the more recent enactments introduced by Sir A. Caron have been based. It must

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

also be borne in mind that the military forces of the Dominion have now the sole responsibility of the defence of the land passing under the domination, the only stations for Imperial troops being at Victoria and Halifax. "The regulation annual drill," as regards the City Corps—which roughly amount to nearly a fourth of the whole number—is put at twelve days annually, the Rural Corps having the same time biennially, in Camps of Exercise. A glance at the position Canada occupies with regard to the United States—a country which, it must be remembered, put, during the Civil War, no fewer than three million men into the field from first to last—will show of what vital importance to the empire it is that the Dominion Army should be effective. Not many months ago a clever, if somewhat pessimistic, writer in the *United Service Magazine* summed up the situation in the following words:—

"Casting a glance at the network of American railways we will find that they are admirably adapted for offensive operations against Canada; while offering no important railway parallel to and near the frontier, the destruction of which would affect the concentration of troops. The objectives for America are clearly marked—Halifax, Quebec, Montreal, Prescott, Kingston, Ottawa, Toronto, Winnipeg, and Vancouver. Halifax and Vancouver are certain to be most energetically attacked, for they will be the naval bases, besides Bermuda, from which England would carry on her naval attack on the American coasts and commerce. The American railway lines lead admirably for their purpose on to Quebec, Montreal, Prescott, Kingston, and Toronto. Albany and Bellow's Falls would be the bases of operations on the first four named towns, while the resources of the greatest western towns of Chicago, &c., can be easily concentrated at Detroit, and those of the eastern towns at Buffalo, for the invasion of the Niagara district and the surrounding of the Toronto Force."

Without necessarily subscribing to the conclusions the writer draws from his estimate of the position, it is obvious that, if we except the troops on the North-West frontier of India, there are no corps within the empire which are in a position of greater possible responsibility. Within the confines of a work such as the present, it would be out of place to refer more definitely to the disturbing influences which may at any time render the possibility referred to an imminent one. The nature of these influences is familiar to most, and it would be absurd to ignore the fact that a certain proportion of the American nation is actuated by unfriendly feelings towards England, and that in the event of this proportion of the populace attaining supreme power in directing the policy of the country, an attack upon the frontier of Canada would be an almost certain contingency.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

It would be obviously impossible to attempt, however interesting the result might be, anything of the nature of a full description of the various regiments of the Canadian Militia. We have been careful in relating the principal actions in which they have been engaged to mention those corps which were more particularly concerned, and to enter more in detail into the performances and achievements of any one regiment would involve a repetition interesting only to the specific corps referred to.

Dating as we must the constitution of the present force from a comparatively recent date (1868), we find, as has been observed, that the Red River Expedition, the Fenian Raid, and the North-West Rebellion are the principal occasions in the way of actual war services to which the corps can refer. There have, of course, arisen circumstances from time to time which have called for a demonstration of military forces. Such were the anticipated riots at St. John (N.B.), Belleville, and Quebec; at Montreal in July, 1878; the occasion of the anticipated disturbances on the Ottawa and Occidental Railway at St. Andrews; at Long Point, Port Dover, and Cape Breton; at Aylmer, Tamworth, and Winnipeg. But these occasions, on which the troops employed performed their duty satisfactorily, are not such as can be with propriety described in any account of a force of the rank and position to which the Canadian Militia not unjustly lays claim.

The CAVALRY SCHOOL CORPS, QUEBEC, have, as has before been mentioned, contributed not a little to the status acquired by the Militia. They were amongst the first troops ordered forward in the most recent campaign, while one at least of the present officers served during the Fenian Raid. In the North-West Rebellion they were under the command of Colonel Turnbull, and were stationed at Touchwood Hills, a position which prevented their participating to any great extent in the principal engagements.

A recent testimony to the calibre of the Canadian Cavalry may here be quoted. At a recent Commission, Colonel Jenyns was examined as to Canadian horses. He stated that "they were wonderfully good horses . . . as good troopers as he ever saw," and that "they stand a great amount of hard work and exposure."

The REGIMENT OF CANADIAN ARTILLERY rendered, as will be remembered, services of the greatest value during the North-West Rebellion, the present Lieutenant-Colonel, C. E. Montizambert, being in command of the Artillery, while most of the other officers played a distinguished part. The "A" Battery were attached to the column under General Middleton, and at Fish Creek Hill Majors Drury and Peters particularly distinguished themselves; the shell firing being described by an eye-witness as having a splendid effect, the roar of the cannon, and the scream of the bursting shells giving

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

encouragement to those engaged on our side and evidently dismaying the enemy. Lieutenant Rivers was in command of the Gatling guns which did such good service at Batoche, during the capture of which a portion of the Battery had to share the uninteresting but necessary task of guarding the corral. The "A" Battery subsequently took part in the pursuit of Big Bear. The "B" Battery under Major Short were attached to Colonel Otter's column, and at Cut Knife Hill were actively engaged, Captains Rutherford and Farley and Lieutenants Pelletier and Prower being amongst the officers present. Major Short had a narrow escape, a bullet passing through his cap.* Amongst those of the brigade who lost their lives during the campaign were Acting-Bombardier Armsworth and Gunners Sharbentier, Cook, De Manolly, and Phillips; while amongst the wounded were Lieutenant Pelletier, Staff-Sergeant Mawhinney, Corporal Morton, Acting Bombardier Taylor, and Gunners Asselin, Fairbanks, Harrison, Imrie, Langarell, Ouellette, Reynolds, Stout, Twohy, Turner, and Wilson. Of the officers some have served in the Red River and Fenian engagements, while two at least hold the valued medals for war services in the Imperial Army.

The same general remarks apply to the COMPANY OF MOUNTED INFANTRY, many of whose officers were also seen in the North-West Rebellion, and in the operations against the Fenians. Colonel Taylor and Riding-master Gardiner have the Imperial service medal. We may perhaps add, as showing that the Company of Mounted Infantry are not unmindful of the motto "If you wish for peace prepare for war," that in 1886, Major Buchan gained the Governor-General's Medal in the shooting competition.

The INFANTRY SCHOOL CORPS calls for a somewhat more lengthened notice. We have seen of what incalculable service they were during the North-West Rebellion. Some were attached to the column under General Middleton, and some to that under Colonel Otter, the former being commanded by Major Smith, and the latter by Lieutenent Wadmore. They were hotly engaged at Fish Creek, where Private Watson was killed, and Privates Dunn, Jones, Harris, M'Donald, H. Jones, and Sergeant Cummings more or less severely injured. During the attack on Batoche they were on the steamer *Northcote*, which operated from the river, and at one time were attacked by the whole strength of Riel from both sides; none, however, were wounded. The portion of the corps which was with Colonel Otter's column had some sharp fighting at Cut Knife Hill, Bugler Foulkes being killed and Serjeant-major Spackman being wounded.

* According to Boulton, the only remark which this unpleasantly "close shave" elicited from the gallant major, was a regretful reflection that the "cap was a new one."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE 6th REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (HUSSARS, CANADA).

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE GOVERNOR GENERAL'S BODY GUARD FOR ONTARIO* date from 1855, when they were organized to meet a recognised want. The name of Lieutenant-Colonel Denison will for long be identified with the troop, towards the high efficiency of which he has so much contributed. During the recent Rebellion the Body Guard were stationed at Humboldt. Many of the officers have, moreover, taken part in the engagements against the Fenians.

The 1st REGIMENT OF CAVALRY HUSSARS† and the 2nd REGIMENT OF CAVALRY DRAGOONS† both date from May, 1872, the headquarters of the former being at London, and of the latter at Oak Ridges. The Cavalry regiments as such have not been fortunate enough to take part in any of the more important engagements above referred to, though individual members have from time to time participated as Volunteers.

It must, however, be remembered that, "in the brave days of yore," there were Cavalry regiments amongst the Volunteers who served so well. Such, for instance, were Merritt's Yeomanry, who were in that famous battle of Queenstown Heights where Brock fell, and the stern charge of the Canadian soldiers gave earnest of their heritage of victory.

The 3rd PROVISIONAL REGIMENT OF CAVALRY, the "Prince of Wales' Canadian Dragoons,"‡ date from April, 1875, and have their headquarters at Coburg. The commanding officer is Colonel Boulton—one of the diminishing number of old Canadian officers who took part in the fighting of the Rebellion of 1837-1838.

The 4th REGIMENT OF CAVALRY HUSSARS date from April, 1875, and perpetuate the memory of the Frontenac Horse. Their headquarters are at Kingston, and amongst their officers are some who have participated in the Fenian and North-West Expeditions.

The 5th REGIMENT OF CAVALRY DRAGOONS§ were organized in November, 1877, and were principally recruited from the St. Andrew's Cavalry Volunteers, and the 6th REGIMENT OF CAVALRY HUSSARS, better known as the Divisional Cavalry, date from November, 1879, and have their headquarters at Montreal. The commanding officer, Colonel Barr, served in the Red River Expedition.

* The uniform of the Governor-General's Body Guard is blue with white facings, white plume on steel helmet, and silver lace. They have as a motto "Nulli Secundus."

† The uniform of the 1st Hussars is blue with buff facings; that of the 2nd Dragoons blue with white facings and plume of the same colour. It should be remembered that the regiments designated "Hussars" do not wear the busby associated by us with Cavalry of that name.

‡ The uniform of the 3rd Dragoons is scarlet with yellow facings, and black and red plume.

§ The uniform of the 5th Dragoons is blue, with white facings and white plume, and that of the 6th Hussars, blue with buff facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 8th (Princess Louise's) NEW BRUNSWICK REGIMENT OF CAVALRY HUSSARS* date from 1869. By General Order of 1884 they were allowed to assume as a badge the coronet of H.R.H. The Princess Louise, surmounting a Garter within which is the number VIII. together with the motto, "Regi Patriæque Fidelis." The 8th are not without distinction in the various competitions in which they have taken part. In 1882 Trooper Langstroth gained the Governor-General's Prize, and in 1884 and 1887 Sergeant G. Langstroth gained the Governor-General's Medal.

The QUEEN'S OWN CANADIAN HUSSARS† date from 1856 and were originally known as the Quebec Squadron; their headquarters still being at that city.

Of the Independent Troops the KING'S TROOP OF CAVALRY (Hussars) date from 12th June, 1874, the PRESCOTT TROOP OF CAVALRY (Dragoons) from December, 1871, the PRINCESS LOUISE'S DRAGOON GUARDS from 1872, and the WINNIPEG TROOP OF CAVALRY (Dragoons) from 1878. The uniform of the Independent Troops is, speaking generally, similar to that of the other Cavalry regiments, having blue uniform with white facings. The Princess Louise's Dragoons have as a badge a joint monogram of H.R.H. The Princess Louise and of the Marquis of Lorne, with the coronets of a Princess and Marquis. The Winnipeg Troop of Cavalry are the only regiment which as such took part in the North-West Rebellion, during which they were stationed at Fort Qu'appelle, under the command of Captain Knight. In 1887 Trooper Clarke gained the Governor-General's Medal.

Of the MILITIA ARTILLERY a great deal might be said. They have their triumphs to chronicle, their steady progress to boast. Very early in the military records of the Dominion do we meet mention of the "Gunners." There was a Halifax Field Battery in 1776, concerning whom we have but space to chronicle their uniform. This was a blue cloth coatee with a red-edged cape, the skirt turned up with white, and blue-faced lappels; they had, too, a white waistcoat, blue pants, and "half boots," with a round hat on which was the Hanoverian cockade. Somewhat later the addition of a gilt button in the centre of the cockade was added.

We do not propose to dwell here on the services rendered by the Artillery in the first and, in one sense, most important of Canada's wars, that of 1812. The exhaustive accounts by James and Thomson, and the graphic history we have before quoted, will give in full, though not wearisome detail, the various engagements and operations in

* The uniform of the 8th Hussars is blue with buff facings.

† The uniform of the Queen's Own Canadian Hussars is blue with buff facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

which the services of the force were displayed. We read of Swayzee's Militia Artillery adding their "deathful thunder" to the storm of sounds which rolled round Queenstown; we know how in later years the same force, despite their somewhat antiquated field-pieces, wrought right manfully and well on the occasions when ball and bullet and powder added their convincing roar to the stern mandate given to foes and rebels—"Thus far and no farther!"

We must content ourselves with reminding our readers of the more recent occurrences which have called for the performance of their devoir, and the official reports which have chronicled the zeal and completeness with which that devoir was rendered.

The First Brigade of Field Artillery* was organized in 1880, and the various Batteries on the dates following: The Durham Field Battery (Headquarters, Port Hope) in 1872; the Ganauoque Field Battery, which so early as 1862 was organized as a Garrison Battery, was changed to Field Artillery in 1872; the Hamilton Field Battery was organized in December 1855; the Kingston Field Battery in 1856; the London Field Battery in 1856; the Montreal Field Battery in 1855; the Newcastle Field Battery in 1868; the Ottawa Field Battery in 1855; the Quebec Field Battery in 1855; the Richmond Field Battery in 1877; the Shefford Field Battery in 1872; the Sydney Field Battery in 1883; the Toronto Field Battery in 1866—first as Garrison and three months later as Field Artillery; the Welland Canal Field Battery in 1861; the Winnipeg Field Battery in 1871; and the Woodstock in 1866 as Garrison Artillery, and in 1874 as Field Artillery. Of recent years none of the Batteries—with the exception hereafter referred to—have been comparatively engaged in any important campaigns, though as might be expected many of the officers and men—amongst whom may be mentioned Major Hood of the 2nd Brigade, 1st Field Battery, Major McKenzie of the Ganauoque, Major Peters of the London, Major Stevenson and Dr. Truwick of the Montreal, Major the Hon. H. Aylmer of the Richmond, Major Arnyrauld of the Shefford, Major King of the Welland—have seen service in the Fenian disturbances.

The Winnipeg Field Battery were fortunate enough to participate in the North-West Rebellion, and serve with considerable distinction in General Middleton's column in the operations at Fish Creek and against Batoche. In the former engagement they were not actively engaged, two of the guns under Captain Jarvis only being ordered forward, when, to use the General's expression, "the affair was nearly over." At Batoche,

* The uniform of the Field Artillery is blue with scarlet facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

however, they were in "the thick of it," Major Jarvis and Captain Coultee being specially referred to in the report for their valuable service. Major (then Captain) Young, of the battery, was acting as Brigade Major, and rendered most excellent service throughout the campaign. To him was consigned the custody of the rebel Riel after his surrender, "a charge which involved the utmost responsibility on Captain Young." No casualties were reported, despite the active participation of the battery in the engagement.

Amongst the peaceful triumphs of the Field Artillery we may mention that in 1882 the 1st Brigade gained the Gzowski Cup, and in 1889 Quartermaster-Sergeant Armstrong gained the McDougall Challenge Cup, and Quartermaster-Sergeant Ogg, the London Merchants' Cup; in 1889 Sergeant Loggie, of the Newcastle Field Battery, gained the Governor-General's Medal; in 1879 Sergeant McMullen, of the Winnipeg Field Battery Artillery, gained the Governor-General's Medal.

The GARRISON ARTILLERY have, as has been said, eighteen brigades and batteries, the dates of organization of which are as follows: the Halifax Brigade, 1869; the British Columbia Brigade, 1883; the Montreal Brigade, 1856; the New Brunswick Brigade, 1869; the Prince Edward Island Brigade, 1882; the Coburg Battery, 1866; the Digby Battery, 1869; the Gaspe Battery, 1873; the No. 1 Battery, Levis, 1878; the No. 2 Battery, Levis, 1880; the Lunenberg Battery, 1862; the Mahone Bay Battery, 1869; the Pictou Battery, 1875; the No. 1 Battery, Quebec, 1878; the No. 2 Battery, Quebec, 1880; the No. 3 Battery, Quebec, 1880; the Toronto Battery, 1866; the Yarmouth Battery, 1878. There is also the Sault Ste. Marie Half Battery of Mountain Artillery. Of these the Montreal Field Battery were attached to General Strange's column in the campaign of 1885, and were stationed at Regina, while the Halifax Battery supplied part of the Provisional Battalion under Colonel Bremner.

Other batteries, however, contributed individual members to the Canadian Artillery; from the Halifax Brigade, Bombardier Bontillier and Gunner Millie; from the Digby Battery, Gunner Woodman; from No. 3 Quebec Battery, Gunner Moison; from the New Brunswick Brigade, Sergeant Richardson; from the Yarmouth Battery, Gunner Porter. Of these Gunners Woodman and Moison were wounded.

The Garrison Artillery have gained several prizes in competitions. In 1879, Gunner Adams of the 1st Brigade Halifax Garrison Artillery, gained the Governor-General's Medal, which was again won in 1881 by Sergeant Shand, by Lieutenant Adams in 1882, by Captain Garrison in 1886 and 1887, and by Major Garrison in 1888. In 1880

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Sergeant Butler of the British Columbia Brigade Garrison Artillery gained the Governor-General's Medal, Captain Jones in 1886, Sergeant Newbury and Bomb. Winsby in 1887 gaining the same prize.

Of the Montreal Brigade Garrison Artillery, Lieutenant Laurie gained the Governor-General's Medal in 1879, 1880, 1883, and 1884, Gunner Johnson gaining the same prize in 1882. The same prize was gained by Sergeant Hunter of the New Brunswick Brigade in 1876; by Sergeant Johnstone, of the Prince Edward Island Brigade Garrison Artillery in 1885, and 1886 by Corporal Gillis, and in 1875 by Lieutenant Macnaghtan of the Coburg Brigade; and in 1882 by Lieutenant Jonnker of No. 2 Battery, Levis Brigade.

The ENGINEERS * are as has been stated composed of three companies, the "Brighton" Company, organized in 1880, the "Charlottetown" Company, organized in 1878, and the "Montreal" Company organized in 1861. But also it may be as well to refer here to a fact which will not have escaped the notice of the reader, that the Batteries of Artillery and Companies of Engineers are given in alphabetical order, the last-named, as in the case of the Montreal Company of Engineers, having very often an earlier official date of commencement. It will, however, be observed hereafter when dealing with the Infantry Battalions, that the *order* is in many cases arbitrary, and some would say inexplicable. The Engineers have as Inspector the Professor of Fortifications of the Royal Military College (at the time of writing, Major Stuart Davidson, R.E.), and there are in addition a "Staff Officer to the Engineer Force," and an "Engineer Officer at Headquarters."

Though not, perhaps, strictly connected with the Engineer Companies, it may not be out of place to refer here to the very important work which devolves upon the Engineer Branch of the Militia Government Department. The Engineer Branch was organized in 1884, in consequence of the "transfer of the care and maintenance of all the military buildings and fortifications from the Department of Public Works to that of Militia and Defence." Amongst the duties for which this Branch is responsible are the highly important ones of devising and carrying out new works for military purposes, and the preservation in a state of due efficiency of those at present existing. It is obvious that to a greater or less extent this portion of their labour is one which lends itself the more readily to the co-operative and skilled existence of the more purely military components of the force.

* The uniform of the Engineers is scarlet with blue facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The Engineer Companies have not been corporately engaged in warfare.

Amongst those of the corps who have gained prizes in competitions may be mentioned Private Miner who gained the McDougall Cup in 1870; Major McDougall, Sergeant Hooper, and Sapper Davison, who in the years 1880, 1882, 1884, and 1885, gained the Governor-General's Medal, Sapper Davison being twice successful; and Sapper Anderson who gained the Rideau Medal in 1889.

The GOVERNOR-GENERAL'S FOOT GUARDS* take their place at the head of the Infantry. As now organized they date from 1872, and naturally occupy the position of a *corps d'élite*, and there exists between them and Her Majesty's Coldstream Guards a sentiment of that *camaraderie* which we have often had to notice as forming a bond between regiments widely separated. By the Regulations, "The Regimental, or Second, colour of the Governor-General's Foot Guards is to be blue, with the Union flag in the dexter canton, and bearing a star of six points, each of the points bearing the initials of one or more of the different Provinces of the Dominion with the Royal cypher in the centre, encircled with the Union-wreath. The Regimental title on a scroll beneath, surmounting a beaver, and a wreath of maple leaves with motto, *Civitas et Princeps cura nostra*." In the North-West Rebellion they were attached to Colonel Otter's column and saw plenty of service, their organization supplying a body of sharpshooters commanded by Captain Todd. After the relief of Battleford, when Captain Todd determined on reading Poundmaker a lesson, the "Ottawa Sharpshooters," as the band was called, advanced under Lieutenant Gray with the attacking column. In the attack on the enemy's position the Foot Guards were on the right flank and before the retreat was effected experienced some loss, Privates Osgood and Rogers being killed and Colour-Sergeant Winter and Private McGuilken being wounded. When the time came for reckoning up the cost, "the dead," writes Major Boulton, "were all taken off the field with the exception of Private Osgood of the Ottawa Sharpshooters (Governor-General's Foot Guards). Osgood being reported absent a party was sent back for him, which met the Ambulance Corps with a body which they said was Osgood's; this was not found to be incorrect until too late to again seek for it. Osgood when shot had, it appears, fallen into a coulée, and thus escaped the notice of those near him." It would be unfair to omit mention of the valuable services rendered by Lieutenant Bate, of the Foot Guards, who occupied an important and onerous position as Superintendent of

* The Governor-General's Foot Guards wear scarlet uniforms with gold lace and bearskins.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE 2nd QUEEN'S OWN RIFLES (CANADA).

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Supply at "Swift Current." In accordance with our plan, we subjoin a short *précis* of the successes achieved by the Foot Guards at the butts.

In 1874 Sergeant Sutherland gained the Grand Aggregate Prize, in 1878 Private Morrison the McDougall Cup, and in 1879 Private Anderson the same. In 1883, 1884, and 1889 the Regiment gained the Gzowski Cup; in 1882 and 1884 Lieutenant Waldo and Sergeant Armstrong respectively gained the Governor-General's Medal. In 1884, 1887, 1888 and 1889 the Foot Guards gained the British Challenge Shield.

The 1st Battalion Prince of Wales' Regiment* occupy the position of senior regiment on the present organization. Since their formation in November, 1859, the Regiment have not participated in any of the better-known engagements. In 1879 Private Rodgers gained the Governor-General's Medal.

The 2nd Battalion Queen's Own Rifles of Canada† date from April, 1860. Five years after their formation they took an active part in opposing the Fenian outbreak, and were somewhat prominently engaged at Ridgeway. It is very much to be wished that a more detailed account than now exists were written of the various occasions in which the "Fenian Scare" has called for the mustering of the Militia. Such an account would prove two things, which subjects of the Empire at large are prone to overlook—the power for annoyance possessed by even a contemptible foe, and the resources of the Dominion which fit it to cope not only with such, but with a more formidable and better organized attack. "We scorn them, but they sting," may well be the confession of sons of the Empire when reflecting on the loss in life and money entailed on us by savage warriors and treacherous Boers in far off Africa, by the fierce though chivalrous Maori, by the indomitable robber tribes of India, by miscreants within our borders whose practice of assassination and murder by dynamite almost exalts by comparison their rare and burlesque attempts at open rebellion into a pardonable crime. One of the best accounts that we have seen of the Fenian "invasion" of 1865 is given by a well-known and popular writer of fiction,‡ and as the Queen's Own Rifles were concerned we will give his description of the "Battle of Ridgeway" in his own terms.

* The Prince of Wales' Regiment have a red uniform with blue facings, and the motto "Nulli Secundus."

† The Queen's Own have a dark green uniform with scarlet facings. The badge and device are a maple leaf, on which a scroll or garter clasped with a buckle, and bearing the legend "Queen's Own Rifles," and the motto *In pace paratus*, encircling the figure 2 and surmounted by the Imperial Crown. The other ornaments—cross belt, &c.—are a lion's head, a maltese cross of black enamel having between the arms four lioncels (silver) passant gardant between two wreaths of maple leaves.

‡ Hawley Smart: "Sunshine and Snow."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"It seemed that after much speechifying and fierce denunciation of the Saxon for some two days in Buffalo, a body of Fenians, on the night of May 31st, had crossed the Niagara, and seized upon Fort Erie. As to what actual strength they were in, the Government were without information; but they did understand the importance of Fort Erie.

"'Second edition! Fenian invasion of Canada! Great success! Capture of Fort Erie!' sounded somewhat imposing, vociferated in Broadway, and made the New York world opine, that there really was a backbone to this much-talked-of conspiracy, but the Canadian Government were of course aware that Fort Erie was an abandoned stronghold of former times, and open to be taken possession of by any large-hearted conspirator, who was armed with a spade with which to clear his path through the thistles. Still the authorities were quite alive to the fact that Fenians, in numbers more or less, had made their appearance on Canadian soil; were requisitioning (military shibboleth for felonious confiscation of property) horses, provisions, and liquors, most especially liquors; that they were tearing up the rails, and had cut the telegraph wires in the direction of Chippewa. Further came rumours of their being in great force near St. Albans in Vermont; and they were reported to be five thousand strong opposite Montreal and Edwardsburg."

Then came the tidings that they were marching on Chippewa. "Hot on their track followed Peacock (colonel of the 16th, and commander of the column). If he had no artillery, he was also quite aware that they had none; and though in some little uncertainty about their actual numbers, he had no reason to believe they were more than the force under his command was perfectly competent to deal with. And now occurred one of those curious incidents that so constantly take place in great wars. Marching with a breast-high scent on the road to Chippewa, hearing of the insurgents at every mile post, listening to jeremiads concerning the fate of Chippewa, an he got not there in time to prevent its being sacked, fired, or what not, Brigadier Peacock passes a bye-lane leading to the village of Ridgeway in the first instance, and to the bank of the River Niagara and Fort Erie in the second. It was up this bye-lane the Fenians, after landing, had originally come and struck into the Chippewa road. It was very pardonable never to suspect that the enemy, of whose doings you were continually hearing in your front, had suddenly lost heart, rapidly retreated, and turning down the very bye-lane from which he had emerged, was once more on his way to the river. At all events this idea never occurred to Colonel Peacock or any of his staff. They pushed forward as fast as they

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

could manage to do along the Chippewa road, leaving the rabble they had been sent to disperse quietly encamping themselves down that bye-lane on the ridge from which the village derives its name. There the Fenian army requisitioned itself, more especially in the matter of fluids, wont, like Sir John, to take much sack with two-penn'orth of bread, an idea somewhat prevalent amongst filibusters generally. Colonel Peacock, meanwhile, pushing rapidly forward on what he conceives to be the track of the rebels, bivouacs for the night about eight miles beyond that bye-lane, on the sides of the highway to Chippewa.

"The Queen's Own Volunteers from Toronto arrived in due time at Port Colborne, only to find that the regulars had left, and, of course, they pushed on in compliance with their orders, in pursuit of Brigadier Peacock, but before they reached this famous bye-lane, which plays so prominent a part in the history of the great Fenian invasion in Canada, they became aware that the enemy were occupying Ridgeway, and after some slight reflection, the colonel of the Toronto Volunteers resolved to attack them. . . . General O'Neil, of the Fenian army, may, or may not have been a great general. It is difficult to develop the qualities of a great commander when you command a Falstaffian army. He had at present seized Hoffman's Tavern, a position to which, if its name carried actual meaning, he could depend upon his followers staunchly clinging, as the key of his position, and thrown out his men in skirmishing order amidst the scrub that crowned Ridgeway Ridge, a position of some strength in many ways, more especially as both masking his numbers and the quality of his troops; a position, too, calculated to give some confidence to his ragamuffin battalions, insomuch as the shooting at men who cannot see you is immeasurably more comforting than shooting at men who can.

"The volunteers speedily felt this; they were shooting at mere puffs of smoke in a thicket, but the denizens of the thicket, though making peculiarly bad practice, had, at all events, their foe in the open to fire upon. The colonel of the volunteers saw a few of his corps fall, and was totally ignorant of in what strength the enemy might be; further, he had no idea of where Colonel Peacock and his column were at this moment, and remembered that his orders had been to place himself under that officer's command. The Toronto riflemen, in short, were undergoing that baptism of fire most trying of all to the uninitiated; when the first few victims of the war Moloch plunge or stagger in their tracks, before the tumult of combat had commenced, before the madness of battle has quickened the pulses, and that they were a little unsteady in consequence may be easily conceived.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"At last, the chief of the volunteers, failing utterly to discover in what force the enemy might occupy the scrub in his front, seeing no signs of approaching reinforcements, and conscious that some score or more of his men had fallen in this futile attempt to feel the foe, reluctantly gave the order to retire. The volunteers, carrying off both their dead and wounded, retreated slowly and sullenly amidst the tumultuous and triumphant yells of the Fenians; and thus, after a sanguinary struggle of twenty minutes, ended the memorable battle of Ridgeway.

"General O'Neil, meanwhile, though flushed with a pardonable pride in his apparent victory, had his own anxieties. There had not been that influx of sturdy recruits to the green banner with its golden harp that he had anticipated; in short, he had been joined by nobody. The supporting bodies that were to follow him he could hear nothing of. He was quite aware that his force, though posted in the scrub, and liberally allowanced with 'Bourbon,' had wavered considerably during the combat. He knew that had the volunteers made a determined rush at his position, never a man of his command had bided the result of it. He was aware, moreover, that a column of regulars was already in his vicinity, and let the strength of that column be comparatively small, yet it was tolerably sure to outnumber his ragamuffin army. Further prosecution of the great enterprise was impossible, all he could hope was to bring himself and his men safe off. And he therefore resolved to fall back once more on the Niagara."

It would be difficult to find any description of the battle which more faithfully describes the incidents that occurred. The next important service of the Queen's Own was in the North-West Rebellion. In this they were attached to the column under Colonel Otter, and were under the immediate command of Colonel Millar. A company of sixty under Captain Brown took part in the reconnaissance in force of 2nd May, 1885, and the regiment also supplied the ambulance service for that expedition. Colonel Otter describes their share in the proceedings as involving a participation in what proved one of the sharpest brushes of the day. "Lieutenant Brook, Q.O.R.," he writes in his report, "most pluckily led the party to clear our left rear, and Sergeant McKell, Privates Acheson and Lloyd of the same corps, distinguished themselves by assisting the wounded to places of safety in the face of heavy fire, Private Lloyd himself being wounded in this duty. The ambulance corps of the Queen's Own was particularly prominent in answering the numerous calls from the front for assistance, many times having to traverse ground that was raked by the enemy's fire. Surgeon Leslie, Q.O.R., rendered willing and valuable service to the injured. To my personal staff, including Captain Mutton,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Q.O.R., I owe many thanks for their boldness, promptness, and assiduity." Amongst the wounded were Colour-Sergeant Cooper, and Privates Varey, Lloyd, Watts, and Fraser.

Subjoined is a list of the successes of the Queen's Own in the shooting competitions.

In 1881 Staff-Sergeant Walker gained the Gzowski Cup, and in the same year he gained the McDougall Cup and the Grand Aggregate Prize. In 1882 the McDougall Cup was gained by Sergeant Thompson, and in 1886 by Private Bartlett. The regiment gained in 1884 the Caron Cup, and in 1889 the Gzowski Cup. In 1886, Sergeant Kennedy gained the Governor-General's Medal, and in 1887 and 1889, Private Duncan gained the Governor-General's Prize and the Dominion of Canada Match. In 1889 Sergeant Crooks won the Ouimet Match.

The 3rd BATTALION "VICTORIA RIFLES * OF CANADA," date from 1862, and gained their first laurels in the Fenian inroad of 1865.

"Eccles Hill" which commemorates their services against the Fenians is well nigh forgotten now, but many can still remember the excitement which pervaded all ranks when "war's alarm" bid fair to become a dire reality. In an article which appeared a little after, commenting on the previous attempts, the writer went on to say:—

"But this year everything was different. The movement was not suspected forty-eight hours before the Fenian bayonets glistened in the Canada sun. Arms and supplies had been collected so gradually and so quietly that their existence was not known to any but the chosen few. The false alarm a few weeks before had so disgusted all parties, that, when the real wolf came, the cries of the watch were long unheeded. Hubbard's, the Fenian rendezvous and camp, is at the summit of a little rise in the road, about one mile from the line. It is a picturesque spot, with broad meadows stretching out on the south-east, and a rocky bluff overhanging it on the west. Underneath the tall trees, which stand like a line of sentinels on one side of the road, the Fenians stored their supplies and made their bivouac. It was at this point that all the munitions for the force had been collected during the week. With a view to guarding against the mistake of the first raid, when there were plenty of men but no guns, the Brotherhood had on the ground arms sufficient for five thousand men. This is General O'Neill's statement, and it was confirmed by appearances; for, at the time of the advance, some four hundred men had been armed, and but a small portion of the guns had been unpacked.

"The story of the engagement at Richards' Farm has been often told, and is familiar to all who care. On the part of the Fenians, it was a succession of disasters from begin-

* The Victoria Rifles have a green uniform with scarlet facings, and the distinction of "Eccles Hill."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

ning to end; and imbecility and cowardice produced a complete failure. Each new movement seemed to complicate the difficulties of the situation. A company of skirmishers in close order and with fixed bayonets, ran down the hill, received the fire of the enemy, and then ran back up the hill. They took shelter at the inhospitable house of Mr. Alvah Richards. The rest of the army ran up into the woods, and got behind trees. Here they received volleys from the Canadians and a speech from O'Neill.

"Across the line, on Eccles Hill, lay seventy-five Canadians, pointing their remorseless Snider or Spencer rifles at every uncovered spot, and sending a shower of bullets at any head that showed itself in range. From noon till dark, the Dominion riflemen preserved their restless vigil while the Fenians kept the shelter of Richards', unable even to retreat. Anon the word would come, that the Canadians were advancing upon the house; and terrified Irishmen would huddle together, and with pale faces count the minutes they had to live. Then Donnelly would storm at them for their cowardice, order them out into the angle behind the house, form them in military order, and await the onset of the enemy. But the onset never came; for the Canadians were careful to violate no law, and kept strictly on their own soil." We make no apology for thus quoting in full one—and that of the best—of the few accounts which are accessible of this exploit. The "Distinction," one of the few borne by the Canadian Regiments, shows the share the Victorias had in the affair.

The vacant position of 4th Battalion used to be occupied by a regiment called the "Chasseurs Canadiens" of Montreal, which, however, has for some years ceased to exist. According to Christie the "Canadian Chasseurs" were embodied in September, 1812, and were amongst the forces at the head of which the gallant Sir George Prevost set himself to defend the frontier. In mentioning here this regiment which has ceased to exist we may be allowed to refer to the fact to which the Canadian Chasseurs amongst other corps so emphatically testified, namely, the genuine and selfless loyalty displayed by the French portion of the community. It must be remembered that scarcely yet was even England free from the memories of the jealous suspicion entertained towards the Roman Catholic subjects of the British crown.

"The evil that men do lives after them;
The good is oft interred with their bones."

The splendid service rendered to Queen and country by the Roman Catholics at the time of the Armada had been forgotten; all that was thought of was their unpopular activity under the Stuarts, and the stubborn loyalty with which they clung to the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE 5th ROYAL SCOTS OF CANADA,

MONTREAL.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Royal line which had forfeited the Crown. Scarcely twenty years before the formation of the Canadian Chasseurs Edmund Burke had addressed an English constituency in the following eloquent words:—"When the English nation seemed to be dangerously if not irrevocably divided—when one, and that the most growing branch, was torn from the parent stock and engrafted on the power of France, a great terror fell upon this kingdom. . . . You remember the cloud that gloomed over us all. In that hour of our dismay, from the bottom of the hiding-places into which the indiscriminate rigour of our statutes had driven them, came out the body of the Roman Catholics. They appeared before the steps of a tottering throne with one of the most sober, measured, steady, and dutiful addresses that was ever presented to the Crown. . . . The address showed that all subjects of England had cast off all foreign views and connections, and that every man looked for his relief from every grievance at the hands only of his own national government." Such was the principle which actuated the inhabitants of Montreal and its district in the troublous times of 1812, and the Canadian Chasseurs and other regiments which then sprang into being proved at once their loyalty and their valour in many a well-fought field.

Their subsequent career has been comparatively uneventful, though they have a good record to show in marksmanship. The Governor-General's Medal was gained in 1876 and 1882 by Lieutenant Wolfenden; in 1877 by Sergeant Fletcher, and in 1883 and 1886 by Colour-Sergeant Woolacot. The year 1889 was a red letter year in their chronicles. The British Challenge Shield was won by the regiment, Private Burns gained the Governor-General's Prize and the Manufacturers' Prize, while the Lansdowne Aggregate was secured by Staff-Sergeant McAdam.

The 5th Battalion Royal Scots of Canada* date from 1872, and were formerly known as the "Royal Light Infantry." They served in General Weatherell's Force, and distinguished themselves at the capture of St. Eustache. They did not take any share in the North-West Expedition. Their successes at the butts are as follows:—

In 1886 Staff-Sergeant Wynne and Private Smith gained the Governor General's Medal, and in 1887 Lieutenant Vaughan gained the McDougall cup. In 1888 Captain Hood gained the Governor-General's Medal, and in 1888 and 1889 the regiment gained the Gzowski Cup.

* The Royal Scots wear Highland uniform, and have as a badge "A boar's head with the motto *Ne Obliviscaris* in the Garter under it."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 6th Battalion Fusiliers* date from 1862, and were represented in the Fenian Raid to which reference has been before made. The present Surgeon, Dr. Bell, served in the North-West Campaign in the Field Hospital, No. 1. Amongst their achievements on the shooting range may be mentioned that of Private Marks, who in three years, 1881, 1885, and 1887, gained the Governor-General's Medal; of Private Riddle who gained the same prize in 1882 and 1884, and of Colour-Sergeant Waters who won it in 1885. In 1883 and 1889, the 6th gained the British Challenge Shield and the Minister of Militia's Challenge Cup.

The 7th Battalion Fusiliers† date from 1866, and used to be called the "London Light Infantry." In 1889 the battalion was reorganized. In the North-West Rebellion they were commanded by Colonel W. de R. Williams, and were chiefly employed at Clarke's Crossing. There were no casualties.

The 8th Battalion Royal Rifles date from 1862. By a General Order of October, 1883, they were granted as "badge and motto:—A lion's head and whistle to be connected with three chains, all in silver, a centre ornament on a polished silver plate between two wreaths of laurel leaves of frosted silver, conjoined at the base, including a Maltese cross of frosted silver, between the arms of the cross four *lioncels, passant gardant;* charged upon the centre of the cross a plate of frosted silver inscribed with the number of the battalion in Roman letters, VIII., surrounded with a border also of frosted silver inscribed with the words 'Royal Rifles'; on a silver scroll charged on the base of this centre ornament, where the wreaths are joined, and inscribed with the regimental motto, *Volens et Valens.* Over all the Imperial Crown in silver resting upon a supportive tablet of the same. The pouch belt ornaments of sergeants to be of similar form, but of bronze instead of silver."

Though the battalion was not engaged in the North-West Rebellion the present senior major, Major Prower, served in the "B" Battery of Canadian Artillery.

The battalion has had several successes in shooting competitions. In 1874 and 1883 Lieutenant Balfour gained the Governor-General's Medal, and in 1880 the Governor-

* The 6th Fusiliers have a red uniform with blue facings. The official description of the badge is as follows:—

Quarterly: First, *or*, a Beaver proper on a mount, *vert.* Second, *gules*, a Lion *passant, or.* Third, *azure*, a Grenade, *argent*, embellished *or.* Fourth, *argent*, a sprig of three maple leaves proper. The whole within a garter, *azure*, buckled and fimbricated *or.*

Crest: An Indian warrior proper, holding a bow in his dexter hand, and having a quiver of arrows over the sinister shoulder.

Motto: "*Vestigia nulla retrorsum.*"

† The 7th Fusiliers have a scarlet uniform with blue facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

General's Prize, in 1880 and 1883 Captain Philips and Lieutenant Forrest gained respectively the Governor-General's Medal and the Grand Aggregate Prize. The regiment in 1886 gained the British Challenge Shield; in 1887 and 1889 the Gzowski Cup.

The 9th BATTALION (VOLTIGEURS DE QUEBEC) date from March, 1862. Under Colonel Amyot they were called out at the time of the North-West Rebellion, being stationed chiefly at Calgary and Gleichen. Lieutenant Pelletier of the regiment was attached to the "B" battery, R.C.A., and fought at Cut Knife Hill, where, to quote the language of the commanding officer's report, "he was wounded early in the action, while gallantly encouraging his men in the face of a hot fire." Amongst the marksmen of the regiment may be mentioned Private May, who in 1868 gained the McDougall Cup.

The 10th BATTALION ROYAL GRENADIERS,* date from 1862, and may be considered as one of the finest regiments in the Dominion. The present commanding officer, Colonel Dawson, one of the extra aide-de-camps to the Governor-General, saw service at the time of the Fenian Raid, and was second in command of the regiment during the supression of the North-West Rebellion. In this war the Grenadiers gained deserved praise. Almost immediately on their arrival at Qu'Appelle they were ordered to the front, "with teams to hasten their march and save the men." At Fish Creek they were in the column under Colonel Montizambert, and arrived on the scene somewhat late, relieving the Winnipeg Rifles in their arduous position. To the Grenadiers fell the honour of actually commencing the fighting about Batoche. Two companies advanced into the bush and were received by a heavy fire from the concealed rifle pits of the enemy. Moor was killed, and Captain Mason, in command of No. 2 Company, wounded. During the operations preliminary to the final attack Captain Manley was wounded. When that attack was made, "Colonel Garrett advanced his regiment straight to the front," a movement which was completed under a brisk fire from the front as well as the opposite side of the river. Steadily yet rapidly they advanced, with the enemy's bullets pouring in amongst the ranks, though fortunately with less fatal effect than might have been anticipated. With a cheer the Grenadiers and Midlanders dashed forward, "and drove the enemy out of the forts in front of the cemetery and the ravine to the right of it." Successful though the movement was, the general satisfaction was chequered by the

* By G. O. of August, 1879, the Royal Grenadiers were granted as a badge:—"In centre on shield, figure 10 with crown on top; behind both and showing above crown and 10, a sheaf of spears; on dexter side thistle and shamrock; on sinister side roses, and in base maple leaves. The shield surrounded with garter, bearing the motto *Ready, Aye, Ready*, which is surrounded by a wreath of laurel leaves, behind which, and extending outside wreath, a military star. The whole surmounted by a Royal Crown. The 10th also have the distinction, 'Batoche.'"

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

death of Lieutenant Fitch, "a most promising young officer." Batoche was won, and the Grenadiers had right well earned their distinction. Amongst the wounded, in addition to those mentioned, were Major Dawson,* Staff-Sergeant Mitchell, Corporal Foley, Privates Brisbane, Eager, Millsom, Martin, Marshall, Barber, Cantwell, Quigley, Cook, Stead, Scovell, and Bugler Gaghan. Some fifty of the regiment were with the force which General Middleton took in pursuit of Big Bear, Major Dawson being left in command at Battleford. As a short summary of the achievements of the Grenadiers at the butts we may mention that in 1873 Sergeant McMullen gained the Governor-General's Prize and Medal, and in 1875 Captain Anderson gained the Governor-General's Medal. In 1878 and 1879 respectively Private Bell gained the Grand Aggregate Prize and the Governor-General's Medal. In 1880 and 1888 Sergeant T. Mitchell gained the Grand Aggregate Prize, and in 1887 he gained the Governor-General's Medal. In 1883 and 1889 the regiment gained the Gzowski Cup and the British Challenge Shield, and in 1889 the Ouimet Match, the Governor-General's Prize, and the Martini Matches were gained by Private Simpson. In the same year Sergeant T. Mitchell gained the London Merchants' Cup, the Governor-General's Prize, and the Martini Matches.

The 11th Battalion of Infantry, the Argenteuil Rangers † date from March, 1862. The Battalion has not been engaged in any of the more recent occasions when the Militia has been called out.

The 12th Battalion of Infantry, York Rangers ‡ date from 1866. At the time of the North-West Rebellion four companies of the 12th and four companies of the 35th —the Simcoe Foresters—were formed by Colonel O'Brien of the latter regiment into a battalion called the York and Simcoe Rangers. Their first station was at Fort Qu'Appelle, after which they went on to Humboldt, and they did not participate in the more active operations. Their achievements in the shooting-field may be thus summarised.

In 1884, Sergeant Bell gained the Governor-General's Medal, and in 1889 the London Merchants' Cup. In 1888 Lieutenant Brown gained the McDougall Cup, and in 1889 the regiment gained the British Challenge Shield, and in 1885 the Gzowski Cup.

The 13th Battalion of Infantry date from 1862, the 14th (the Princess of Wales'

* Major Dawson was particularly mentioned in the General's report.

† The uniform is red with blue facings. As a badge the 11th bear a military star with the numeral 11, and the full title of the regiment. Round the whole is a wreath of maple leaves surmounted by the Imperial Crown, underneath being the motto "No Surrender."

‡ The York Rangers have as a motto *Celer et audax.*

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

OWN RIFLES), and the 15th (THE ARGYLE LIGHT INFANTRY),* from January, 1863. The 13th Battalion rendered good service at the time of the Fenian incursion, and the 15th was one of the regiments which contributed to form the "Midland Battalion" on the occasion of the recent rebellion in the North-West, in which Colonel Smith, now of the 14th, also took part. The part the Midland Battalion under its gallant commander, Colonel Williams of the 46th, played in the various engagements which terminated in the collapse of Riel's rebellion is well known. Grenadiers, Midlanders, and the 90th vied with each other as to which should earn the greatest credit, and it would be hard to say to whom the palm should be accorded. Amongst the officers of the 15th who were present we may mention Major Cazier, Captain Halliwell, and Lieutenant Kenny, of whom the second named was wounded in the left shoulder during the attack on Batoche.

Although the 13th Regiment has not taken part in the more recent fighting work of the army, few regiments can show a better record of good shooting.

In 1873 and 1875 Sergeant D. Mitchell gained the McDougall Cup, and in 1875 and 1876 he gained the Grand Aggregate Prize, and in 1880 he gained the Governor-General's Medal, gaining again in 1889 the Manufacturers' Match. In 1876 Private T. Mitchell gained the McDougall Cup, and in 1879 Private W. Mitchell gained the Governor-General's Medal. In 1886 and 1889 Captain Zealand gained respectively the Governor-General's Medal and Prize. In 1889 Lieutenant Margetts and Private Murdock gained the Revolver Match, and in the same year Sergeant Goodwin gained the Manufacturers' Match, the Snider Aggregate, and the Lansdowne Aggregate. In the same year the Bankers' Prize (Grand Aggregate) and the Standing Match was gained by Captain Ross. In 1885 the regiment gained the British Challenge Shield, and in 1889 Corporal Morris gained the Dominion of Canada Match, the Snider Aggregate, the Ouimet Match, the Lansdowne Aggregate, the London Merchants' Cup, and the Governor-General's Prize. In 1882 he also gained the Governor-General's medal. The 14th (Princess of Wales' Own Rifles) won the Rideau Medal in 1889.

The 16th (PRINCE EDWARD) BATTALION OF INFANTRY, the 17th (LEVIS) BATTALION, and

* The Argyle Light Infantry bear as device and motto :—The Garter, surmounted by a crown, and inscribed thereon "Argyle Light Infantry," within the Garter the numeral XV. surmounted by a boar's head. The Garter is surmounted by a wreath of maple leaves supported by the colours of the Battalion, and underneath the motto, *Nulli Secundus*.

Where the uniform is not specially described, the ordinary description before given applies, *i.e.* scarlet with blue facings, or, in the case of Rifle Regiments, dark green with scarlet.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the 18th (PRESCOTT) * BATTALION, all date from February, 1863, being organized within a few days of each other. The 16th was represented at the Fenian outbreak.

The 19th (LINCOLN) BATTALION, and the 20th (HALLON) BATTALION (Lorne Rifles) both date from September 8th, 1866. Though in recent years neither regiment has taken an active part in the better-known achievements of the Canadian army, the "Lincoln" can at least boast the possession of a name which their predecessors of 1812 made a famous one. There were five "Lincoln" regiments amongst the British forces at Queenston Heights, and from the many names of those who there upheld the honour of their cause may be mentioned Crook and M'Ewan of the 1st Lincoln, Hamilton and Stone of the 2nd, Nellies and W. Crook of the 4th, Hall, Durand, and Applegate of the 5th. Side by side with the York volunteers, "with 'Brock' on their lips and revenge in their hearts," charged the men of Lincoln in that furious onset which gained the day for Canada. Amongst the "foremost in frontier fray" from the very commencement of the war had been Thomas Clark, Lieutenant-Colonel of the 2nd Militia. He it was who, on the 4th July, 1813, the anniversary of the American independence, embarked with forty of his regiment, crossed the river and captured a fort, considerable munition of war, and fifteen prisoners. A week later the same number of men under Clark accompanied Colonel Bishopp's force in his brilliant attack upon Black Rock Fort. But we cannot linger longer upon the deeds of the Lincoln regiments of old. Should occasion arise, doubtless, their successors of to-day would quit themselves as well and manfully as did the heroes of 1812.

The 21st BATTALION (ESSEX) FUSILIERS, and the 22nd BATTALION (OXFORD) RIFLES,† date, the former from June, 1885, and the latter from August, 1863. Both regiments were represented during the Fenian raid, many of the members rendering good service.

The 23rd (BEAUCE) BATTALION date from April 1869, the 24th (KENT), the 25th (ELGIN), the 26th (MIDDLESEX), the 27th (LAMBTON) "St. Clair Borderers,"‡ the 28th (PERTH), the 29th (WATERLOO), the 30th (WELLINGTON), the 31st (GREY), the 32nd (BRUCE), the 33rd (HURON), and the 34th (ONTARIO), all date from the 14th of September, 1866, and have not had the opportunity of engaging in active service. Many of the senior officers, Colonel Martin and Major Denhardt of the 24th, Colonel Lindley and Major Bradley of

* The 18th have as a motto *Paratus et Volens.*

† The Oxford Rifles have as badge and motto:—A Maltese Cross having at each of its angles a British lion, and in the centre the numerals 22, encircled by the additional designation of the Battalion, "The Oxford Rifles." The whole encircled by a wreath of maple leaves surmounted by the Imperial crown, with the motto, *Pro aris et focis*, on the wreath, at base of badge.

‡ The St. Clair Borderers have as a motto, *Semper Paratus et Fidelis.*

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the 25th, Major Hamilton of the 28th, Colonels Clarke, Brodie, and Coleman of the 30th, 31st and 33rd respectively, served on the occasion of the Fenian disturbance. Captain Cook of the 28th served with the Militia in the Red River Expedition, and Lieutenant Grierson served in the Q.O.R. in the North-West Rebellion. The Governor-General's Medal has been won by Private Henderson of the 25th (1881), by Lieutenant Conboy of the 30th (1888), by Lieutenant Mitchell of the 32nd (1881), by Captain Wilson and Colour-Sergeant Muirs of the 33rd in 1881 and 1882 respectively; while Lieutenant Mitchell also gained in 1883 the Governor-General's Prize, and in 1889 the Standing Match Competition; Captain Wilson, before-named, gained the Governor-General's Prize in 1881, and in 1888 the Huron Battalion won the Caron Cup.

The 35th BATTALION OF INFANTRY, THE SIMCOE FORESTERS* also date from September, 1866, and, as has been observed, contributed four companies to the constitution of the York and Simcoe Rangers on the occasion of the North-West Rebellion. They were also represented in the suppression of the Fenian disturbances. In 1885, the present commanding officer, Colonel O'Brien, was in command of the composite battalion, Major Ward acted as adjutant, and many of the other officers were in command of companies.

The 36th (PEEL) BATTALION OF INFANTRY† date from the same date, September, 1866, and have been represented by existing members of the regiment both in the Fenian and North-West disturbances. The 37th (HALDIMAND) BATTALION OF RIFLES, the 38th BATTALION (DUFFERIN) RIFLES OF CANADA,‡ and the 39th (NORFOLK) BATTALION OF RIFLES§ all date from the 28th of September, 1866. The 37th and 38th have not been

* The Simcoe Foresters have as a motto *Spectemur Agendo.*

† The Peel Battalion has a motto *Pro aris et focis.*

‡ The Dufferin Rifles bear the following which we give in the words of the General Order:—

"Badge &c. The Badge and Device of the Battalion shall consist of the Earl of Dufferin's crest (comprising a cap of maintenance surmounted by a crescent), underneath which are the numerals 38, the whole encircled by a scroll or garter, clasped with a buckle and bearing the legend 'Dufferin Rifles' and his lordship's motto, *Per vias rectas,* the whole surmounted by the Imperial Crown. The badge shall be of silver for officers and bronze for non-commissioned officers and men.

"Cross belt ornaments.—A lion's head, chain, and whistle in silver with a centre ornament on a polished silver plate between two wreaths of maple leaves of frosted silver conjoined at the base, encircling a Maltese cross of frosted silver, fimbricated with polished silver—between the arms of the cross four lioncels *passant gardant*—charged upon the cross a plate of frosted silver inscribed with the numeral 38, surrounded with a border also of frosted silver, inscribed with the words 'Dufferin Rifles.' Over all the Imperial Crown in silver resting upon a supporting tablet of the same. A centre ornament of silver on pouch at back of belt consisting of the numerals 38, surrounded by a bugle, the whole surmounted by the Imperial Crown."

§ The Norfolk Rifles bear as badge:—A Maltese Cross surmounted by the Imperial Crown, at each angle of the cross a British lion. In the centre of the cross the numeral 39, encircled by the regimental designation, "Norfolk Rifles, Canada."

Badge for cross belt, to be a Maltese Cross as above described, encircled by a wreath of maple leaves surmounted by the Imperial Crown. Badges to be silver for officers, bronze for non-commissioned officers and men.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

actively employed on either of the occasions which since their formation have called for the services of the Militia, though some of the officers of the latter served in the North-West Campaign. Colonel Coombs, Major Ryerson, and Captain Price of the Norfolk Rifles served against the Fenians.

The 40th (NORTHUMBERLAND) BATTALION OF INFANTRY date from October, 1866, and were one of the regiments which contributed a company to the formation of the Midland Battalion in 1885, Captain Bonnycastle of the Campbellford Company being then in command of the "B" Company of the battalion.

The 41st (BROCKVILLE) BATTALION OF RIFLES* and the 42nd (BROCKVILLE) BATTALION OF INFANTRY both date from October, 1866. The present commanding officers of both regiments, Lieutenant-Colonel Cole and Lieutenant-Colonel Matheson, saw good service at the time of the Fenian outbreak.

The 43rd (OTTAWA AND CARLETON) BATTALION OF RIFLES† date from August 1881. Many of the present officers, including Major Wright,‡ Captains Billings, Bell, and Rogers, and Lieutenant Lawless served in the 1885 expedition, while two of the officers, Captain Macdonald and Lieutenant Humphreys, had "been out" against the Fenians. The 43rd have, moreover, to boast other more peaceful exploits at the butts.

In 1883 Lieutenant Chamberlain gained the Mc'Dougall Cup, and in 1887 and 1889 the regiment gained respectively the Caron Cup and the Gzowski Cup. In 1889, Captain Rogers gained the Manufacturers' Match, Colour-Sergeant Boville gaining in the same year the Standing Match. In the same year Lieutenant-Colonel Anderson gained the Lansdowne Aggregate, Lieutenant Jamieson the Martini Matches, Colour-Sergeant Fairburn and Major Sherwood the Revolver Match, and Private Hutcheson the Snider Aggregate, the Bankers' Prize, Grand Aggregate, and the London Merchants' Cup.

The 44th (WELLAND) BATTALION OF INFANTRY § date from November, 1866, and were represented in the Fenian affair.

* The Brockville Rifles bear as badge and motto.—A Maltese Cross surmounted by a Crown. In the centre the Battalion numeral, 41, crossed rifles above, a beaver below. Under the Beaver the motto, *Semper Paratus.* The whole surrounded by a wreath of maple leaves, outside of which are the words, "Brockville Battalion of Rifles."

† By General Orders the Ornaments and Devices of the Ottawa and Carleton Rifles are, cross-belt a Lion's head, chain, and whistle. The centre ornament to consist of a Maltese Cross having in each of its angles a Lion, in centre the regimental motto "Advance" in a double circle round the numeral 43, the whole encircled by a wreath of maple leaves surmounted by a royal crown, with the words "Ottawa and Carleton Rifles" on a scroll at foot.

Badge for forage cap.—The Maltese Cross forming the centre ornament of the cross belt.

Ornament for Pouch.—A bugle suspended by a knotted ribbon with cord and tassels. The ornaments with devices in silver for officers, bronze for non-commissioned officers and men.

‡ Major Wright served as commissariat officer to General Strange's column.

§ The 44th have as a motto *Mors aut Victoria.*

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The 45th (WEST DURHAM) BATTALION OF INFANTRY were organized on the same date and were one of the regiments contributing the Midland Battalion, Major Deacon being attached to the staff, and Major Hughes commanding the "C" Company, the latter being specially commended in the General's report.

Amongst their shooting successes the 45th record that in 1884, Staff-Sergeant Russell gained the Grand Aggregate Prize, and in 1887 the Governor-General's Medal. In 1885 Sergeant King gained the Grand Aggregate Prize, and in 1889 Private Curtis gained the Martini Matches, Private Windatt the Bankers' Prize, and Sergeant Horsey the same.

The 46th (EAST DURHAM) BATTALION OF INFANTRY* also date from November, 1866, and were represented in the Fenian disturbance. They were, so to speak, the parent regiment of the Midland Battalion, contributing two companies to its composition. Major Dingwall commanded the "E" Company, Captain Winslow, the "D" Company, Captain Preston being second in command, Quartermaster Clemmes who, like Major Dingwall, was one of the "veterans" of the Fenian outbreak, was Quartermaster to the battalion; Lieutenant Smart served under Major Dingwall, and Dr. Wight was also present.

The 47th (FRONTENAC) BATTALION OF INFANTRY have the same date of official origin, and was another of the constituent regiments of the Midland Battalion, Captain Kelly being in command of the "F" Company. Sergeant Baillie gained the Governor-General's Medal in 1873, and in 1889 was the victor in the Manufacturers' Match.

The 49th (HASTINGS) BATTALION OF RIFLES date from the same period. They are amongst the regiments which claim a participation in the suppression of the Fenian outbreak, no fewer than four of the present officers having then served. The Hastings contributed a company to the Midland Battalion, Captain Harrison being in command of the "H" Company, to which Captain Smith was also attached. Dr. Tracey of the regiment was one of the surgeons of Field Hospital No 1. The Governor-General's Medal and the Grand Aggregate Prize have been gained respectively by Sergeant Bennett in 1874, and Private Kimmerly in 1884.

The 50th BATTALION OF INFANTRY (HUNTINGDON BORDERERS)† date from 1866. The distinction "Trout River" borne by them, recalls an episode in the ill-known Fenian

* The 46th have as a motto *Semper Paratus.*

† By General Order of May, 1871, the Huntingdon Borderers have "On battalion colour the words 'Trout River.' Device and motto, the Garter, surmounted by a crown, on which is inscribed the words 'Huntingdon Borderers.' Within the Garter the numeral of the battalion (L.) in Roman letter. The Garter surrounded by a wreath of Maple leaves, and underneath the motto *Nec aspera terrent* inscribed on a scroll. In three corners of the colour a maple leaf."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

invasion of 1870. To a certain extent in some cases, the world in general reverses the role of *laudator temporis acti*, and comes at last to take *omne ignotum pro infinitissimo*. But at the time the alarm was genuine and well-founded enough. It was well remarked in an account which appeared a short time after that "Montreal awoke one morning to hear its newsboys shouting themselves hoarse over 'specials' and 'extras,' and to see its volunteers hurrying in many directions to do battle against the invaders."* The frontier stations south of Montreal were threatened, and popular excitement was kept at fever heat by telegrams following in quick succession. The article to which we have referred gives a summary of these which we will quote.

No. 1. Potsdam Junction.—Two companies, cavalry; three car-loads of men arrived here from Rome on 26th. No fight before Saturday.

No. 2. Malone, 26th May.—All quiet, one hundred and fifty Fenians arrived, they leave for Trout River.

No 3. South Hinchinbrook.— Operator just said good-bye; Fenians close at hand.

No 4. Huntingdon, 26th May.—Fenians got large reinforcements last night, six field pieces; provisions plenty; expect to fight to-morrow.

No. 5. Hinchinbrook.—Seven hundred well-armed Fenians at hand.

No. 6. Potsdam Junction.—Just returned from Fenian camp. Two hundred in all; fifty deserters during night; they have one hundred and fifty waggon loads of ammunition, &c., arms computed at eight thousand stand, rifles, chiefly Springfield, converted, five hundred Sniders, six brass guns, very light; all on way to St. Regis and Fort Covington; no provisions; two hundred more arrive at noon.

No 7. Waterdown.—Two hundred Fenians, under General Gleeson, and five hundred United States soldiers passed here for frontier.

No. 8. Huntingdon, 26th May.—One operator at South Hinchinbrook has come to office, and reports Fenians have seized office there, and are advancing on Huntingdon.

At Huntingdon the Canadian Militia had concentrated to the number of some three regiments, and it became evident that the invaders meant fighting. The scene was one of excitement, characterised on the part of the Canadians by an instinctive prescience of success. Yet to all appearance success might well be for their foes, whose strength had been variously estimated, and whose latent resources, bearing in mind the country from which they came, were a problem not easy of solution. Before long "the head of the hostile column came moving up the road from Huntingdon at a long swinging pace.

* "St. James's Magazine," New Series, vol. 9.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

When it reached Hinchinbrook its leading companies were turned to the right to gain the line of woods that skirted the cultivated ground—the main body of the advance was pushed up along the road directly towards the hop-gardens, from which a bend in the road still concealed them. Behind this advanced line, which was deployed into skirmishing order, came a company of the 69th Regiment, and farther off followed that regiment, while the Montreal Garrison Artillery crossed the river near Hinchinbrook and moved down to threaten the Fenian position upon its right flank.

"Behind it the ground was covered with the débris of the fleeing force. Swords, scabbards, Springfield breechloading rifles, black leather cartridge pouches, grey canvas knapsacks, pieces of pork, unscabbarded bayonets, waist belts engraved with 'Irish Republican Army'; everything in fact, except the soldiers themselves. We soon reached the boundary-line. The bugles had been braying out 'cease fire' for some seconds before they were obeyed, the boys evidently thinking this opportunity of driving Snider bullets at the rate of five per minute from each rifle, across the line into Uncle Sam's territory was an event not likely to occur soon again, and one which should, therefore, be made the most of. Accordingly it was some little time before Trout River could with any degree of safety to itself look out of doors, but by-and-bye the bugles, backed by repeated injunctions to cease fire, made themselves clearly understood, and the Borderers, dropping their Snider butts on the ground, sent a ringing cheer after their discomfited foes, whose precipitous retreat had carried them far behind the village houses." Such is an account—and a fair one—of the engagement in which the Huntingdon Borderers earned their distinction of Trout River.

The 51st Battalion of Infantry, the Hemmingford Rangers, and the 52nd Battalion, the Brome Battalion of Light Infantry, both date from September, 1886. Colonel Hall, the commanding officer of the latter, is one of the comparatively few Canadian officers who can claim to have served in the rebellion of 1837 as well as the subsequent Fenian outburst. In the list of prizes won at the butts the 51st record that in 1884 the McDougall Prize was won by Corporal McNaughton.

The 53rd (Sherbrooke) Battalion,* and the 54th (Richmond) Battalion,† both date from March, 1867. In 1888 Lieutenant Spearing of the 53rd gained the Governor-

* The Sherbrooke's device and motto :—The Battalion numeral, LIII., in Roman characters, surrounded by a circle inscribed with the word "Sherbrooke." The whole enclosed by a wreath of roses, shamrocks, thistles and maple leaves, surmounted by a Royal Crown ; underneath a beaver ; above a scroll bearing the motto *In hoc signo vinces.*

† The 54th bear as badge :—Shield *argent*, bearing a cross *sable*, with figures 54 in centre, between four Cornish choughs *proper;* surrounded by a ducal coronet, *or* a chough rising *proper.*

Motto :—*Steady.* The whole surrounded by a wreath of maple leaves with beaver.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

General's Medal, and in the following year tied with Sergeant Clark for the first place in the competition for the Minister of Militia's Prize. In 1875 Major Thomas of the Richmonds gained the McDougall Cup, and in 1889 the Minister of Militia's Match and the Lansdowne Aggregate. In 1876 Captain Boyd gained the Governor-General's Medal.

The 55th (MEGANTIC) LIGHT INFANTRY * date from March, 1867, and the 56th (GRENVILLE) BATTALION, "Lisgar Rifles," from April in the same year. Neither battalion was called upon for active service in the North-West Rebellion. In 1889 Lieutenant Bedford of the Lisgar Rifles gained the McDougall Prize.

The 57th BATTALION OF INFANTRY, "PETERBOROUGH RANGERS,"† date from May, 1867, and were one of the regiments called upon to contribute to the Midland Battalion, Captain Brennan being second in command of the "G" Company.

The 58th (COMPTON) BATTALION OF INFANTRY date from October, 1867, the 59th (STORMONT AND GLENGARRY) BATTALION ‡ from July, 1868, the 60th (MISSISQUOI) § from February, 1879. The title "Glengarry" recalls—as is the case with many of the present regiments—the corps of the same name which gained considerable prestige in the campaign of 1812-14. The Glengarry Light Infantry and the Cornwall and Glengarry Militia formed the bulk of the small force which, in November, 1812, crossed the St. Lawrence and captured the Salmon River Fort. Their origin and subsequent gallantry under Colonel Macdonnell have been before referred to. || We have before referred to the short campaign of which "Eccles Hill" was the principal encounter, and the part taken by the Missisquoi Battalion will be well remembered by all familiar with the details of the struggle. Amongst those of the officers who took part in the action

* The "Megantic Light Infantry" bear as device and motto :—the garter surmounted by a crown, on which the word Megantic is inscribed. Within the garter the numeral (LV.) of the Battalion in Roman letters. The garter is surrounded by a wreath of maple leaves and supported by the regimental colours, and, underneath, the motto *Semper Paratus* inscribed on a scroll.

† The "Peterborough Rangers" bear as device and motto :—A beaver, under which are the numerals LVII. encircled by a scroll or garter clasped by a buckle, and bearing the designation "Peterborough Rangers," the whole surrounded by a wreath of maple leaves entwined with the rose, the thistle and the shamrock, and surmounted by the Imperial Crown. Underneath all, the motto *Quis Separabit.*

‡ The "Stormont and Glengarry" Battalion of Infantry bear as devices and motto on the Regimental Colour :—In the first corner, the crown and beaver, with the motto *Quis Separabit;* in the second corner, two axes, crossed; in the third corner, a ship; and in the fourth corner, a sheaf of grain surrounded by maple leaves. Principal motto : *Foy pour devoir.*

§ The "Missisquoi" Battalion of Infantry bear their badge and motto in accordance with a G.O. of August, 1870, which ran as follows :—"In recognition of the services rendered by a detachment of the 60th Battalion on the 25th May last, the Battalion is hereby permitted to bear on its regimental colour the words 'Eccles Hill,' with the motto *Watch the Front—Watch well.*"

|| Supra, pp. 202-204.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and are still attached to the regiment may be mentioned Major Hanley and Lieutenant Westover. Lieutenant Whitman has gained the Governor-General's Prize and Medal and the McDougall Cup, the Medal having also been gained in 1887 by Private Stanton.

The 61st (MONTMAGNY AND L'ISLET) BATTALION OF INFANTRY date from 1869, and the 62nd BATTALION (ST. JOHN FUSILIERS),* from March, 1872. The latter regiment was represented at the Fenian incursion, and one, at least, of the officers took part in the expedition of 1885. The Governor-General's Medal has been gained by Lieutenant Shives (1879), Captain Hartt (1883), Lieutenant Lordly and Lieutenant Manning (1889). Lieutenant Lordly gained, besides,' the Bankers' Prize in 1889, Captain Thompson being the winner of the Dominion of Canada Match in the same year.

The 63rd HALIFAX BATTALION OF RIFLES† date from May, 1860, and claim to be in point of seniority the third oldest regiment in the Dominion. We have been compelled in most cases to pass over the early history of regiments; we will therefore take the Halifax Battalion as a typical one, and trace its growth *ab initio*. In so doing we shall give a fair idea of the processes through which other regiments have reached their present stage of organization.

The origin of the present force dates back, according to the historian of the battalion,‡ to that general expectation of a great European War which, combined with the ominous existence of the immense Continental armies, was the cause of the organization of the Volunteer Forces in Great Britain. The warlike spirit then engendered soon spread to the dependencies of Great Britain, and was taken up in a practical manner in Nova Scotia. Meetings were held in the city of Halifax during the fall of 1859, and it was evident that the material for military organization was not confined to the old country. Many companies, including the Victoria Rifles, whose ranks were restricted to coloured citizens, were formed in Halifax, but those which are now represented by the existing battalion were the Scottish Rifles, the Chebucto Greys, Mayflower Rifles, Halifax Rifles, Irish Volunteers, and Dartmouth Rifles.

* The St. John Fusiliers have as badge and motto :—Two Moose *rampant, confrontee*, supporting a garter clasped with a buckle, whereupon is inscribed "Saint John Fusiliers," surmounted by a royal crown. Within the garter a hand grenade, *flamant*, with the numerals 62 underneath. On an escrol below, the motto *Semper Paratus*.

† The uniform of the Halifax Battalion is dark green with scarlet facings. They bear as badge and motto :—An eight-pointed star (fluted). The regimental number, 63, at upper point, with the words "Halifax Rifles" on a ribbon attached. From the regimental number a bugle suspended by cords and tassels. In the circle of the bugle a maple leaf bearing the word "Canada." Motto: *Cede Nullis* on a ribbon interlaced with bow of bugle cord. The whole surmounted with a "Royal Crown."

‡ Major Egan, of whose interesting account of the battalion the writer has gladly availed himself.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Early in 1860 these various companies were formed into a battalion, Sir W. Fenwick Williams being appointed Colonel, and Captain Cheamley, of the Chebucto Greys, Captain-Commanding. The first appearance of the battalion in uniform was on St. George's Day, 1861, though the preceding months had been diligently employed in steady work at drill and firing practice, the latter especially being exemplified by the fact that in the first General Rifle Match, held at Windsor in August, 1861, "all the honours were carried off by the battalion." In 1864 the rifle green was adopted by all the companies forming the battalion with the exception of the Scottish, which adhered to their first choice of a dark tartan. The official description of the uniform is given as "dark rifle green tunic, pants and chaco, black leather waist-belt, cross-belt and pouch." The Greys had red facings with red ball on chaco, the Halifax Companies retaining the light green. On the occasion of the Fenian Scare of March, 1866, the battalion was called out for active service, the Greys and 2nd Halifax being ordered to McNab's Island, the Scottish Rifles to George's Island, and the rest remaining at headquarters. Doubtless to their disappointment, for they felt and were in good fighting trim, no occasion arose for active service, though they were again ordered out a few months later. In 1868 and 1869 considerable reorganization took place in consequence of the transfer of authority to the Dominion Government, and in December of the latter year the word "Rifles" was added to the designation of the battalion. In May, 1870, they became the "63rd Battalion of Rifles," though "how the battalion came to be called the 63rd," says Major Egan, "has never been satisfactorily explained, the regiment being entitled to the third place in the roll of regiments of the active Militia of Canada, it having had an unbroken existence since the 14th of May, 1860, the only other battalions senior in Canada being the 1st Battalion 'Prince of Wales' Regiment, Montreal, organized November 1st, 1859, and the 2nd Battalion 'Queen's Own' of Toronto, organized 26th April, 1860, eighteen days before the 63rd." In 1873 the rifle busby was adopted, which in 1880 gave place to the helmet.

"Some curious incidents grew out of the decision to adopt a new badge. The design having to be approved of by the officer commanding the Militia of Canada, quite a voluminous correspondence took place. The first design, a Maltese cross, was rejected by this official on the curious plea that the arms of the cross were intended to be inscribed with the name of the actions the battalion would be engaged in, and as the 63rd were not likely ever to be in action, the design was not suitable. Another design submitted was rejected for an equally weighty reason, and the gallant general intimated that there

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

was not talent enough in the corps to get up a proper design, and that he would himself furnish a badge and motto. This was not very flattering to the 63rd. As the design proposed consisted of a mixture of provincial and city arms, with a codfish as the principal ornament, and the motto, *E Mari Merces* (by the sea we live), it was not considered by the officers quite suitable for a rifle corps. In fact, under ordinary circumstances, it would be supposed the official in question was perpetrating a joke, but it was a matter of notoriety that he was not at all humorous—in fact, quite the reverse. The whole business showed what a large amount of trouble could be made about a trifle, the correspondence extending over six months, when a few minutes could have settled the matter. As the general's design for a badge would have made the battalion the laughing-stock of the whole force, and as his letter accompanying it intimated that if it was not accepted the Governor-General would be called upon to enforce the wishes of the writer, the officers had their design of a badge and motto forwarded to headquarters with a request to have it laid before his Excellency for approval. This had the desired effect, and a description of the present badge and motto was published in General Orders, the motto *Cede Nullis* being adopted." (Egan).

Inter-regimental details of no general interest contribute the history of the battalion up to the eventful year 1885. In that year the 63rd contributed to the formation of the Halifax Provisional Battalion, which served with so much credit during the suppression of the rebellion. The officers of the 63rd who accompanied it were Major Walsh in command, Captains Fortune, Hechler, and Cunningham, Lieutenants Twining, Silver, McKie, Fletcher, James, and Fiske, and Quartermaster Corbin. The total number of officers and men from the 63rd was a hundred and nine. We have before referred to the exceptional severity of the weather, and may note, in this connection, that to one member of the battalion, Private Marwick, it proved fatal. They were not fortunate enough to be engaged in any actual fighting, being detailed to garrison various positions on the Canadian Pacific Railway. Amongst the successes achieved by the battalion at the butts, we may mention the Governor-General's Medal, which has been gained by Lieutenant Bishop (three times), Sergeant Larkin (twice), and Private Spike; the Governor-General's Prize gained in 1884 by Captain Corbin; the McDougall Cup won by Captain St. Clair in 1889; the Standing Match by Bandsman de Freytas; and the Rideau Match by Captain Bishop.

The 64th Battalion of Rifles, the Voltigeurs de Beauharnois,* date from 1869,

* The 64th bear as motto *Toujours Pret.*

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

though the name recalls the brave days of 1812, and the gallant deeds of the Beauharnois Militia under De Salaberry and Henry at Chateauguay, where Bruyere was wounded, and "Captains Longton and Huneau of the Milice de Beauharnois gave to their men an honourable example."* The battalion as now constituted has not taken part in any of the Canadian campaigns.

The 65th Battalion (Mount Royal) Rifles,† date from June, 1869. The name—like that of the foregoing regiment—conjures up memories of the days of old Canada, when Montreal was the Mount Royal, and its inmates were constantly on the alert to fight for the existence of their country. The Montreal Rifles of the period were busy in the revolt of 1837. From Montreal came the first signal that the authorities were alive to the danger. The magistrates applied to Sir John Colborne (afterwards Lord Seaton) for a force sufficient to crush the growing rebellion. At St. Charles the Montreal troops‡ distinguished themselves under Colonel Weatherall, and, later on, the Montreal Rifles had some sharp fighting at St. Eustache.

"The Royal Scots and Montreal Rifles, and Captain Globinsky's company of volunteers, were formed in one brigade under Colonel Wetherall. The Volunteers were detached into the woods that border the upper road that leads to St. Eustache, with orders to drive back and disperse the rebel pickets; while the remainder of the brigade, with the other disposable troops, crossed the Ottawa or Grande Rivière on the ice, on the 14th of December, and advancing upon St. Eustache, entered the village at several points. The Scots Royals and Montreal Rifles advanced up the centre street, and seized all the most defensible houses. An officer was ordered to bring up the artillery, but he was driven back by the fire of the rebels, who had posted themselves in the village church. The artillery entered the village by the rear, and with their cannon tried to blow open the church door, but failed; while some companies of the Royals and Rifles occupied the houses in its vicinity. After an hour's firing, the church door still remaining unforced, probably owing to the density of the barricade behind it, a party of the Scots Royals attacked the presbytery, bayoneted some of its defenders, and set it in flames. Lieutenant-Colonel Wetherall now directed his grenadiers to carry it by storm, which they did gallantly, killing several, taking many prisoners, and finally setting it on fire."§

But the Montreal Rifles of to-day have proved themselves no carpet warriors. The regiment, some 350 strong, and commanded by Colonel Ouimet, were in the column

* *Supra*, p. 206. † The 65th have as a motto *Nusquam Retrorsum*. ‡ Principally cavalry and artillery.
§ Grant.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

under General Strange in the 1885 campaign, and their first movements are thus summarised by Major Boulton :—

"General Strange stationed half a company of the 65th, under Lieutenant Normandeau, at Red Deer Crossing, and the other half, under Captain Ettich, at the Government Ford, about forty miles from Edmonton. Captain Ostells' company was sent to the Hudson's Bay post at Battle River, Colonel Ouimet remaining at Edmonton, his headquarters. The remainder of the 65th, under Colonel Hughes, with Colonel Smith's battalion and the mounted men, went to Victoria on their way to Fort Pitt, where they were delayed for some time, not leaving again until the 21st May. They reached Moose Hill Creek on the 24th and Fort Pitt on the 25th inst.; General Strange had scows built to utilise the navigation and save his transport. They conveyed the 65th to Fort Pitt, keeping up communication with the remainder of the column, which marched by the trail. About a hundred of the 65th, under Colonel Hughes, descended the river in a scow for some ten miles, leaving Captain Giroux with his company of the 65th to defend Fort Pitt. The column advanced some two miles farther, and bivouacked for the night, where they were joined by the 65th, who had brought with them neither blanket nor great coat, and had to bivouac as best they could.* The waggons arrived about eight o'clock in the evening. They again marched at day-break in an easterly direction. The police and scouts deployed as skirmishers, the 65th forming the advance guard about twenty yards behind; then followed the nine-pounder, and the waggons and the Winnipeg Light Infantry as rear guard."

In the skirmish which took place on the 25th May near Fort Pitt, the 65th had two men, both privates, wounded, both seriously. In the report of the commanding officer, frequent mention is made of the valuable services rendered by the 65th. "The 65th handled the nine-pounder through an almost impassable muskeg with cheerful alacrity. . . . The steady endurance of the Winnipeg Light Infantry under Lieutenant-Colonel Osborne Smith, and the cheerful alacrity of the 65th under Lieutenant-Colonel Hughes, each happily illustrated the military instincts of the two warlike races composing the Dominion of Canada."

The 66th Battalion Princess Louise Fusiliers date from 1869, and were one of the regiments which contributed to the Halifax Provisional Battalion in 1885. Major Weston, the senior major of the regiment, was in command of No. 3 Company, with Captain Whitman as his second in command, Captain Kenny acted as adjutant,

* They were also destitute of rations.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and Dr. Gobin as surgeon, and Captains Humphrey and McKinlay commanded the 4th and 5th Companies respectively. In the record of competitions we find that the Governor-General's Medal was gained in 1885 by Sergeant Gibson, and in 1887 by Captain Weston, Sergeant Gray winning the Bankers' Prize in 1889.

The 67th Battalion (Carleton) Light Infantry,* and the 68th (King's County) Battalion of Infantry, both date from September, 1869. Neither regiment has taken part in the more recent campaigns. Lieutenant McLeod, of the Carleton Light Infantry gained the Governor-General's Medal in 1881, and Captain Fitzpatrick, also of the regiment, gained the same distinction in 1889. The same medal was won by Corporal Eaton of the 68th, in 1879, and three years later by Sergeant Keeley.

The 69th (1st Annapolis) Battalion date from October, 1869, and the 70th (Champlain) Battalion from April in the same year. The 71st (York) Battalion of Infantry date from September, 1869, and—like their half namesakes—of the 12th, the York Rangers, recall the achievements gained by the "brave York Volunteers" in the old wars against America. The 71st have a fair shooting record to boast of. The Governor-General's Medal was gained in 1882 by Colour-Sergeant Smith, in 1883 by Lieutenant McMurray, and in 1885 and 1886 by Sergeant Miner. In 1871 Ensign Johnson secured the McDougall Cup and the Grand Aggregate Prize, winning the latter again two years later; and in 1889 Lieutenant McFarlane gained the Dominion of Canada Match.

The 72nd (2nd Annapolis) Battalion of Infantry, date from January, 1870, the 73rd (Northumberland) Battalion from February, the 74th Battalion and the 75th (Lunenburg) Battalion from August of the same year. None of these regiments has been recently employed. Sergeant Loggie of the Northumberland gained the Governor-General's Prize in 1885 and 1886; and the Governor-General's Medal was gained in 1880, 1885, and 1886 by Major Arnold, Sergeant Weyman and Lieutenant Langstroth respectively, all belonging to the 74th.

The 76th Battalion of Rifles (Voltigeurs de Chateauguay) were organized in 1872, but their name recalls the splendid presence of a prior existence. We have before referred† to the Voltigeurs raised by the brave Salabery, and to the memorable fight at Chateauguay, a fight which may be said to invest the present regiment with an inherited prestige. It was early in the morning of the 22nd of October, that De Salabery with his Voltigeurs joined De Watteville and Henry—whose men had already

* The 67th have as a motto *Fidelis Patriæ*.

† *Supra*, p. 205.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"felt" the enemy—and pushed on in advance. Probably never had the gallant Colonel, who as an officer of the 60th had fought at Martinique, Walcheren and elsewhere, shown more clearly his possession of the attributes of a commander.

The previous year he had at the head of his Voltigeurs repulsed the Americans under Dearborn; not a month had elapsed since "De Salabery and his Voltigeurs," with whom were the 4th Battalion under Penault, had effected the spirited relief of our picket at Odelltown. But in the present case he had to strengthen his position by abbatis and parapets, a feat which, accomplished as it was, "contributed as much to the brilliant results that ensued as the heroism of his men." When at last the Americans commenced the fight, Lieutenants Guy and Johnson of the Voltigeurs were the first to exchange shots. Then Salabery rode up and the fight commenced in which the Du Chesnays, L'Ecuyer, Guy, Johnson, Powell, Hebben, and those "simples Soldats, Vincent, Pelletier, Vervais, Dubois, and Caron, who swam the river and cut off the retreat of the prisoners," so distinguished themselves. All of the Voltigeurs gained for themselves and their regiment the fame and honour which no country allows to die.

The Voltigeurs of Chateauguay as at present organized have not taken part in active service.

The 77th (WENTWORTH) BATTALION OF INFANTRY date from May, 1872, and the 78th (COLCHESTER, HANTS AND PICTON) BATTALION OF INFANTRY, "HIGHLANDERS" from April, 1871. Of the latter regiment Captain Bamhill, Corporal Lawrence, Sergeant Holesworth, and Sergeant Blair, in the years 1881, 1884, 1885, and 1888 respectively, gained the Governor-General's Medal.

The 79th (SHEFFORD) BATTALION OF INFANTRY "HIGHLANDERS" date from May, 1872, and the 80th (NICOLET) BATTALION OF INFANTRY from June, 1875. The former has a right famous marksman in the person of Sergeant Hall, who in the last two years has won the Standing Match, the Bankers' Prize, the Grand Aggregate, the Snider Aggregate, and the Revolver Match.

The 81st (PORTNEUF) BATTALION OF INFANTRY date from April, 1869, and supply another instance of the fact that many regiments of earlier date are found placed subsequently to those raised later.

The 82nd (QUEEN'S COUNTY) BATTALION OF INFANTRY date from 1875, the 83rd (GOLIETTE) BATTALION from January, and the 84th (ST. HYACINTHE) BATTALION from March, 1871. The Queen's County have to boast the following list of successful competitions:—

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

In 1879 the Governor-General's Medal was gained by Private Harper and Private Gray, in 1880 by Private Gray, in 1881 by Sergeant Longstroth, in 1882 by Lieutenant McGregor, in 1883 by Lieutenant McGregor and Lieutenant Crockett, in 1886 by Lieutenant Crockett, and in 1887 by Captain Crockett and Private Gray. In 1889 Lieutenant Hooper gained the Rideau Match, and Staff-Sergeant Allen the Martini Matches.

The 85th BATTALION OF INFANTRY * date from June, 1880, and the 86th (THREE RIVERS) BATTALION † from March, 1871.

The 87th (QUEBEC) BATTALION date from April, 1869, the 88th (KAMOURARKA AND CHARLEVOIX) BATTALION from 1882, and the 89th (TEMISCOUATA and RIMOUSKI) BATTALION from 1883.

The 90th (WINNIPEG) BATTALION OF RIFLES date from November, 1883, when they were organized by Colonel Kennedy. It was to all human seeming a sad fate which prevented the founder of the corps leading them in the campaign (of 1885) in which they did so valiantly. On the outbreak of the war Colonel Kennedy was in Egypt in connection with the brigade of Canadian Voyageurs engaged for service there. He made haste to rejoin his regiment, but in accordance with an intimation he had received, arranged to stay for a few days in England to permit of his being presented to Her Majesty. Scarcely had he landed when he was attacked by disease, which proved fatal in a few days. The present commanding officer, Colonel Boswell, who was second in command during the war, had served in the Fenian disturbances. The 90th were, as we know, attached to General Middleton's column, and were hotly engaged at Fish Creek, Captain Charles' company being the first to reach the fiercely pressed advance guard. Soon the other companies, with whom were Colonel M'Keand, Majors Boswell and Buchan, Captains Ruttan, Wilkes, Forrest, Worsnop, and Whitlaw, came up and the counter attack to the enemy's movements was commenced. The firing was terribly heavy, Fergusson, Ennis, and Hutchinson of the regiment being killed and several wounded. When a volunteer was called for to cross the open to see if the front was clear it was Private Dunn who responded, and shortly afterwards others of the regiment under Lieutenant Macdonald moved forward into the bush on the other side of the ravine, others under Major Buchan pushing further up to the right. When it

* The 85th bear as motto *Bon cœur et bon bras.*

† The 86th bear as badge :—A shield bearing in centre, on a black ground, the number 86, above that number the motto *Adsum*, and below the name "Trois Rivieres." The shield encircled by a wreath of maple leaves crossed at base, upon which rests a beaver. The whole surmounted by a Royal Crown. All in gold.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

became necessary to clear the bush at the end—humorously described, says Major Boulton, as the hornet's nest—Captain Ruttan with his company and some of the dismounted artillery were sent forward for the purpose. The attempt, however, failed, despite the gallantry of the men, and they had to fall back, leaving amongst the dead Private Wheeler of the 90th. The account given by Major Buchan is too graphic to omit: "Volley after volley broke the stillness of the clear morning . . . Passing the various sections of the advance guard, who were already extending for attack, I galloped to the front. When I got round the curve . . . a horrible sight was before me. Riderless horses were scattered about, half a dozen or so of them struggling in death's agonies. The enemy were unseen, save by the puffs of smoke which came from the further side of the plain, but their presence was made very manifest by the whizzing 'zip' and 'ping' of the bullets as they flew over our heads. My appearance was the signal for a volley at myself, which made me realise, as I did all through the day, that mounted officers were the enemy's special targets. The men extended in good shape as they came up, and immediately opened fire from an advantageous position on the edge of the scrub, and gradually crept forward towards the enemy. Not five minmtes afterwards Captain Clarke of 'F' Company was struck as he was kneeling in the scrub directing the fire of his sharpshooters." Six of the regiment, including Lieutenant Swinford and Corporal Code, were either killed or succumbed to their wounds received during the battle, while the wounded numbered fourteen, including Captain Clarke and six corporals. The 90th were also "in the thick of it" at the fighting round and subsequent capture of Batoche, charging side by side with the Grenadiers, Midlanders, and Boulton's scouts, and having two men killed and eleven wounded as the price paid for the honour they won. We subjoin an extract from the official report of General Middleton as to the specific services rendered by individual members of the regiment:

"Major Boswell and Captain Buchan of the 90th Battalion were of great help to me in holding the right, and eventually forcing back the enemy under a very heavy fire. Major Boswell was hit in the heel of his boot, and Captain Buchan's horse received a shot. Major Boulton's coolness and firmness in checking the enemy at the commencement of the engagement, was remarkable and deserves great praise. Messrs. Bedson and Secretan also were of great assistance in forming a zareba of waggons round the place selected by the medical men for their temporary hospital, which was almost under fire of the enemy. My thanks are also due to Brigade-Surgeon Orton, 90th battalion, for the excellent arrangement made by him for attending to the wounded, and removing

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

them to our new camp. The men employed as ambulance men also performed their duty well, not hesitating to bring away the wounded under fire. I cannot conclude without mentioning a little bugler of the 90th Regiment named William Buchanan, who made himself particularly useful in carrying ammunition to the right front when the fire was very hot; this he did with peculiar nonchalance, walking calmly about crying, 'Now, boys, who's for cartridges?'"

The behaviour of the regiment at Batoche elicited further recognition. "The conduct of Major M'Keand commanding the 90th Regiment was everything I could wish. . . The Field Officers . . . Major Boswell and Acting-Major and Adjutant Buchan are equally to be commended. . . . Thanks are also due to the Reverend D. W. Gordon of the Presbyterian Church, who joined the 90th at Fish Creek Camp and was with them during the fighting at Batoche." A detachment of the 90th accompanied General Middleton in the pursuit of Big Bear. The Governor-General's Medal has been gained by the following members of the 90th—Sergeant Mitchell in 1884 and 1886, Sergeant Maclin in 1885, and Private Gillies in 1888. Sergeant Mitchel has also won the Orient and Bankers' Prize, Grand Aggregate, in 1889.

The 91st Battalion (Manitoba Light Infantry) date from January, 1889, and represent the Winnipeg Light Infantry which were raised at the time of the North-West Rebellion by Colonel Osborne Smith. The present commanding officer, Colonel Bedson, has seen service in the Fenian outbreak and the Red River Expedition, as well as in the recent rebellion. Major Leacock, the second in command, acted as paymaster to the Winnipeg Light Infantry, and the present Quartermaster and Surgeon held the same ranks in the former regiment. They were not very actively engaged, and on the conclusion of the compaign, remained at Fort Pitt to receive the submission of the Indians.

The 92nd (Dorchester) Battalion of Infantry date from April, 1869, but have not been engaged in any service of importance.

The 93rd (Cumberland) Battalion date from April, 1871, and the 94th (Victoria) Battalion of Infantry (Argyle Highlanders) from October in the same year. Neither regiment has been actively engaged.

The 95th Battalion (Manitoba Grenadiers) date from April, 1885, when they were raised by Colonel Scott and known as the Winnipeg Infantry Battalion.* Nearly all

* They would seem to have been numbered the 92nd, though Boulton refers to them as the 91st, the 92nd, according to him, having been the Light Infantry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the present officers served through the campaign, the present commanding officer being second in command. They were first stationed at Troy, and afterwards at Qu'Appelle, and consequently did not share in the actual fighting part of the expedition.

The 96th (District of Algonia) Battalion of Rifles date from December, 1886, and have consequently no service to record. In 1889, the present commander, Colonel Ray, gained the Rideau Match.

Of the Independent Companies, the New Westminster Rifle Company date from 1877, the St. John Rifle Company * from 1862, and the St. Jean Baptiste Infantry Company from 1879. The St. John Rifles were originally an Engineer Company, but in 1882 became Rifles. The Governor-General's Medal has been gained by the following members of the New Westminster: Sergeant Brown (1875, 1876), Sergeant Jackson (1875, 1879, 1881), Corporal Scoullar (1882), and Private Trapp (1884). Of the St. John Rifle Company, Captain Hart gained the Medal in 1882, 1884, and 1889, in the first named year winning the Grand Aggregate Prize, and in 1888 the Governor-General's Prize. The Grand Aggregate Prize in 1887 fell to Lieutenant Smith.

No notice of the military strength of Canada would be complete which ignored mention of the North-West Mounted Police. It is true that their constitution approximates them to Regulars rather than to Militia, while their duties are more comprehensive than those of either. The force has been organized but a few years, but in that time enough has been done to gain for it a reputation of world-wide extent.

The *materiel* of the Mounted Police resembles that of other similar bodies in the other colonies. A writer who served some time in the ranks, gives the following idea of the men who composed them:—

"There were all sorts and conditions of men. Many I found in various troops were related to English families in good position. There were three men at Regina who had held commissions in the British service. There was also an ex-officer of militia and one of volunteers. There was an ex-midshipman, son of the governor of one of our small Colonial dependencies; a son of a major-general, an ex-cadet of the Canadian Royal Military College at Kingston, a medical student from Dublin, two ex-troopers of the Scots Greys, a son of a captain in the line, and an Oxford B.A. In addition there were many Canadians belonging to families of influence, as well as several from the backwoods, who had never seen the light till their fathers had hewed a way through

* The St. John Rifle Company bear as badge a bugle, with the motto *Quo Patria Vocat.*

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the bush to a concession road. Several of our men sported medals, won in South Africa, Egypt, and Afghanistan."

A correspondent of a Canadian paper amplifies the above description. After referring in laudatory terms to the services rendered by the force in the North-West Rebellion, he goes on to say—"Officers and men alike live a hard life, a lonely life, a life in many cases almost as hard and lonely as that of Alexander Selkirk, and this sort of existence is dragged out by men, many of whom not long ago were the pets of society in this and other lands. Many a silent tongue in the ranks could tell a strange tale if it chose." The original establishment of the Police was five troops of a hundred each, which was increased on the termination of the North-West Rebellion to a thousand men. The chief officers are a commissioner and assistant commissioner, ranking as lieutenant-colonel and major. The uniform was scarlet serge tunic, blue breeches, yellow stripe, blue cloak and helmet, or a busby-shaped fur cap with yellow bag. The service rig out was a brown Norfolk jacket, moleskin riding pants, a black slouch hat, with a red puggaree, the effect being, in the words of the writer before quoted "a cross between a Montana desperado and a Sardinian chasseur."

The outbreak of the North-West Rebellion gave to the Mounted Police the opportunity, if such were needed, of showing of what metal they were made. We say "if" advisedly, inasmuch as previous to the outbreak the tranquillity and good order which prevailed in the districts guarded by the Police were matters of remark. As Major Boulton well remarks—"The whole of a vast region, 1,800 miles long by 400 broad, filled with a half-breed and Indian population, had hitherto been well and peacefully governed by a small force of five hundred Mounted Police, who in themselves combined military and civil elements. By this force the law had been administered and upheld. By their coolness and courage on occasions without number they had entered the camps of the excited Indians, and with their escort of two or three been accustomed to take their prisoner." As is well known the fight at Duck Lake was the opening scene of the drama of the Rebellion. In March, 1885, Captain Moore of the Police marched to Fort Carlton, whence Major Crozier had sent requesting reinforcements. And it was fortunate that he did so. In the fight that soon after took place the services rendered by the Police were incalculable. Three of the force were killed, Captain Moore and several others more or less severely injured. The war had now begun in earnest, and a party of the Mounted Police under Colonel Herchmer were attached to Colonel Otter's column. It will give an idea of the wide extent over which the Mounted Police had to operate

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

if we state the positions they occupied. The "A" troop were at Maple Creek and Medicine Hut; the "B" troop at Regina and along the line of railway; the "C" troop "held Fort Macleod away in the grassy ranching country among the Blood and Peigans at the foot of the Rockies." The "D" troop were on the North Saskatchewan; the "E" troop were at Calgarry and along the line of railway then constructing; outposts were at Prince Albert, Fort Pitt, Edmonton, and Fort Saskatchewan. When the issue of Duck Lake gave encouragement to the rebels it was at once evident that the position of Battleford was critical. The only force available for its defence on the spot was the Battleford Rifles, a few Mounted Police under Inspector Morris, and at Fort Pitt, a hundred miles off, twenty-five troopers of the same body commanded by Inspector Dickens. As has been said, Colonel Otter marched to the relief of Battleford, and on the 2nd May was fought the battle of Cut Knife Hill. At the head of the attacking column was Colonel Herchmer with his troopers of the Mounted Police. When the enemy were felt the Police were dismounted and advanced in skirmishing order to the top of the hill, followed by the guns and the Gatling. A determined charge was made by the Indians to capture the latter, in which fell Corporal Sleigh of the Police. The details of the action have before been given; we need therefore only mention here that in addition to Corporal Sleigh, Colonel Lowry and Constable Burke were killed, and Sergeant Ward wounded.

In General Strange's column there were about eighty mounted police, under Majors Steele and Perry and Captain Oswald, and to them it fell to avenge the hideous massacre at Fort Pitt, in the defence of which Inspector Dickens and Corporal Sleigh so distinguished themselves, and Constable Cowan was killed and Constable Loasby badly wounded. General Strange reached Fort Pitt on the 25th May, and on the 28th, with the bulk of his force, attacked the Indians. In this engagement Constable Macrae of the Police was wounded. In the closing scenes of the rebellion the Mounted Police were busily engaged, and to Inspector Gagnon fell the distinction of arresting Big Bear. Amongst those especially mentioned in reports were Sergeant-Major Watton, "whose brilliant example and dogged courage gave confidence and steadiness to those within the sound of his voice"; Constable Ross, chief scout, who was "always ready to lead a dash or take his place in the skirmish line, and in fact seen everywhere and at the proper time"; Lieutenant-Colonel Herchmer who "displayed the most sterling qualities of a soldier, while the men of his command time and again proved themselves invaluable"; Sergeant O'Connor, Captain Neale, Captain Cotton, Captain Hamilton, Major Steele, and Major Perry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

With the termination of the North-West Rebellion ended, as is known, the record of active military service of the Canadian army. Medals were distributed and honours conferred and, in a spirit which reminds us somewhat of the old Roman use to those who had deserved well of their country, the Legislature gave to each Canadian soldier the grant of three hundred and twenty acres of land without charge, or, failing their desire to become settlers, scrip which would be accepted by the Dominion Government as payment of land to the value of eighty dollars.

And now with but a few words in conclusion we must quit, albeit reluctantly, our consideration of the Canadian Militia. In days when a spirit of self-depreciation would seem to be considered by some the highest virtue, as representing the melancholy truth, it is gratifying to find those who may claim the highest position, both as thinkers and warriors, speaking with no uncertain sound of the strength of this portion of the Empire.

In a recent article, General Strange, whose experience (already noticed) with the Canadian army renders him a competent authority, writes as follows:—

"I hope I shall not be supposed to be looking forward with any satisfaction to an event so disastrous to mankind, as would be any quarrel between Great Britain and her gigantic daughter across the Atlantic. But for the preservation of peaceful relations it is all important that nations should respect one another. The kind of talk in which Mr. Goodwin Smith and his few friends in Canada indulge, which assumes that the independence of Canada depends on the mere goodwill of the States, and that the Union has only to stretch out its hand to snatch the already ripe apple, is not favourable to those dignified mutual relations which alone can ensure peace. It is well to remind English statesmen that they have a quiver full of faithful sons to guard the Canadian border, and that they need not be afraid to speak in the gate with the Statesmen of the United States, either as friends or enemies."

And yet another—the most famous of her Governor-Generals, a statesman in the foremost rank, an orator whose equal it would be hard to find—has, in words whose beauty and prescience alike forbid the forgetting, thus written of the Loyal Dominion of the North-West:—

"In a world apart, secluded from all extraneous influences, nestling at the feet of her majestic mother, Canada dreams her dream and forebodes her destiny—a dream of ever-broadening harvests, multiplying towns and villages, and expanding pastures, of constitutional self-government, and a confederated empire; of page after page of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

honourable history, added as her contribution to the annals of the mother country, and to the glories of the British race; of a perpetuation for all time upon this continent of that temperate and well-balanced system of government which combines in one mighty whole, as the eternal possession of all Englishmen, the brilliant history and traditions of the past with the present and most untrammelled liberty of action in the future."

We have now to notice the military forces of another of the important possessions of Great Britain. We refer to the CAPE. Though of late years, owing in great part to the unsatisfactory condition of our relations with Boers and Natives the general acquaintance with this colony has become more extensive, yet it may be assumed that a very considerable amount of ignorance exists, not only as to the history but as to the political characteristics of our South African Possessions. The tension between British and Boers is only too familiar, but the reasons for this tension are scarcely ever considered. And yet ignorance with respect to a possession, the area of which extends throughout its length and breadth to two hundred and fifty thousand square miles, can scarcely redound to the credit of subjects of the greatest colonial empire in the world.

We at present occupy the position of successors to a long line of previous owners. Far back in the annals of antiquity we come across mention of early enterprise which brought South Africa and the Cape to the knowledge of the world-rulers of the time. But the modern history of this colony of ours, which exceeds in size both Germany and France, may be said to commence with the concluding years of the fifteenth century. To the Portuguese, then in the zenith of their power, belong the credit of finding out the new passage to the east round the Cape, though they did not actually found any colony. Rather more than a hundred years later the Dutch, who were elbowing the Portuguese out of their place of priority as oriental traders, in their turn employed the Cape as a sort of calling station; but it was reserved for two Englishmen, Humphrey FitzHerbert and Andreas Shilling, to take formal possession of the territory in the name of the king of England. Beyond this thoroughly English assertion of right and possession we do not seem to have done much, and thirty years later the Dutch obtained from the natives permission to settle there. The colonists after a time settled down fairly quietly, and the settlement gradually increased in importance. It is probable that some of its popularity arose from the tradition which seemed in some

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

way to have survived that far away in the interior lay the famous land of Ophir whence came the good red gold which gleamed in such profusion in the splendid court of Solomon the Wise. In the process of time Holland became subject to the French, and it became the duty of England to check the inordinate power of the Republic. Accordingly Generals Clark and Craig, with a fleet under Admiral Elphinstone, took possession with something more of effectiveness than did the two bold Englishmen a hundred and fifty years before. The Dutch were too conscious of the value of the Cape to submit without a struggle to losing it, and a strong armament, naval and military, was despatched to evict those pestilent English. The result, however, was that the pestilent English, acting in a manner peculiarly their own, adopted such measures that the whole Dutch fleet was surrendered. For a few years a clause in a treaty effected what hostile ships and soldiers had failed to do, namely, the return of the colony to the Dutch. But in 1806, war having broken out again, another expedition, naval and military, under Sir Home Popham and Sir David Baird, proceeded to the Cape, landed, and took possession in two days, and a fortnight later the colony was finally surrendered to the English.

"In the articles of capitulation," writes a historian, "it was stipulated that a battalion of Hottentot Infantry in the Dutch service should march to Simon's Town with the other Batavian troops, after which they should be allowed to return to their country or to engage in the British service as they might feel inclined. A number of them tendering their services they were formed into a corps at Wynberg under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Graham, and thus originated, after they were horsed, the regiment of Cape Mounted Riflemen,* so useful in future conflicts with the Kaffres."

It very soon became apparent that the British tenure of the colony was not to be entirely without trouble. The Boers were jealous; the natives failed to distinguish between their old foes and their new protectors. Some of the natives, who may be distinguished generally as Hottentots, were yielding and offered no real resistance to the ever-increasing area of colonisation; others, whom we may class as Kaffirs,† were of sterner material, and when the van of the white settlers approached gave speedy evidence that they would allow no further encroachment. These pushing settlers were the Boers, and proximity soon led to outrages on one side or the other. The Kaffirs

* This corps must not be identified with the Cape Mounted Rifles, as at present organized.

† Space does not allow of a more correct denomination of the various native septs included in the Kossa clans.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

not seldom appropriated cattle; the Boers retaliated by their *commandos*, in which as a rule human lives paid for the cattle on something like equal terms. The British endeavoured to effect such arrangements as should insure peace; they made a treaty with Gaika, one of the most powerful of the native chiefs; and eventually settled the boundaries of settlers and natives at the Great Fish River. Those of the latter who remained on the nearer side were ruthlessly expelled by the Boers; quarrels grew in ferocity; and the treaty made in 1817 provoked the Kaffirs to war against our ally Gaika. In 1819 they made a furious attack against Graham's Town; British and Colonial troops invaded the native territory, and when peace was agreed on another tract of land was ceded to the colony. So evident had it become that the Boers would perpetually involve us in disputes, that stimulus was given to a scheme for the immigration of British settlers on a large scale, and comparative tranquillity reigned till in 1830 an important Kaffir chieftain was shot by the Boers—as the latter say during a fray, but according to the natives in cold blood. In 1834 another war broke out, followed by one of those extraordinary agreements so frequently met with in South African history, which give the foes the impression that they have frightened us into making terms. In 1846 another war broke out which will be referred to hereafter; in 1852 we were at war with the Amatolas; the warfare of 1873, 1879, and the following years is not likely to be yet forgotten.

As it will be obviously impossible within the space at our disposal to give anything like a full account of the various local military forces available for the defence of the colony, it will be well in order to appreciate fully the nature of the eventualities with which they may have to deal, to glance, though very briefly, at the territorial and political composition of her Majesty's dominions in South Africa. We have briefly sketched above the prominent features in the history of Cape Colony up to the most recent war. Kaffraria, the district lying to the west of Cape Colony, was incorporated about twenty-five years ago. Amongst the native tribes are the Fingoes, whose fighting value as our allies has been gradually but decidedly increased under British leadership. Natal was annexed in 1843, previously to which it had been the theatre and cause of much sanguinary conflict. Settled by us in 1823, in 1838 a considerable immigration of Boers took place, owing to the want of encouragement their peculiar methods of dealing with the natives met with in Cape Colony. The Zulus resisted, and the Boers found themselves again in constant disputes with their neighbours, over whom, however, they speedily triumphed and declared themselves independent of the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

British power. We bore the loss with equanimity till, in 1841, the Boers proposed to go to war with some of our native allies—the Amaponda Kaffirs. This the Governor at the Cape could not permit, and, remonstrances proving futile, a small force was despatched over the six hundred miles which separated Graham's Town from Cape Colony. The British force, consisting of some two hundred and fifty men only, was completely outnumbered, and suffered several reverses, despite courage which even Boer sympathisers were compelled to admire. In 1842 reinforcements arrived, and Natal was annexed to the Colony. The occurrence deserves a passing mention, as illustrating the peculiar qualifications of British soldiers for securing victory out of circumstances which to all appearance threaten sudden, complete, and irretrievable ruin, and as evincing the readiness with which the colonists of the day co-operated with the Imperial Forces. The small force referred to consisted of two hundred men, and a couple of field pieces, under the command of Captain Smith, who hauled down the Republican flag which had been hoisted, displaying in its stead the Union Jack. Keenly alive, then as afterwards, to the advantages of negotiations which one party enters into in good faith, the other with a view to perfecting their arrangements, the Boers engaged in parleys, during the progress of which they collected an overwhelming force. Then they commenced hostilities. Captain Smith, with a courage which bordered on rashness, determined on a night attack, his force being augmented by some settlers. The attack was disastrous; more than a third of the little band were reported "killed, wounded, or missing," and the residue had to evacuate the city and entrench themselves in their camp. There they were besieged for thirty-one days, enduring the extremes of want and suffering; there they might have fallen as other British soldiers have done before and since, had it not been for the gallantry of one man, who, to save his comrades, braved dangers from which the bravest might well have shrunk. Mr. Richard King left the beleaguered garrison one midnight, and set out on a ride which should ever be memorable in a nation which loves brave deeds and gallant horsemanship. "There were six hundred miles to be traversed through the heart of Kaffirland, two hundred rivers to be crossed, and tribes of savages to be passed through—many of whom were too ready to stop and plunder or murder a solitary traveller—in order to convey information of their destitute and trying circumstances to those from whom alone relief could be obtained; the journey being enough to damp the courage and break the heart of any one except an Englishman. Such deeds of determination and of daring remind us of olden times, in which astonishing acts of valour were performed by our forefathers, whose soul is truly found among the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

settlers of Albany. This herculean task was successfully performed in ten days, two of which were spent in sickness and consequent detention, thereby leaving only eight days' actual travelling. Many of the rivers had to be swam from bank to bank; so that, taking the whole journey into account, it was one of the most wonderful performances ever recorded in the pages of history." (Holden.) As a result of King's heroism, two British ships, the *Conch* and the *Southampton*, arrived on Midsummer Day, 1842, and with very little trouble took possession of Natal, thus adding to the Empire the first colony acquired in the present reign.*

One of the most effective causes of the comparative severity of all the wars with the natives since 1867 is to be found in the recklessly unwise policy which encouraged supplying the natives with firearms. These were given in the first instance practically as wages for labour done in making the railways. To quote the words of Sir Arthur Cunynghame, whose weight as an authority cannot be questioned, "to make the natives work only one inducement was effectual, the permission to purchase firearms. There was a law forbidding the acquisition of arms by natives . . . unfortunately this salutary provision was not attended to. Companies of natives marched home, each bearing his musket on his shoulder. . . . For a while, blinded by a desire to secure cheap labour, the colonists allowed the natives to arm, *until at least* 400,000 *muskets and rifles, some of them breech-loaders, had been acquired.*"

The military forces of South Africa may be enumerated as follows:—

FOR CAPE COLONY—

A Permanent Force of Cape Mounted Rifles.

A Volunteer Force of—

For the Western District.

Prince Alfred's Own Volunteer Artillery.
The Cape Town Engineers.
The Duke of Edinburgh's Own Volunteer Rifles.
The First Administrative Regiment—
The 2nd Corps (Cape Town Highlanders).
The 3rd Corps (Cape Town Irish Volunteer Rifles).
The Paarl Volunteer Rifles.
The Worcester Volunteer Rifles.
The Wellington Volunteer Rifles.
The Victoria College Volunteer Rifles.
The South African College Cadet Corps.
Queen Victoria's Cadet Battalion.

* It is interesting in the light of more recent warfare to read that "during the interval between the establishment and the raising of the siege, all loyal Boers or British subjects were plundered and ill-treated in the most ruthless manner by the then victorious party." (Peace.)

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

For the Midland District.

The Diamond Field Horse.
The Graham's Town Volunteer Horse Artillery.
Prince Alfred's Volunteer Guard.
The 1st City (Graham's Town) Volunteers.
The Highlands Mounted Co. of 1st City (Handsworth).
The Knysna Rangers.
The Victoria Rifles of Kimberley.
The St. Andrew's College Cadet Corps (Graham's Town).
The Graham's Town Public School Cadet Corps.

For the Frontier District.

King William's Town Volunteer Artillery.
The Kaffrarian Mounted Rifles (Kei Road).
The Frontier Mounted Rifles.
The Kaffrarian Rifles (East London).
The Queen's Town Rifle Volunteers.
The Queen's Town High School Cadet Corps.
The Panmure Public School Cadet Corps.
The King William's Town Cadet Corps.

The Bechuanaland Border Police.

For Natal—

A Permanent Force of Natal Mounted Police.

A Volunteer Force of—

The Natal Carabineers.
The Natal Mounted Rifles.
The Natal Field Artillery.
The Natal Royal Rifles.

It will be obvious when the dates of the various corps as now organized are considered that none of them can have played any part in the earlier warfare of the colony. It is true that in every one of these wars the colonists were represented by various bodies of volunteers, but these were, so to speak, raised *ad hoc*, and with but few exceptions have only a nominal continuity in the existing regiments. In two cases at least old corps have been absorbed into the Cape Mounted Rifles, namely the Cape Infantry Regiment, raised as a garrison force in the time of the Native troubles, and the Cape Field Artillery.

As the permanent force of the colony, the Cape Mounted Rifles will call for a somewhat extended notice, being, as it is, probably the most familiar of all colonial regiments to the home dwelling subjects of the mother country. Before, however, glancing at the history of the corps as now organized a few words will not be out of place respecting the former Cape Mounted Rifles, which practically ceased to exist not long after the campaign

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

THE CAPE MOUNTED RIFLES.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of 1852. We have already mentioned the origin of the corps, and on many occasions they proved of great service in the frequent engagements and disputes with the natives. But owing to circumstances on which it would be out of place to dwell here, their fidelity had become impaired, and in the war of 1852 a considerable number deserted to the enemy.

In the latter end of 1850 the Colonists were indeed threatened with terrible danger. Everywhere the Kaffirs were rising; outlying farms and homesteads were destroyed, cattle stolen, houses hitherto regarded as secure given to the flames, while their contents were plundered and their occupants had to flee for dear life. What made the outbreak the more serious was the possession by the Kaffirs of firearms in enormous quantities. The official returns gave the numbers as "three thousand stand of arms, six million rounds of ball cartridge, half a million assegais, with ample means of supply." The situation called for decisive action, and fortunately the Commander-in-Chief, Sir Henry Smith, was, to borrow the description applied by a brilliant novelist to one of his characters, "a man formed by nature for great emergencies." A police force was formed, volunteer corps organized, and a demonstration in force made at the foot of the Amatolas. With the troops there assembled were the Cape Mounted Rifles and some Kaffir Police. On Christmas Eve a detachment, some eight hundred strong, under Colonel Mackinnon, were directed to endeavour to apprehend Sandilli, who, it was supposed, was in hiding in the Keis-Kamma Hock. The Mounted Rifles and Police were in advance and had penetrated a narrow defile—so narrow was it that the men had to pass in single file—the remainder of the troops following closely on their heels, when suddenly a terrific musketry fire was opened from both sides of the defile. The British replied doggedly and with eventual success, but the enemy were not repulsed till twenty-one officers and men were killed or wounded. On the face of it the immunity of the Police and Mounted Rifles was suspicious, and suspicion became certainty when the following day nearly four hundred of the former deserted *en masse* to the enemy. It was a terrible Christmastide for the soldiers and settlers. At home, "in the dear old country," healths were being pledged and prayers sent up for fathers and husbands, and sons and daughters, who even then were lying hideously murdered, or were holding their own against desperate odds, pitted against foes who mutilated men and outraged women. General Smith himself was shut up in Fort Cox, and only escaped by a brilliant dash through the surrounding foes, in which he was accompanied by some of the Cape Mounted Rifles. Early in the following March a number of the last-named corps deserted, and thereupon

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the coloured men were disbanded, and the regiment rendered more trustworthy, though numerically weaker. As indicative of the serious nature of this defection it may be mentioned that, in a skirmish we had with the enemy a few weeks later, their commander was found to be a deserter from the Cape Corps, who posed with the borrowed importance of a British officer, issuing his orders in writing, and profiting by his past training to place his men in regular formation.

During the fighting which centred round the Waterkloof, the Cape Mounted Rifles were actively engaged, and rendered valuable service, many being wounded—amongst them Captain Bramley—in the skirmish of the 2nd of March. In the fifth attack on that stubborn fortress, a hundred and fifty of their number were in Colonel Napier's column; they were well to the fore in all the subsequent operations, and formed part of Napier's Cavalry Brigade in the Orange River Expedition, suffering some loss in the final action at Berea. Soon after the termination of the war the corps ceased to exist, and THE FRONTIER ARMED AND MOUNTED POLICE were organized, opinion at the time freely canvassing the wisdom of the one step and the effectiveness of the other. Yet, on the latter point, it seems clear that the occasion for criticism was not in the *personnel.* The individual items which constituted the corps were, generally speaking, made of the right stuff for soldiering, but it was long a question whether their qualifications had fair play. The Frontier Armed Mounted Police are described as being "nominally a thousand strong, clad in a costume scarcely equal to that of a railway porter. It was a dress of corduroy, dipped in logwood till it became unbearably stiff; with this was a cap having a small peak, and leggings to go over the trousers. When dry, this clothing was so hot that the men longed to throw it off, and when wet, became so heavy, that the weight could scarcely be borne. Yet, thus clad, they were expected to encounter supple, active, and powerful savages, almost in a state of nudity, free and unencumbered by anything." In this connection it must be remembered that the Kaffirs have been described, on no mean authority, as "perfect light troops," and such force as there was in the complaints made will be appreciated. "The force consisted nominally of one thousand men. I have already mentioned," says the author of "With the Cape Mounted Rifles," "that *supposition* goes a long way in estimating military arrangements in the Colony, and it went very far certainly in this instance. Whether the returns were falsified or not, I am unable to say, but the force more probably never exceeded eight hundred men. The troops of this force, altogether inadequate in numbers to the duties assigned to it and the services expected of it, were distributed as follows:—

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Artillery. Komgha.	No. 5. King William's Town and District.
No. 1. Queenstown.	No. 6. Transkei.
No. 2. Kokstadt.	No. 7. Peddie.
No. 3. Komgha and Grey Town.	No. 8. Kenhardt.
No. 4. Palmeitfontein and Kei River.	No. 9. Ealing's Post.
	Depôt. Fort Murray.

"The arrangements and organization of the force were as follows:

"A commandant in charge of and commanding the whole force, with his head-quarters and staff at King William's Town.

"His staff consisted of paymaster, sergeant-major, three sergeants, two corporals, and three privates. All these were employed in office work.

"In each troop there was an inspector and two sub-inspectors. All with one exception had risen from the ranks, and this one exception had exchanged from civil service. There was a sergeant-major to each troop, and the allowed number of sergeants were divided amongst the whole force.

"The rank and file of the force, so far as *personnel* was concerned, was excellent.

"In 1877, Sandilli and Kreli, at the head, respectively, of the Gaikas and Galekas, commenced attacking the Fingoes, to whose protection we were bound.

"It was not very long before hostilities broke out. On the 25th September a strong body of the enemy approached, and it became evident that they meant fighting.

"The force of Police assembled at Ibeka consisted as follows:—

Artillery, 3 guns, 3 officers, 45 men.	No. 6 Troop, 1 officer, 25 men.
No. 3 Troop, 3 officers, 60 men.	No. 7 Troop, 3 officers, 120 men.

"No. 9 Troop was left at Tobui, and a part of No. 6 was left at Pullen's Farm, to keep communication open. No. 1 Troop joined us at Ibeka two days later; so the total of the force now brought together consisted of 13 officers and 295 non-commissioned officers and men.

"On the 25th part of No. 5 Troop, consisting of one officer and 40 men, arrived. They were also ordered out; but as they had just come off a march, the proposed patrol was postponed for one day. On the 26th, at nine o'clock in the morning, the above troops left for Idutywa. Little did we think, when we saw our comrades march out of Ibeka cheering and in the best of spirits, that some of them would bite the dust before sunset."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The best description of the action is supplied by the official report, from which a juster conception of the serious and ferocious nature of the warfare in which we were engaged can be gathered, than from any epitomised account of the affair. Some five thousand of the enemy attacked our little force at Mount Wodehouse, or, as the natives called it, Guadana, and the fighting soon became very severe.

"After the tenth round," wrote Inspector Chalmers, "the gun became disabled, and promptly ordered back under Mr. Cochrane and the escort. This was immediately carried out, and the gun, under Sub-Inspector Cochrane and A. Maclean, with 25 men as gun escort, retired accordingly. Before entering into action, my men were extended in skirmishing order on the brow of the hill, the horseshaving been left out of sight, in hand and in charge of the usual number of men. The Fingoes, under Mr. Ayliff, were placed on the left flank, between the gun and the Guadana forest, so as to command the bush. My men were placed on the right of the gun. When the Galekas came within rifle range I ordered the police to commence firing, and continuous independent firing was kept up for nearly two hours, which checked the enemy until the gun retired. When the Fingoes saw this they made a general retreat, running in among our horses and causing great confusion.

"Finding that we were deserted by the Fingoes, and that by remaining on the ground any longer the lives of the whole European police would be sacrificed, I ordered the men to retire. The confusion by the Fingoes rushing about in all directions caused several of our horses to break loose, and through this unfortunate circumstance one officer and six men fell victims to the enemy. The remainder of the men retired in order, and the gun was taken safely to the Idutyma. The firing from the 7-pounder was most effective, and so was also that of the Sniders. The estimated loss on the Galeka side was at least 200 besides wounded. I may say that the Fingoes, when asked why they retreated so soon, replied that they had been watching the gun, and when they saw it move they thought it was time to leave the battlefield. I cannot attach any blame to our men in the engagement; they stood their ground until the very last, fired steadily, and were it not for the gun breaking down, I have no hesitation in asserting that the result would have been different. Finding the gun and men were safe, I proceeded to the Ibeka camp in company with Inspector J. Maclean and Sub-Inspector Hamilton, where I personally reported the engagement to you, and returned to the Idutyma reserve on the morning of the 27th September.

"The Galeka army must have numbered about 5,000. Our force consisted of 180 men and about 1,500 Fingoes."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The author of "With the Cape Mounted Rifles" thus comments upon the affair:—

"Such was the battle of Guadana. It was fought under adverse circumstances, and in a nasty bit of country. The Fingoes fought badly, as they always do if they are not commanded by white leaders. They never stood, but retreated firing from the very first. Mr. Chalmers' account is substantially correct. I heard the same version from some men engaged, as well as from the Fingoes. The men who were killed, with the exception of Mr. Van Hohenan, lost their lives through Fingoes taking their horses."

According to the same candid friend, the "strategic movement to the rear" effected by both Police and Fingoes was barely distinguishable from a flight, but this has been —and not unnaturally—strenuously denied. The fighting at Guadana was quickly followed by other skirmishes, and it became evident that the "women's war" would prove no holiday pastime for the few and ill-prepared troops* on whom it devolved to defend our interests and territory.

The whole garrison defending Ibeka now consisted of some hundred and fifty troopers of the Frontier Armed Mounted Police, two thousand Fingoes under the valiant Allan Maclean, and about half a dozen casual volunteers. The force opposed to them was at least eight thousand, led by Sidgow, a young son of Kreli, with whom, as guide, philosopher, and friend, and occupying a position somewhat analogous to that of a well-known Russian general in the Crimean War, was the Amazonian Witch Doctor Nita. We will again quote from the eye-witness before mentioned.

"The enemy, on approaching within about 1,200 yards, threw out skirmishers, who began firing as they neared the boundary. This move was resisted by some 500 Fingoes under Veldtman, who dispatched them to meet the enemy. On our extreme right Allan Maclean, with the remainder of the Fingoes, supported them, the Police being thrown out in skirmishing order round the immediate front and left. When the mounted men of the enemy appeared over the ridge we fired at them with two shells; both, however, went over their heads. Two rocket tubes were then brought into action, and did great execution, frightening the horses, and causing many of them to bolt. We then commenced to fire our three 7-pounders, and the action became general along the whole line. Shell after shell was plumped right into the middle of the square columns, causing great slaughter. When the columns were broken after a little hard firing, the enemy extended themselves in skirmishing order, and again

* The only regular troops on the frontier were some of the 1-24th, and though volunteers were raised their effectiveness was naturally not thorough for want of training.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and again charged right up to us within fifty yards of the guns. Our fire, however, was too much for them, and they frequently had to retire to take rest, still at intervals coming on again and again, but with no better success.

"Their mounted men were thus thoroughly broken up and dispersed by the rockets and shells.

"At last, after several plucky charges, they collected together about five o'clock for a final effort. On and on they came, one scrambling, yelling mass, but only to be mowed down by our shell and rockets. Right up to the guns they came, and we poured shell, case, rockets, and Snider bullets into them with determined precision and effect, till at last they wavered. Down swept the Fingoes, with Allan Maclean leading them, and some fifty men of the Police led by his brother, Inspector John Maclean, cheering as they charged the enemy, and pouring in a heavy fire. As this section of our force advanced, the Galekas turned and fled, leaving their guns, blankets, and everything behind them as they ran for dear life, hotly pursued by the very men they had reckoned on easily beating.

"The 7-pounders continued firing until the enemy were out of range. Till then we had no time to look about us.

"The fight had lasted from ten in the morning till five in the afternoon, and it was rapidly getting dark. Wonderful to relate, we had not one man killed, and only four or five wounded, and these wounds were all scratches."

Then there was fighting at Kreli's Kraal, then at Luisi, then on the 2nd of December, at Umzuitzani, where the future colonel of the Cape Mounted Police, then Captain Bayley, commanded, and the fierce determination of the enemy caused serious apprehension along the ill-defended frontier. It seemed, indeed, at one time as though the overpowering numbers of the Galekas must enable them entirely to annihilate our small force. Once —it was, perhaps, the most dramatic incident of the day—a band of at least five hundred Galekas charged madly down on a force of thirty-two, twenty troopers of the Police and a dozen artillerymen. Fortunately they were able to retire, all save three whose steeds were either lost or shot. "Two got safe under the muzzle of the gun, but a third—named Wellesley—whose thigh bone had been broken by a shot, was immediately assegaied, though he fought desperately on his knees, and slew four Kaffirs before he was despatched. Many were shot down by the troopers and artillerymen, as they clustered in a mob about the miserable man, stabbing him to death. Lieutenant Wells waited till the Galekas were within sixty yards of the gun, and fired a case shot with terrible effect into the midst of them. Then, instantly taking advantage of the terror, confusion, and

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

slaughter that had ensued, he limbered up, and withdrew at a gallop, bringing off with him in safety the two Police troopers." At Nyumoxa the Police under Inspectors Bourne and Chalmers most creditably acquitted themselves, and a few days afterwards took part in the decisive actions at Quintana, and on the Black Kei, where Commandant Griffiths defeated the army of Gongabele with considerable loss. Early in the following year fresh operations were necessitated by the hostile attitude of Sandilli, Cetewayo, Sekukuni, and others, and, under Evelyn Wood, the Frontier Armed and Mounted Police were again busily engaged. At daylight on the 7th February, 1878, many of the enemy's scouts were again seen on the hills in front of us; the camp was called, all the tents struck, and the force—so we learn from one writer—stationed as follows:—The 9-pounder was placed at the N.W. corner of the trench, the 7-pounder at the S.W., with the 24-pounder rocket tube in the middle, Carrington's horse on the right front, Fingoes on the left front, the 24th lined the trench immediately fronting the enemy, and the police were stationed on the east side, in case of the enemy trying to outflank us.

A heavy drenching rain now came on, and speedily wetted everyone through. About six o'clock in the morning the Light Horse under Captain Carrington with a few police, and a company of the 24th were sent out to try and draw the enemy on; this they did most successfully. On the Kaffirs came, some in columns and some skirmishing; the Light Horse and party retired into the camp as directed, where the remainder of our men had been kept out of sight in the trenches. The Kaffirs evidently supposing that the party they had seen skirmishing was the entire force, advanced at a rapid rate across the veldt, charging directly for our camp. We computed the number to be about 4,000.

When the enemy had reached within 500 yards our men quietly put their heads up out of the trenches, and commenced a heavy fire at the astonished Kaffirs, the big guns and the rocket tube at the same time opening fire.

They stood this for about twenty minutes. They had tolerably good shelter, and a heavy mist was coming on, sometimes completely obscuring them from us; but after the expiration of about half an hour the fog fortunately lifted, and we discovered that they had crept within 150 yards of the trenches. A few rounds of case shot and some volleys from the Martini-Henrys, and they turned and fled, the Fingoes and Carrington's Horse after them, Carrington leading the way with a revolver and a stick about two hundred yards ahead of every one else; these weapons he evidently considered good enough for chasing niggers with. In June Inspector Nisbett made a most dashing capture of the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

stronghold of the Griquas in Victoria West, taking several thousand head of cattle, and utterly routing the enemy, who outnumbered him about four to one.

Early in 1879 the Frontier Armed Mounted Police became the Cape Mounted Rifles, a change which, however, in its immediate practical effect was attended by some friction. Major Garrett Moore was appointed the first commandant, but the fact that the change was made—so the men considered—without due consideration for the terms on which they had originally enlisted, made his position no easy one. "More than two-thirds of the regiment demanded their discharge," signs of insubordination were of ominous occurrence, and Major Moore resigned, being succeeded by Colonel Bayley, through whose exertions the dissatisfaction of the men was quieted. The author of the work we have before quoted gives it as his opinion that the "Cape Mounted Rifles date their birthday as a corps from the appointment of Colonel Bayley. Through his exertions the corps has been brought into the efficient order in which it is at the present time. His first step was to secure the retirement of a good many of the old officers, and promote others from the ranks who had shown special aptitude for the position."

Another "little war" now became imminent. The chief Morosi, who had, since the days of 1853, lived in amity with the British Government, was urged by his sons to lead the Basutos once more against us. The occasion was the collection of a tax which the resident magistrate, a Mr. Austen, very properly exacted. Dodo, Morosi's son, instigated the people to refuse payment, and forcibly released those whose contumacy had been punished by imprisonment. A body of fifty Cape Mounted Rifles was ordered to the spot and punished the rebels severely, but by this time hostilities on a large scale were inevitable. Morosi entrenched himself in a position of extreme strength called "Morosi's Mountain," which for some time past he had been fortifying. Three troops of the Cape Mounted Rifles, with whom were some Cape Yeomanry, attempted to dislodge him, but their force was by far too small and they were repulsed. The action, however, was not without its compensations for the Rifles, as it provided the opportunity for one of their number, Surgeon-Major Hartley, to gain the Victoria Cross. The official notification is to the effect that the coveted decoration was awarded "for conspicuous gallantry displayed by him in attending the wounded under fire at the attack on Morosi's Mountain on the 5th June, 1879, and for having proceeded to the open ground under a heavy fire, and carried in his arms from an exposed position Corporal A. Jones of the Cape Mounted Rifles, who was wounded. While conducting him to a place of safety, the corporal was again wounded. The Surgeon-Major then

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

returned under the severe fire of the enemy in order to dress the wounds of other men of the storming party." From the history of the war we obtain a graphic description of another attempt upon this stronghold, which, though again unsuccessful, reflected renewed credit upon the gallant Rifles.

The attack was arranged to take place for July, the troops in the meantime being reinforced by Burghers, a contingent of Hottentots, and another troop of C.M.R. "The day before the attack a sergeant of artillery* and seven men volunteered to creep up at night and throw in shell with lighted fuzes over the schanzes to drive the enemy's sharpshooters out, and enable the storming party to get over the schanzes. They were to creep up at night, and then lie under the schanzes until the storming party was ready to advance. They all succeeded in getting up safely, and lay down right underneath the wall waiting for daylight.

"When the advance was sounded, Sergeant Scott and his party threw two shells over the schanzes, the third burst in his hand, shattering it and severely wounding him and three others of the party. The C.M.R. charged and got possession of the first schanze, shooting a few of the enemy," but with the exception of a few of the Yeomanry and Burghers, who gallantly supported them, they were unaided in their efforts.

The loss was heavy on our side, Captain Surmon of the C.M.R. was shot through the lungs, and about thirty-four were killed and wounded, while the loss of the enemy was insignificant.

Sergeant Scott gained the Victoria Cross, as, too, did Trooper Peter Brown, who, while waiting for the order to advance, "heard two men who had been wounded some time previously crying out for water. He carried a water bottle to these men, under a heavy fire, to an adjacent rock where they had crept for shelter. Whilst giving the first man water he was wounded in the right thigh, and immediately afterwards a bullet shattered his right arm, the use of which he never recovered." Another brave, but disastrous attempt, resulted in further loss to the Rifles. "One was wounded and taken prisoner. Next morning his head was seen on a pole on the summit of the mountain, and a few hours after his body was flung over the outer wall."

A few months later another and better organized attack was made on the Mountain. Colonel Bayley was in command of the Rifles, and determined to achieve the task with his own men alone, declining the assistance of some hastily-organized troops that were present. Before the final assault, however, twenty-five men of the Wodehouse Border-

* Sergeant Scott.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Guard, under Lieutenant Mulenbeck, and fifty of the loyal Fingoes under "the redoubtable Allan Maclean," joined, making the entire force five hundred, of which a fifth were natives. "It was characteristic of Colonel Bayley that his order began 'Morosi's mountain will be taken to-night by the C.M.R.' &c. Then followed the list of rewards and the disposition of the various troops.

"The attack was to take place at the dip of the moon, which was near midnight, about half-past twelve. Parties of six natives were told off to carry the scaling-ladders, of which there were twenty. The men were to dress as they liked, and to arm themselves in any way they fancied, but all without exception were to carry their carbines and revolvers.

"These orders, with a few more details respecting the time the mortar and big guns were to begin and cease firing, constituted the instructions under which we were to proceed to attack the redoubtable stronghold.

"For four days and nights previous to the attack the mortar had been constantly fired at intervals of ten minutes at night time, and varied intervals in the day, generally leaving off for about four hours to enable the mortar squad to obtain a little rest.

"The mortar was worked by the same squad all through this time, and we were beginning to be thoroughly knocked up. The guns were to fire at intervals during the day preceding the attack, and both guns and mortar were to cease firing at twelve at night. The attempt to get on the mountain was to be made by scaling ladders up the fissure called Bourne's Crack, which I have described, and the krantz immediately surrounding it. Then officers were told off to lead the storming parties at these several points. During the day previous to the attack twenty-five men of a force called the Wodehouse Border-Guard, under Lieutenant Mulenbeck, and fifty Fingoes under Captain Hook, the magistrate at Herschel, and Allan Maclean, arrived. The whole force to attack the mountain numbered between 350 and 400 white men, and about 100 natives." The signal for the assault was to be three rockets, which were to be sent off in the darkest hours of the morning, a time when, according to the old Duke's famous criticism, that highest of all courage, "three o'clock in the morning courage," was emphatically called into play. From the account of an eye-witness we gather the following description:—

"The rockets went up, and the storming party placed their ladders and commenced climbing up. Lieutenant Springer of No. 3 Troop planted his ladder to the right of Bourne's Crack, and with his men climbed up. When near the top, a native put his head over the krantz and said to him in Dutch, 'Don't come up here or I'll shoot you.'

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

'Shoot away,' said Springer, and the native looking over exposed too much of his body, and was shot by Springer himself, the bullet from the native grazing the lieutenant's shoulder and going through his shirt.

"These shots aroused the whole mountain, but our men were now fast getting up the ladders, and as it happened the enemy were all in the schanzes, expecting we should attack the same way as hitherto. There was only about thirty of the enemy on this side, and they were speedily shot down. Five minutes after the ladders had been planted 200 men were on the mountain, and helping the remainder up. Mulenbeck, in the meantime, from the saddle had fought his way up with his men, and had reached the fourth schanze, after shooting down the enemy in the previous schanzes, throu h which and over which we had come.

"The Fingoes had also reached the top of the gully headed by Allan Maclean. The Tambookies had refused to go on, and Captain Hook had marched them back, and they were disarmed by the Artillery and made prisoners. A few minutes after the first 200 men of the storming party were up, the remainder had all been pulled up somehow or other. Nearly all the ladders had broken, owing to the excitement of the men who had crowded on them.

"Nearly all the enemy had by this time come over from the schanzes and the opposite side of the mountain to resist the storming party. Forming in line and cheering heartily, the C.M.R. charged across the flat top of the mountain, driving the enemy in front of them. For a few brief minutes it was hand-to-hand, and then the natives were cut down and shot where they stood, those that escaped only to be driven over the perpendicular sides of the mountain and smashed to pieces in their fall. The C.M.R. were now divided into three parties, and commenced scouring out all the nooks and crannies for Morosi and Dodo.

"Small parties of Basutos were found hidden in various caves, and were immediately brought out and shot; and at last, after several attempts to get inside a cave where Morosi was found to be, he was shot, but Dodo could nowhere be discovered.

"At five o'clock A.M., just as the sun was rising, the Union Jack was hoisted on the top of the highest point of the mountain, and in half-an-hour afterwards Morosi's head was placed on a staff in the centre of our camp, a ghastly warning to all rebels."

But though Morosi's Mountain had fallen the chief Letherodi still found plenty of work for the Cape Mounted Rifles. In September, 1880, twelve hundred men under this native warrior attacked some seventy men of the Cape Mounted Rifles, who under

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Colonel Carrington were making a reconnaissance. The natives advanced with all their customary valour. The Rifles beat them off, but in a few days suffered some loss in a skirmish in which three men were killed and Lieutenant Clarke ended his life with a blaze of heroism in attempting to rescue a wounded private. Shortly afterwards some two hundred of the Mounted Rifles, still under Colonel Carrington, with whom were about the same number of Native Police, were attacked by some seven thousand of the enemy. The Residency was completely surrounded, and though brilliant sorties by the garrison drove them backward, the result was that the latter were cut off from all communication with the other Imperial troops. Fortunately Captain H. S. Montague of the Rifles was able to effect at considerable risk to himself a communication with them, and in the ensuing month the Rifles achieved a brilliant and decisive victory at Mafetent, to the relief of which Colonel Clarke had marched. The position of the Rifles at this period was that one wing under Colonel Carrington was in garrison at Mafetent, while the other under Colonel Bayley, their own commander, was at Maseru. The latter had some fierce fighting and Carrington forced the enemy into an engagement at the Golah Mountain. And now rebellion grew apace. At Untata Major Elliott held his own against hordes of ferocious savages, the few men at his disposal being commanded by an ex-sergeant of the Rifles. A party of the regiment fortunately arrived, and, so high was the opinion held of the regiment, the threatened post was then considered safe. Space fails us to enumerate the various occasions in which the Cape Mounted Rifles fought and fought well till, for a time, our savage foes realised that submission was their only hope. So closed for a brief space the definite warfare in this part of South Africa, so far as the Cape Mounted Rifles were concerned, the greater part of their share in the ensuing campaign consisting of the defence of various frontier positions.

It must not, however, be imagined that any actual line of demarcation between the various phases of the South African War can be made with any approach to accuracy. During the greater part of the struggles with the natives the Boers had been holding sullenly aloof. They had, they considered, a grievance, and not even the representations that were made to them that the whole European Colony was in danger could induce them to quit their intention to take "further measures for regaining the independence of the people or to throw in their lot even for a time with the Imperial Government." Undoubtedly there were some who took a larger view. The services of the Boer Contingent with Sir Evelyn Wood's column were deserving of nothing but praise; it is not too much to say that the touching and heroic death of Piet Uys counteracted to a very great

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

extent the intensely bitter feeling which subsequently actuated the British. It will, however, simplify our narrative of the War, and consequently of the military forces of the Colony, if we separate entirely the Transvaal or Boer War from the Zulu, Kaffir, and Basuto Campaigns.

As has been before intimated the dates of formation of the various volunteer regiments at present in existence preclude the possibility of their individual participation in the campaign, with the exceptions that will duly appear. But the present volunteer regiments are made of the same material which supplied those corps whose names still linger as household words through the length and breadth of South Africa. In many cases, too, the *personnel* of the regiments of to-day is strongly leavened by officers and men who played their part throughout those stirring scenes in one or other of the famous corps of Irregulars and Volunteers now disbanded. In many cases again it is but the name which has changed, and the present corps can practically claim a continuity of existence to those whose titles become familiar to all students of the history of the period. Inasmuch then as our space forbids us to dwell at any length on the career of the various regiments now constituting the volunteer force of Cape Colony and Natal, even if under the circumstances mentioned the *official* career presented more incidents of interest than from the present organization it possibly can present, we shall best achieve our object in sketching the history of the South African forces if we refer to those episodes of the War in which the volunteers of the time were concerned.

Amongst the names which we continually meet in perusing its chequered story are Carrington's or the Frontier Light Horse, Nourse's Horse, Fereira's Horse, Bettington's Horse, Methuen's Horse, Lonsdale's Horse, D'Arcy's Horse, Gough's Horse, and various mounted rifles, whose names varied from time to time with that of their commanding officer for the time being. The names of these corps are no longer found, but their doings in which the volunteers of to-day may rightly claim a heritage will appear in the following pages.* From the accounts which have been given to the world by actors in the various scenes of South African warfare, details, more or less accurate, can be gathered of the formation of some of these corps. It must not be understood that the accounts are

* For a more detailed account of the occurrences of the various campaigns the following works may be consulted: "The Transvaal of To-day," by Aylward; "My Command in South Africa," Sir A. T. Cunningham; "Narrative of Field Operations in the Zulu War;" "Campaigning in South Africa," Montague; "The Transvaal War, 1880-81," Lady Bellairs; "How I Volunteered for the Cape," Fenn; "Story of the Transvaal," Nixon; "Austral-Africa," Mackenzie; "With the Cape Mounted Rifles."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

otherwise than reliable, but the frequent change of name, owing to the custom—once common amongst British regiments—of the corps being known by the name of the commander for the time being, causes at first sight some slight apparent confusion.

"The irregulars always reminded one," writes Tomasson, "of that verse, Parthians and Medes, Elamites and Persians, &c., comprising as they did men of all nationalities; English, Scotch, Irish, Welsh, French, Prussians, Danes, Swedes, Austrians, Norwegians, Italians, Spanish, Australians, Russians, Jews of all nations, Poles, Hungarians, Africanders (English born in Africa), Boers, and Americans. Surely a mixed lot to weld as they were into a perfect whole. . . . Of these nations Danes made the best, and Americanized Irish the worst, soldiers. As Archibald Forbes truly says, they were men of varied antecedents. Discharged soldiers and 'Varsity men, unfrocked clergyman and sailor, cockney and countryman, cashiered officers of army and navy here rubbed shoulders." Of the Frontier Light Horse, the oldest irregular corps, the same writer says that they served with distinction through the Gaika and Galeka campaigns, and bore themselves always with courage, and had more *esprit de corps* than the other corps.

Another historian, who also served in their ranks, gives the following account:—

"The Frontier Light Horse was the only cavalry regiment raised by the Imperial Government during the Kaffir War. It was raised by Lieutenant Carrington of the 2-24th regiment, and was three squadrons strong. It was paid, equipped, and rationed by the Imperial Government, and had nothing whatever to do with the Colonial Government, receiving orders only from the Lieutenant-General or from some officer in the regular service. We had no coloured men in the ranks, but our troopers were necessarily of a mixed sort; and like all other regiments we had bad as well as good characters, but I am happy to say the latter predominated. Our ranks contained many young fellows who had filled good positions in society at home. In my humble opinion they did very well to join, as they were fully equipped, mounted, and last, though not least, well rationed free of expense.

"A recruit on joining ours engages for six months' service, has everything found him, and at the end of his service, if he chooses to re-engage, he can have such articles of outfit as he requires. Our men were all clothed in cotton cord suits (black, red facings), 'ammunition' boots and gaiters, and a wide-awake hat—colonially termed a 'smasher'—with a red puggaree. They were armed with a steel-barrel carbine, slung from the right shoulder, and hanging on the left side. The officers wore a black patrol jacket, tight black Bedford cord pants, with double red stripe, and wore either helmet or 'smasher'

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

hat; arms, revolver and sword. The scale of pay was as follows:—captains, 15s. a day; lieutenants, 11s.; regimental sergeant-major, 9s.; troop sergeant-major, 8s.; sergeants, 7s.; corporals, 6s.; and troopers, 5s. As everything in the way of equipment was found, this pay was very good.

"Before leaving the subject of the regiment, I should like to draw attention to the fact that the Frontier Light Horse have seen more service than any regiment out there; I mean, of course, during the late Kaffir disturbances. They took a leading part in the Trans-Kei War, they were then employed during the whole of the Perie Bush War. After that they were ordered to take part in the expedition against Secocœni; and are now doing valuable service against the Zulus under the command of Colonel Buller, and attached to General Wood's column." (Fenn.)

After Colonel Carrington left Captain Whalley took command, and then Colonel Buller; both officers sharing in the first campaign against Sekukuni.* Amongst other commanders who have been identified with the Frontier Light Horse may be mentioned Captain MacNaughten (killed in Perie Bush), Barton (Coldstream Guards, killed at Zlobane), Prior (80th regiment), Brunker (26th), Baron von Stitencron (Austrian Hussars, killed at Zlobane), and many others, including Commandant Cecil D'Arcy, V.C.

"'Baker's Horse' were raised by Captain F. J. Baker, of the Ceylon Rifles, and served through the latter part of the old colony war under that officer. They were then sent to garrison Kokstadt." The Pondas were supposed to be about to rise, but were checked by the prompt measures taken. After this the regiment marched through Natal and disbanded at Port Elizabeth. A few days afterwards Captain Baker got a telegram from Lord Chelmsford to raise men. This was done with incredible celerity, and in a short space some two hundred and forty men sailed from Port Elizabeth. At Zlobane this corps suffered in common with the other irregulars.

The Natal Light Horse were raised by Captain Watt Whalley, an officer who had seen service in the Mutiny, China and Abyssinia, the Franco-Prussian war, where, as one of the Papal Zouaves, he was dangerously wounded at Mézières and taken prisoner, the Carlist war, the Gaika, Galeka (wounded), Sekukuni and Zulu campaigns. "Of course, with such a commanding officer, a regiment must be a good one." In February, 1878, Sekukuni attacked our ally Pok Wana and returned a defiant answer to the remonstrances of the British Commissioner. Volunteers and Police were accordingly directed to attack the stronghold of Masselaroon, and in an encounter which

* The name of this chieftain is—as is the case with others—spelt differently by different writers.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

took place in the following April the Volunteers were repulsed with a loss in killed or wounded of about sixteen. A detachment of the Diamond Fields Horse was next attacked and repulsed, and the need of reinforcements became a crying one. In August Colonel Rowlands, V.C., marched with a column, which included some Frontier Light Horse and Mounted Infantry, against Sekukuni, but with the exception of a brilliant capture of a kraal on the 27th October nothing particular was achieved, and the troops were withdrawn to the Frontiers of Zululand, where war was imminent. When the invasion was determined on the Volunteers were thus located: With the first column under Colonel Pearson were the Durban Mounted Rifles under Captain W. Shepstone; the Victoria Rifles under Captain Sauer; the Stanger Rifles under Captain Addison; the Alexandra Rifles under Captain Arbuthnot; and the Natal Hussars under Captain Norton.

In the column under Colonel Glyn were the Natal Mounted Police under Major Dartnell, the Natal Carabineers under Shepstone, the Buffalo Border Guard under Roxham, and the Newcastle Mounted Rifles under Bradstreet. In Evelyn Wood's column were the Frontier Light Horse under Buller, and the Kaffrarian Rifles, a corps raised from the survivors or descendants of the old German Legion who had settled there after the Crimea, under Commandant Schermbrucker. On the 22nd January was fought the battle of Inyezane, in which Pearson's column gained a distinct victory. Colonel Glyn's column, meanwhile, with which was Lord Chelmsford, had encamped at Rorke's Drift, and on the 20th January the column, with the exception of three companies of the 24th, marched to the fated hill of Isandhlwana. On the 21st, Major Dartnell, with the Natal Mounted Police and Volunteers, started on a reconnoitring expedition, and were subsequently joined by Lord Chelmsford.

There were left under Colonel Pulleine, besides the Regulars, some eighty Mounted Volunteers and Police, of whom the great number were Natal Carabineers, and some of the Native Contingent. The story of Isandhlwana has been often before told, but not so familiar is the part the Natal Volunteers played in that drama of death and heroism. When the question of calling out the volunteer forces was first mooted in earnest, the Carabineers had been amongst the first.

"By rights these boys—for boys the greater part of them were—could only be called on to serve within the limits of the colony, and for defensive purposes. Should they insist on their right? There was not a boy among them all who did not sign his name to a declaration expressing his willingness to go beyond the limits of the colony, should the duty be required of them. Alas! they were signing away their lives.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"And so, when they marched out of the city, the little troop of some five and forty, with the military band at their head, and the crowd marching with them for a mile of the route, there was anxiety, but no apprehension. They were the Natal Carabineers, the heroes of the affair at Bushman's Pass in 1873. They were going to redeem their reputation, and to fight, if fighting indeed should be necessary, under the eye of Lord Chelmsford himself.

"For they were no of the commoner sort, these boys. Their families were in many cases of the best blood of the colony, who were not ashamed that their sons should serve as privates in the ranks of the Carabineers.

"There never was a calmer, brighter summer dawn than there was in Natal that day. The whole thing is at this moment as distinct as if it were only yesterday. The dim feeling of undefined awe, when it was whispered that news had been brought of the disaster. Then the questions hurriedly asked of the highest colonial official obtainable; the answer, 'The news is just as bad as it can be.' The question as to who was known to be killed; the reply again, 'Durnford's killed for certain, and Scott, and at least half the Carabineers.'

"Durnford was there, indeed, still plainly recognisable, with Scott close beside him, and the boys of the Carabineers lying dead all round. It was they who had made that last rally, in the vain hope of stemming the rush of Zulu warriors, and gaining time for at least more fugitives to escape."

Though not perhaps strictly relative to the Colonial Forces now under consideration, we may be pardoned quoting an incident which reflected the highest credit on the Natal Native Horse, a useful corps which on this occasion rendered splendid service.

"When on that fatal day of Isandhlwana, the broken line of fugitives sought the drift over the Buffalo River, which will now for ever be called after their name; when they came down breathless, with the enemy around them and on their heels, doubting whether they had strength enough left to make a last fight for life by plunging into the rapidly running stream; as they paused and looked round and upward, measuring the distance of the advancing foe, and the width of the river that lay between them and the comparative safety of the Natal shore—while they thus paused and wondered, there came the sharp report of rifles from the opposite bank.

"Was it a signal of life or of death? Had the Zulus got across and intercepted their retreat? or was there a British detachment providentially in the way covering their escape?

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"No, they were not British troops, they were not even a colonial force. The men whose rifles they heard were as black as the Zulus themselves, but they were not Zulus, for they wore a rough uniform and broad-brimmed hats, and carried their cartridges in a belt over their shoulders. There they stood by their shaggy little ponies, firing steadily across the river at the advancing swarm of Cetywayo's warriors. There was a Zulu down; there was another. There was a check, a pause, a few moments more allowed for a dash into the river, for a struggle to the other side, a hasty climb up to where the little band of sable horsemen, each with only a few cartridges left in his belt, still stood facing the enemy.

"There were not many for whom even such a respite as this was obtainable. But none the less admirable was the conduct of the troop of native horse, who, with no European leader left to direct them, thus delayed their own retreat to save what they could of the remnant of the ill-fated force left in Lord Chelmsford's camp.

"Who were these men? They were the Natal Native Horse—a force some sixty strong, raised by Colonel Durnford from among the residents of the native settlements of Edendale, near Maritzburg. First of all attached to Colonel Durnford's almost purely native command, they accompanied him to Lord Chelmsford's camp, when, on that memorable morning, he was ordered up from the drift across the Buffalo River to reinforce the detachments left in camp. Taking part in the action that preceded the destruction of the camp and its gallant defenders, they were so far outside the main body of the Zulus as to be able to cut their way through and escape, losing only two or three of their number. Returning to their homes in the first instance, they volunteered immediately again for active service, passing through the whole of the rest of the campaign with the utmost credit."

When the tidings of Isandhlwana reached Pearson he immediately fortified Etchowe, while Colonel Wood's column, after various slight skirmishes, occupied Fort Tuita. In the defence of Etchowe and the various raids with which the monotony of its blockade was broken, and in its relief by Lord Chelmsford the Volunteers were engaged. Meanwhile the column under Evelyn Wood had on the 31st January formed an intrenched camp at a place called Kambula Hill, and no sooner were they arrived, than Colonel Evelyn Wood determined to make an attack on the enemy's stores at the Baglasini kraal. The troops selected for this service were the "dashing Frontier Horse" under Buller, and some of the Dutch troop of Piet Uys. The kraal was some thirty miles distant from the camp, and in a position which made its attack one of difficulty and danger. Buller,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

however, managed to conceal his approach, till almost within striking distance. "After exchanging a few shots, the troopers made a headlong dash at the kraal, which was captured almost without resistance." Then gathering the cattle, which numbered some four hundred, into one great herd, they drove off with them in triumph, in the face of a considerable number of the enemy who, however, seemed too alarmed to offer any opposition.

Another very dashing piece of work was the destruction of a kraal belonging to the powerful chief Manyanyova, and in this again the Volunteers highly distinguished themselves. The force detailed for the attack consisted of thirteen of the Frontier Light Horse, fifty of Piet Uys' men, eight of the Kaffrarian Rifles, and some Irregulars and natives. They started about midnight, and directly the sun arose were sufficiently near to shell the enemy's position. The surprise did not, however, prevent the Zulus opening fire, though our losses were fortunately limited to six killed and wounded. Another band of Volunteers was meanwhile engaged in some brisk fighting under Colonel Rowlands, and so with varied fortunes the weeks passed by till, towards the end of March, the contingent under Wood received instructions to hold themselves ready for a demonstration in force. The fight that ensued is known as the Battle of Inhlobane, or, as Ashe calls it, Zlobani, and is memorable for the severeness of the fighting, the heavy loss amongst the officers of the Volunteers, and the many acts of heroism which were performed. The force selected for the expedition, excluding the Imperial troops, was composed of a hundred and twenty-five troopers of the Frontier Light Horse, fifty each of the contingents of Raaf and Piet Uys, forty troopers of Schermbrucker's Horse, and double that number of Weatherley's Border Horse, commanded by Colonel Weatherley himself, who formerly had borne a commission in the Inniskillings. The whole party numbered four hundred and ninety-five sabres, every one being a good swordsman and picked marksman. Early in the morning of the 27th March they started, Buller, Weatherley, and Piet Uys, with their men, being considerably in advance. When they halted for the night, intelligence reached them that the Zulus were approaching in great force, no fewer than seven native regiments, under chiefs of rank, being reported to be in the neighbourhood. To retreat would involve leaving the advance guard to the mercy of the overpowering foe, and it was necessary, therefore, to effect a junction with them at whatever risks. The order to advance was given, and long before dawn the column moved forward, being met shortly by Weatherley's troop, which had missed their way the previous night. Directly morning broke it became evident that

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

there had been considerable fighting. As soon as the mist cleared away, the head of Buller's column could be seen advancing, and driving before them dense masses of the enemy. Weatherley requested to be allowed to hasten to Buller's assistance, and, permission being granted, rode blithely away with his brave young son to the fight from which neither was ever to return. The path along which they had to pass was terribly difficult, and soon a body of Zulus moved forward with the evident intention of cutting off the little band of horse.

"It would be difficult to describe," writes Ashe, "the marvellously rugged and weird nature of the rocks around, and the ghastly features of the sheer precipices gaping on either side. Killed and wounded horses now were seen at every turn of the road, showing how stoutly the enemy must have held their ground, and how difficult an operation Buller had performed. Sending fifty men round to work on our right flank and to endeavour to take the Zulus in the rear, Colonel Wood kept his men for a few moments under cover of a friendly ledge of rocks to look to their rifles, girths, and ammunition, and then ascended rapidly to the front, passing the Border Horse who had by this time got off the track. The scene was at this moment intensely exciting. The firing was almost continuous, and the yells of the savages were re-echoed back by the loud and heart-stirring cheers of their gallant comrades, who had seen Wood's column coming, and gave them this encouragement,"

The Zulus were skirmishing amongst the strange caves which honeycombed the mountain sides, and from which they were able, with comparative impunity, to pour a devastating fire upon the Colonial troops. Captain von Sleitenkvon, lieutenant in the Frontier Horse, was shot; not long after fell Llewellen Lloyd, shot through the head as he dashed forward to cut down a Zulu who had fired at Colonel Wood. The shot that killed him passed first through the Colonel's sleeve. And now the enemy was retiring, while Weatherley was harassing their left rear, but a terrible change was effected in the position by the approach of the great Ulundi army. A retreat was ordered, but skilful and orderly as it was, it could not be effected without the most desperate fighting and severe loss. "The enemy had massed themselves on three sides of the mountain, and only one terribly steep path was left to descend. This was thoroughly blocked by the Zulus, who, under cover, rained bullets and assegais upon these devoted men, and then, when the moment came for close fighting, dashed in dense masses upon their thinned and weakened files." Thanks to Buller's splendid soldiership many of his men successfully effected the retreat, but when at last the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

camp at Kambula was reached, the indefatigable Buller rode off to try to succour the Border Horse, whom Barton had joined. It was owing to this gallant ride through the gloomy night and torrents of blinding rain, that any of Barton's force escaped. He himself had fallen fighting gallantly; fallen too, had Piet Uys—"splendid, manly, honest, simple, and taciturn Piet Uys—whose father, uncles, and cousins, fought and fell in the old wars of Dingaan." It was remembered, when his death was known, how but the evening before he had spoken tenderly of his children, and bespoken for them in the event of his death the protection of Colonel Wood; and men compared the memory of him as he spoke thus with the accounts of how he had fallen with his back to the cliff, standing across the body of his favourite horse, six Zulus lying dead before him, and with two assegais quivering in his body, while his nerveless hand grasped an empty revolver. There were eighty gallant troopers who had followed Weatherley into action that day. Of these more than half were killed, and amongst them were their brave commander and his son. We cannot refrain from quoting here the pathetic account given by Major Ashe, of the death of the Colonel, who may indeed be taken — despite his previous Imperial service—as a representative type of those splendid soldiers whose names are associated with Colonial Volunteer Cavalry. "Nothing could be more sad than Weatherley's death. At the fatal hour when all save honour seemed lost he placed his beloved boy upon his best horse, and kissing him on the forehead commended him to another Father's care above, and implored him to overtake the nearest column of the English, which seemed at that time to be cutting its way out. The boy clung to his father, and begged to be allowed to stay by his side and share his life or death. The contrast was characteristic. The man, a bearded, bronzed, and hardy *sabreur*, with a father's tears upon his cheek, while the blue-eyed and fair-haired lad, with much of the beauty of a girl in his appearance, was calmly and with a smile of fond delight, loading his father's favourite carbine. When the two noble hearts were last seen, the father, wounded to death with cruel assegaies, was clasping his boy's hand with his left, while the right cut down the brawny savages who came to despoil him of his charge."

Terrible indeed had been the slaughter that day. Over a hundred—of whom sixteen were officers—had been killed and wounded on our side, but for every one of these gallant spirits thirty Zulus had bitten the dust. Mention has before been made, in connection with other regiments, of the Victoria Crosses which were won by Buller and Leet and Lysons and Fowler on that day, but it may be mentioned here that the act of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

gallantry performed by the two former consisted in each case of the rescue of members of the Frontier Light Horse: Major Leet saving Lieutenant Smith, and Redvers Buller rescuing Captain D'Arcy, Lieutenant Everitt, and a trooper, all of whom were dismounted and would have fallen an easy prey to the advancing enemy.

As was to be expected, the Zulus determined to make an attack upon the camp at Kambula, and this they did in force, their number being estimated at twenty-five thousand men. Space will not permit us to dwell at length on the brilliant repulse which our little band of two thousand men inflicted on this formidable host; we must content ourselves with recording that the Colonial troops bravely acquitted themselves and suffered but slight loss. But as every incident connected with the Colonial troops is valuable in aiding towards a just appreciation of their value, we cannot pass unnoticed the adventures of a trooper named Gandier, one of the devoted band of Weatherley's Border Horse, who had been taken prisoner in the Battle of Inhlobane and who not long after made his appearance in the camp. Like many of his comrades Gandier was a Frenchman, and after fighting gallantly in the terrible rush in which Colonel Weatherley met his death, was dragged, wounded as he was, beaten, bruised and footsore to the kraal where Umbelini held his savage court. He was interrogated closely and persistently as to the strength and movements of the British, but declined to answer. Then, though expecting immediate death, he was remanded till the next day. "A circle was formed round the unfortunate prisoner, who was firmly bound with thongs of raw hide to a stout tree in the centre, while round and round the youngest of the warriors danced, chanting melancholy dirge, and keeping time upon his naked body with the butt ends of their stabbing assegaies." Once again did he nerve himself for the expected torture and death, and once again was he respited to be sent a prisoner to Cetywayo. He was stripped naked and made to carry his escort's food; for four days, denuded of everything but a hat and a pocket-handkerchief, which he bound round his loins, he was compelled to keep pace with the rapid march of his guard. Barefooted, black and blue with bruises, suffering from exposure and almost from starvation, bound at night to thorn bushes, his only nourishment a small handful of green mealies, the gallant trooper of Weatherley's horse still bore up. When he reached the king's kraal his lot was even worse. Finding that he was not to be seduced from loyalty by the offer of wives and cattle and land, his captor confined him in a hut, where "bound each night with painfully tight thongs he was watched by relays of old woman, hideous hags whose amusement was to tear out his hair and stick pins into him whenever he endeavoured to

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

sleep. In the daytime during eight days he was regularly tied to a tree and beaten by assegais by every warrior whose fancy it was to pass that way." At last when tidings came of the defeat of the Zulus at Kambula he was ordered to be taken back to Umbelini's kraal, and there sacrificed. Fortunately his escort was only two, and despite his terrible pain and exhaustion, Gandier determined to make a dash for liberty. Watching his opportunity he took the assegai from one of his guards, struck him to the heart, and seizing his musket, confronted his amazed comrade, who thereupon fled. After wandering about for two nights and days he fortunately met some of Raaf's force, and was carried back to Wood's camp.

Meanwhile the Frontier Light Horse at Kambula had been largely reinforced, and other welcome additions were made to the garrison. Numerous reconnaisances were made, and the records of the campaign are eloquent in praise of the invaluable service rendered by the Colonial forces. Kambula was exchanged for a strong position at Mazegwhana, and on the 5th May the C Troop of Lonsdale's Horse under Captain Hampden Whalley and some of De Burgh's troopers had a sharp encounter with a strong force of the enemy who attacked a convoy. The position of the Colonial Forces was about this time somewhat re-arranged in view of the contemplated advance, and it would occupy too much space to follow each change in detail.

The principal localities where they were stationed were Conference Hill, Mazegwhana, Doornkop, and Landsman's Drift. Some Natal Volunteers were with Captain Lucas at Thring's Post, while the Natal Police and Carabineers held Helpmakaar. Two or three important reconnaisances were made towards Isandhlwana, in which the Frontier Light Horse, under D'Arcy and Blaine, Baker's Horse, and the Natal Native Cavalry under Cochrane took part. On the 5th June, General Marshall, having effected a junction with Buller's men, had a smart engagement with the enemy. The order of advance of Colonial troopers was, "Frontier Light Horse the centre, Buller's Horse the left, Whalley's the right," and though the bulk of the subsequent fighting fell to the share of the regulars, the position of Buller's men was at times critical. On the 20th of the same month a troop of Buller's Horse had another skirmish with some seven hundred of the enemy, inflicting considerable loss without damage to themselves. On the 3rd July, a very brilliant raid was made across the Umvolosi by the Frontier Light Horse, Whalley's, and the Rangers under Raaf, in fact, all that was servicable of the Irregular Horse after a long and arduous campaign.

"The enemy poured in another volley, three men were dismounted; to one of them

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the Adjutant of the Light Horse gave his horse, the fellow immediately rode off, and left his preserver in the plain; the Adjutant had extreme difficulty in escaping of course; the man he saved, and who treated him so badly, was a German. The Zulus were advancing rapidly, yet Lord William Beresford turned his horse's head and rode back, resolved to save life or lose his own. The man he went to rescue was a huge trooper of the Light Horse, his horse was shot, and he himself was giddy with pain. Here took place the scene which everyone in England knows of. On reaching him Lord William ordered him to mount behind him; the man either did not hear, or did not understand, and hesitated; Lord William jumped off his own horse, and told him if he did not mount he would punch his head; with difficulty the man obeyed and mounted behind him, and thus they rode off. All this took place while the Zulus were racing over the one hundred and fifty yards that separated them from the pair."

In the somewhat hurried retreat which their daring advance necessitated Captain D'Arcy most gallantly risked his life in trying to save a dismounted trooper. Though he failed the action was recognised as well deserving the Victoria Cross, and the attempt resulted in a painful contusion to the gallant captain.

In the famous advance on Ulundi the Colonial Horse were stationed on the front and flanks, and had plenty of opportunity of again proving their value, fighting their way repeatedly through surrounding swarms of the enemy, and being the first to enter the captured kraal.

The account given by Tomasson of the part played in this important movement by the Irregular Horse deserves quoting. "Very pretty the square seemed, lying there so motionless and still in the morning sun. How soon is the change to be made, and the whole face of it flash and grow pale with the volleys and smoke. Already the Artillery are at it hard, and the shells scream over our heads as we ride for the square.

"Within, all is busy and stern. The artillerymen are standing to their guns, the infantry ready, and the cavalry standing by their horses. Down comes the advancing rush of Zulus, and now the musketry fire opens, and the leaden hail sweeps the ground. By Jove, how can any living thing stand before that awful fire? Overhead the bullets are screaming hoarsely, each with a different note; the sharper ring of the Martini plainly to be told from the duller sound of the Snider. The rough cast bullets of the Enfields and long Elephant guns sing a regular pæan, while the potlegs and wire literally howl in their course. If we are to be hit to-day, let it be with a rifle ball if possible. The unmistakable thud of bullets as they strike horse or man is now often

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

heard. Horses spring up into the air as they are struck, sometimes crying in their agony."

When at last the battle was practically won, the Irregulars were again called into action. "All the mounted men out," was the order, and in a twinkling they were off and away. "The enemy halt a second, waver, and fly—the battle of Ulundi is over, and the pursuit begins.

"Up into the saddle without a moment's delay, gather up the reins, and pass quickly through the infantry, who have done their work so well; ours is now about to begin. They give us a cheer as they wipe the perspiration that runs down their sunburnt cheeks. The Lancers, who are ahead of us, have already settled down to their work, and are riding hard, with levelled lances, on the fast-retreating foe. We swing round to the right in the direction of the hills, and lose sight of them for the time being.

"Soon we begin to come up with them, and the rifles once more begin to play out. Most of the Zulus on being overtaken turn round and fire, using their assegais immediately afterwards. Our men use their carbines pistol-wise. One has to be careful and ride with a tight rein, as every moment you pass over a body. Some living men are there too, stretched out and hiding in the long grass; they are crouched down and trusting to escape afterwards. We follow up the enemy till they reach the hills, where on the slopes they rally once more, the small bands get together, and turn. A lively little bit of musketry fire takes place, which ends in the enemy retreating again, this time right to the top of the steep hill, up which it would be well nigh impossible to get."

As is well known, the Zulus were experts in savage cunning and trickery. When the Colonial Cavalry were returning to the square, they passed a Zulu, lying to all appearance dead, and beside him two magnificent assegais and a gun. On the principle of the "spoils to the victors," Captain Baker proposed to appropriate these, and turning to a trooper bade him "Jump down and get those for me." The moment a hand was laid on the assegais, the Zulu sprang up, seized his gun, and fired, fortunately missing his mark, though he killed Lieutenant Addie's horse.

With Ulundi the most important phase of the Zulu War may be said to have terminated, and many of the Volunteers who had fought so well were disbanded.

When the columns under Clarke and Russell were formed for the final subjugation of the country, the 1st Natal Horse (De Burgh) and two troops of Lonsdale's Horse (Lumley) were assigned to the former; while another troop of Lonsdale's, the Frontier Light Horse (D'Arcy), the Transvaal Rangers (Raaf), and the Natal Mounted Police

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

(Mansell) were with Russell. Pietermaritzburg had its own force, of which the principal corps were the Carabineers, the Rifles, and the City Guard. The subsequent operations against Sekukuni, in which the Mounted Rifles, the Border Horse, Fereira's Horse, and other Volunteers played an important part, and in which Carrington added to the sheaf of honours he had already reaped, have been before glanced at, and we can only notice here that amongst the casualties which we had to deplore before the opposition was crushed were the deaths of Captain Macauley of the Transvaal Mounted Rifles, Captain MacCorbie of Baker's Horse, and Captain Beeton of the Native Contingent.

We now pass in our rapid survey of the history of the Colonial forces to the Transvaal War, in which our opponents were no longer natives but Europeans. Into the causes which led to that war it is not our province to enter, but it is necessary to record as an historical fact, the active and abiding influence of the intensely bitter feelings which, alike in its inception, its conduct, and its termination, it evoked. It is doubtless possible in chronicling the occurrences of that time to say, in all honesty, of the statesmen responsible, that—

> "They are wise and honourable,
> And will, no doubt, with reasons answer us;"

but the hideous fact remains that upon none of the crimsoned battle-fields, which occupy so large a share in the panorama of our history, does the memory rest with shame, save upon those dismal fields, from the reeking soil of which rises, mocking and defiant, the fatal hill of Majuba. It is impossible to read any account, however prosaic and passionless, of the episodes of that war without being convinced that, rightly or wrongly, our Colonial fellow-subjects, and a vast majority of ourselves, felt that the foes who heaped disgrace and contumely upon the British flag were powers in high places, even those of our own household.

It was at once obvious that volunteering for a war with the Boers was a somewhat different matter from volunteering for one with the natives. Sir Owen Lanyon remarked upon "the difficulty which the Government would experience in obtaining support from the loyal inhabitants," and added his conviction that "little can be expected from them in this direction," and that "owing to the circumstances in which this province was annexed, and the fact that all the people are mixed up with and dependent on the Boers, in trade and other pursuits, it is impossible that the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Government can rely upon them for that material assistance which might be expected in other places." "Praiseworthy efforts were, however, made by some of the leading inhabitants to raise corps of Volunteers, which formed the nuclei of what, later on, became known as the Pretoria Carabineers, Nourse's Horse, the Pretoria Rifles, and the Volunteer Artillery. From 150 to 200 men were thus enrolled, a portion of whom under drill instructors furnished by the garrison, or some few of themselves who had already gone through their novitiate in arms, might be seen each evening, during the fortnight preceding hostilities, intent on qualifying themselves to take their part in the coming tug of war." The following account from a trustworthy authority will give an idea of the constitution of these forces:—

The Pretoria Carabineers and Nourse's Horse—the former consisting of about one hundred and the latter of sixty horses, reduced as time went on, and the ravages of war and disease had had their effect—were most useful corps. They took the lead in all the attacks, and by their efficient daily scouting and patrolling for miles around, afforded security to the town, and gained grazing space for the cattle. Their casualties were more numerous and serious in consequence, in proportion to numbers, than other bodies—about fifteen per cent. Three commanders of the Carabineers—D'Arcy, Anderson, and Sanctuary—were successively placed *hors de combat*.

Captain Nourse raised the corps bearing his name; but falling sick early in the investment, he was succeeded in the command by Captain Sampson, who was wounded at the attack on Zwart Kopje.

The Transvaal Artillery—about a score of men, under the command of Lieutenant F. Stiemens, first clerk to the Colonial Secretary—worked a gun placed in the south-east bastion of the Jail Laager, and occasionally did service with the cattle-guards, &c.

The Pretoria Rifles numbered about 400 men. The additional material did not seem at first very promising, but by dint of a few weeks' incessant drill, sharp discipline, and rifle practice under its energetic commander—Major Le Mesurier, assisted by his adjutant, Lieutenant Cleoté, a barrister-at-law, and the company's officers—the corps soon presented a respectable appearance, and took its share of hard work. The defence of the Convent Redoubt and the Jail Laager was confided to it and the Transvaal Artillery.

In addition to these the townspeople at Standerton raised thirteen mounted and twenty-one foot volunteers for the defence of the town. These men were armed by Captain Froom, and formed the nucleus of a body of Volunteers—afterwards numbering seventy-five men—which performed excellent service.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

At Wakkerstroom Captain Saunders offered to furnish thirty soldiers for the defence of the town, provided a similar number of Volunteers would join them. More than that number having given in their names, a picket of an officer and thirty-three men were sent to occupy the Court-House, which was then placed in a state of defence.

Five shillings a day was fixed as the rate of pay for each Volunteer private, in addition to rations, which latter, however, were given free to all civilians, women and children included. Those employed as artisans in skilled labour—saddlers, blacksmiths, carpenters, bricklayers, &c.—received some further small allowances.

It was doubted at first by many that the Boers really meant fighting. The whole thing seemed so preposterous; from the British point of view it seemed inconceivable that Europeans, who owed to us their salvation from the vengeful fury of the natives, should take this opportunity to repudiate, *vi et armis*, an annexation which was undoubtedly ardently desired by many of them. But on the 18th December the news became known in Pretoria that the Republic had been proclaimed. A graphic account of the arrival of the startling intelligence is given by Mr. Duval. "The next day, 18th December, the last mail-cart arrived; the post-bags were seized by the Boers at Heidelberg, but the passengers, an Irishman named Clarke and his two daughters, intending settlers in the Transvaal, were allowed to go through unmolested. One of these young girls, with great readiness and courage, had managed to secrete the dispatches for the Administrator in the bosom of her dress, and thus carried them safely to Pretoria, though her modesty suggested their being transferred to her hat before her arrival at Government House; and when the facts of how the last Governmental dispatches were brought to the Transvaal capital come to be known, perhaps Miss Clarke will receive the meed of praise her fidelity and bravery deserve. The story of these travellers was simple. Heidelberg was occupied by the Boers in force, was being fortified, the Republic was declared; but it awakened the people of Pretoria to the gravity of the situation, and horse and foot Volunteers began to enrol with some semblance of organization and system. Defensive works progressed, stores were converted into temporary fortifications, loopholed and barricaded, private houses and public offices shared the same fate, and an earthwork was rapidly projected around the old Dutch church, in the centre of the market square."

Two days later came the attack on the 94th under the brave Anstruther, the details of which have been given in the account of that regiment; before long an attack was

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

made on Potchefstroom, in which Major Clarke and Commandant Raaf were taken, and a strong force invested Pretoria, forcing the garrison to occupy the fort.

"The fighting strength of the garrison," writes Nixon, "consisted of four companies of the 2-21st regiment, known as the Royal Scots Fusiliers, one company of the 94th, a few artillerymen, and a few mounted infantry. The mounted Volunteers comprised the Pretoria Carabineers, or D'Arcy's Horse, as they were called after their leader, Commandant D'Arcy; a body of mounted infantry about 130 strong, and a second body of mounted infantry under the command of Captain Nourse, known as Nourse's Horse, numbering about 70. The mounted infantry volunteers formed the pick of our defenders, and represented the best of the youth of Pretoria. They behaved pluckily throughout the war; the Pretoria Carabineers, in particular, lost one in four of their number, either killed or wounded, during the war. The Volunteers were clothed in neutral-coloured suits, with a bandolier full of cartridges over the shoulder, and each man carried a rifle." It is proverbial that onlookers see most of what goes on, be it in love, sport, or war, and to one of these we are indebted for an account of the steps that were taken to supplement the military strength. It is, moreover, valuable as throwing a light on the characteristics of one of the most popular of the Colonial corps. "The nucleus of a few troops and companies was soon formed; a mounted corps, 'The Pretoria Carabineers,' of whom I shall often subsequently have to speak, being raised under the leadership of Mr. R. H. K. D'Arcy, a former magistrate of Kimberley, and a jolly good fellow withal. The possession of something to ride was a necessity to enable volunteers to join 'D'Arcy's Horse.'" Later on he remarks that, despite the difficulties which existed, D'Arcy's Horse paraded some forty or fifty strong, and executed a little skirmishing drill and other simple evolutions to the evident satisfaction of Sir Owen Lanyon, the Administrator, Colonel Bellairs, C.B., and Lieutenant-Colonel Gildea, of the Royal Scots Fusiliers. "There were also about 450 infantry Volunteers, divided into five companies, under the command of Major Le Mesurier, R.E. Altogether, the total number of troops, including the staff, the band of the 2-21st, and the commissariat and ordnance, must have been about a thousand. The civilians in the camp and at the Convent Laager, not actually in military service, numbered about 4,000."

And so, drearily and anxiously, Christmas drew on. Defences were erected and strengthened, supplies and rations estimated and apportioned. All devices that cheery courage and good soldiership could suggest were adopted to lighten the burden of

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

anxious monotony. Without were an implacable foe, to whom rumour had already ascribed treachery and cruelty; within were regulars and volunteers, working hard to perfect themselves before the time of actual hand-to-hand conflict should come.

"Christmas! our women all anxiously dreading;
Christmas! our men with arms in their hands;
Christmas! our children now curiously treading
The 'laager' constructed by soldierly bands;
Christmas! awaiting the call to the battle;
Christmas! bedraggled and dabbled in mud;
Christmas! enlivened by musketry's rattle;
Christmas! all stained by our countrymen's blood."

So wrote the journalist of the beleaguered garrison, and the description owes scarcely anything to poetic licence.

On the 28th December the first skirmish took place. On the morning of that day, a mounted patrol of 50 men having been sent, under Lieutenant O'Grady of the 94th regiment, with whom was Lieutenant Williams of the Carabineers, to reconnoitre the country from the east to the south side, met with the enemy in force, and had a brisk skirmish near the Six Mile Spruit, on the Heidelberg road. An advanced party of the Volunteers, under Captain Sampson of Nourse's Horse, becoming aware of the vicinity of a large body, estimated at from 300 to 400 men, quickly retired, but were pursued by 50 Boers, supported by 100 more. When about five hundred yards from the Spruit, the Boers dismounted and fired with effect, wounding two men and some horses. The party then halted, returned the fire, and, taking their wounded with them, continued to retire on their support, which had taken up a strong position on a rocky hill offering good cover, their flank being at the time threatened by another party of Boers. From thence their fire checked the further advance of the Boers, and caused them eventually to fall back.

The following day in another skirmish Captain D'Arcy and three other Volunteers were wounded. On the 6th January the Carabineers were again in action, taking part in the Zwart Kopije affair. They were commanded by Captain Sanctuary, poor D'Arcy, the Commandant, having had to relinquish the command through his wound. "Nourse's Horse, under Captain A. W. Sampson, a fine young Colonial, who had previously held an important Government appointment, and who now commanded the 'blue Puggarees,'* in place of Nourse, who was invalided;" there were also the 94th

* Owing to a mistake on one occasion, which might have proved a serious one, "the Carabineers and Nourse's Horse thenceforth carried red and blue flags respectively to denote their whereabouts in the field."

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Mounted Infantry, under Lieutenant O'Grady, a couple of companies of the Royal Scots Fusiliers, about eighty men of the Pretoria Rifles (Foot Volunteers). The Boers on this occasion adopted their favourite expedient of hoisting a white flag. "Colonel Gildea immediately ordered the 'cease firing' to sound. The regulars sprang to their feet, but the Infantry Volunteers who accompanied the troops, being more acquainted with Boer tactics, remained quiet. Colonel Gildea himself advanced within two hundred yards of the Kopije, and sent a corporal with a flag of truce to speak to the enemy. When the latter got within about sixty feet of the Kopije, the Boers treacherously opened fire on the flag of truce." An advance was ordered, and the Volunteers rushed forward and took the house at the bayonet's point. Five of our men were killed, and fourteen wounded. "There can be no doubt," states Nixon, "that the firing on the flag of truce was intentional." The quasi-official account, so far as it bears on the Volunteers, is as follows:—"The Carabineers were sent ahead to occupy some small hills behind the Zwart Kopije, with orders to remain quiet and intercept the enemy. Unfortunately the Boers got wind of their movements, probably through some treachery in our camp. The 'A' troop of the Carabineers, who occupied a hill within a short distance of the farmhouse, were severely handled. Two were shot dead, and two wounded, and it would have gone hard with them but for the arrival of the main column. One of the Volunteers described the fire of the Boers to me as a great deal too close to be pleasant. He and his comrades lay behind some rocks, and the moment they showed any part of their bodies bullets fell all around. Before the column arrived, the Boers were coming in from other laagers in the neighbourhood, and the 'B' troop, which were at some distance, were unable to support their comrades for fear of being outflanked. For a few minutes after the column came up, the Carabineers were exposed to a new peril. The artillery mistook them for Boers and fired two shells at them, both of which, happily, missed their mark. It was while one of the troopers was signalling to stop this shooting that he was killed. When the main body arrived, the Kopije was shelled, several of the shells hitting the rocks and bursting among the Boers. The infantry were extended in a sort of half moon, and steadily advanced towards the Kopije. A white flag was thereupon hoisted by the enemy. . . . Indignant at the infamous conduct of the enemy (in firing on the flag of truce) Colonel Gildea rode back to the troops and ordered a general advance. Some of the regulars were killed, but the remainder and the infantry volunteers advanced steadily. A charge was ordered, and the volunteers rushed forward and took the house at the point of the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

bayonet. The regulars, meantime, arrived at the foot of the hill, and both parties were preparing for the final rush when another white flag was hoisted. This time no attempt was made to fire on the troops, and all the Boers left on the Kopije surrendered." (Nixon).

In the attack that was made on Pretorius Laager Nourse's men particularly distinguished themselves under Lieutenant Glyn. This was altogether a very brilliant affair, and the order, necessary though it was, "to retire," was by no means a welcome one, especially to Nourse's Horse, whose successful opposition to the Boers marked them out as special targets during the retreat. Mr. Du Val in his bright and graphic account of the many skirmishes which took place round Pretoria gives in more detailed form the episodes of the day. "At three o'clock in the morning Lieutenant Glynn roused me, and saddling up an old 'salted' horse of the colour called 'flea-bitten,' which, in lieu of my still invalided brute I had borrowed from Nourse's picquet lines, I repaired to the Commandant's quarters and Garrison Square, to find the latter full of waggons, mule teams, infantry, mounted and otherwise, transport officers high in oath and loud in voice, Carabineers and Nourse's Horse assembling, guns limbered up, artillerymen bustling around, and all the men provided with full water bottles and ration bags, it being conceded that the British soldier fights better on a good honest meal than on an empty stomach.

"Just as the sun was wakening up and giving his first yawn, the Carabineers, under Captain Sanctuary, dashed out of the camp in a westerly direction, while the column, waggons, artillery, foot soldiers, and volunteers, headed off the other way, through the town of Pretoria, on the farther side of which the noise of a series of explosions resounded on the morning air. This movement and the explosions, which were the result of some dynamite experiments of the engineers, were ruses to draw the Boers from the laagers at the north, south, and east of Pretoria to the opposite side of our projected point of attack; and they partially succeeded, we afterwards learned. Colonel Gildea, with his usual escort, dashed out over the 'Veld' in the rear of the Carabineers, who were scouting the country to the left, whilst Nourse's Horse did similar duty to the right. We were now quite seven miles from the camp; and while reconnoitring the neighbourhood, an orderly from Nourse's Horse galloped up with a report to Colonel Gildea that they had discovered a number of the enemy occupying a strong position on the slope of Elandsfontein Ridge.

"The foot volunteers took up a strong position on a rough, rocky Kopije, the waggons were laagered near at hand, the mules driven inside, and a seven-pounder gun, worked

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

by the bandsmen of the Scots Fusiliers, placed in position in front. Sanctuary and his Carabineers seized an eminence which faced and commanded a defile known as 'Quagga's Poort,' and a neck on the mountain chain above it; while Nourse's Horse, with young Glynn, moved down to the right of the ridge over Elandsfontein, and about three-quarters of a mile from its spur, ascending its height to a point where a considerable bulge, or rise, gave them a good commanding position, and one of their blue flags was fairly planted as a token that there they were and there they would remain, as a great French marshal said on a celebrated occasion.

"They had not advanced many yards when the first shots of the engagement were fired, the Boers on the ridge giving the 'blue Puggarees' to understand that their advance was not to be a mere promenade. In a moment they were fairly at it, and with puffs of smoke and the rattle of rifles the scene became quite animated; Nourse's men, who were easily distinguishable by their white ration bags and belts, working cautiously along, taking cover at every step, and making the most of each projection or piece of stone that offered the smallest shelter, from behind which they kept up a spirited fire on the Boers.

"It was about eight o'clock when the preliminary shell was discharged, and during the next twenty minutes the artillery practised away without much effect, except that of keeping the attention of the defenders of the kraals and schanzes while Nourse's men were advancing from left to right, skirmishing admirably, and pushing the Boers along the ridge foot by foot, and gradually carrying about two-thirds of its length.

"At ten o'clock the artillery had suspended their efforts, rendering all the bolder the occupants of the end of the ridge, to which point they had been driven by the attack of Nourse's handful of 'blue Puggarees,' who, distinctly visible, could be seen cracking away; a prominent figure being Glynn standing upon the near side of the brow firing down into the laager in the kloof below.

"Nourse's men were now within a couple of hundred yards of the kraals and laager, when our attention was attracted to a nek in the southern mountain chain, near the Quagga's Poort, far off to our left rear, over which a large body of mounted Boers three hundred or so, were descending in Indian file, the noses and tails of their horses touching each other, looking like a great serpent unwinding its folds as they slowly moved down the slope and deployed in the valley beneath. Rather unfortunately, some little time before this new addition to the combatants put in an appearance, the Carabineers, with the exception of a picquet, had been ordered to the support of the Mounted Infantry,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

who, extended to the left front, were rather warmly engaged, and this withdrawal opened the gates to the succouring force from the southern laagers of the enemy, the number of Carabineers left to hold the nek being inadequate, and outnumbered by the Boers by probably twenty to one. It is needless to say that when the Carabineers were sent to support the Mounted Infantry no sign or intelligence had been received of the advancing Boers. Colonel Gildea not over cheerfully ordered the attacking party to retire to the ground occupied by the supports and artillery."

It was on this occasion that Trooper Danagher gained his Victoria Cross. In company with Corporal Murray of the 94th he advanced fully 500 yards in front of our fighting line, exposed all the time to heavy fire, to rescue two wounded comrades. When they reached them, one was found dead; the other was taken up by the two gallant fellows and borne towards our line. "A too well directed shot struck the corporal in the back, and he fell alongside the comrade for whom he had risked and, as we then thought, forfeited, his life. Danagher turned and fired a few shots over his prostrate companions, and then gathering up their rifles as well as his own, marched coolly back to receive the praise of all who witnessed his plucky adventure."

On the 12th of the next month a somewhat more serious encounter took place, in which Colonel Gildea was wounded, and several of the Carabineers killed. The column sent out on this occasion consisted of the two field-guns, R.A., a small detachment of the Royal Engineers for explosive purposes, two companies of the Royal Scots Fusiliers, and two troops of the Pretoria Carabineers and Nourse's Horse, with a Krupp 4-pounder gun, two companies of the Pretoria Rifles, and a few mounted infantry to occupy reserve positions on the road. They moved off soon after 2 A.M., advancing under cover of night. The Carabineers, under Captain Sanctuary, acting as advance-guard, pushed forward to the hill beyond the Six Mile Spruit. The Pretoria Rifles, under Major Le Mesurier, R.E., with the Krupp gun, were left on a hill to the left of the road overlooking the Spruit, with an advanced party to hold the houses at the Drift; while Lieutenant Collings, with a detachment of Mounted Fusiliers, occupied a hill on the right of the road, commanding the Spruit and some dense bush on the opposite bank.

Owing to the tactics of the Boers a retreat became inevitable, during which considerable loss was sustained.

Amongst the wounded was Captain Sanctuary. One who was present wrote:

"I rode down there, and saw poor Sanctuary lying on the ground. Every inch a soldier, his reply to my query as to whether he was badly hit, was: 'Only my leg

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

broken.' And I afterwards learned that he had tied a ramrod to his fractured limb to enable him to stump out of action, saying as he did so: 'It is more gentlemanly to walk out than to be carried.' "

Unfortunately, the ambulance was captured, the Boers having fired on it despite the Geneva flag, and the gallant captain succumbed to his wounds. It is stated that some feeling was excited amongst the Volunteers on this occasion which led to rather acrimonious disputes, owing to the impression that they had not been duly supported by the other troops.

Practically this encounter, known as the "Red House" affair, was the last of any consequence at Pretoria during the war. The defence was undoubtedly a matter of congratulation considering the difficulties with which we had to contend. In his short history of the war, Grant comes to the conclusion that "in every respect, about Pretoria Colonel Gildea with his regulars and volunteers seemed to have completely established an ascendency over the enemy, who, it was asserted, repeatedly raised the white flag and fired under it."

On the scene which ensued when the nature of the "peace" became known to the men who had fought so bravely on behalf of the British honour which they had trusted, we will not dwell. To quote the words of one who was present, "the recollections it stirs up are more bitterly mortifying than words can describe."

But it was not only round Pretoria that the Colonial Forces were engaged. The capture of Commandant Raaf, which has been before mentioned, may be considered as more immediately connected with the siege of Potchefstroom and will be more fully referred to. Standerton was besieged, and stood a siege of between eighty and ninety days, in which the Volunteers raised and organized by Major Montague did admirable service. On the occasion of the first skirmish, which took place on the 28th December, a Volunteer, named Hall, lost his life in gallantly warning some of the Mounted Rifles that they were in danger of being cut off. "He achieved his purpose but lost his life. His horse was shot under him. He took shelter behind the carcase and fired at the Boers, holding an unequal fight till a shot killed him. His body was found after the war was over, and was buried with military honours." When at last the siege was over, the Volunteers had to mourn the loss of three of their number killed—the total death list was five—and some wounded. As illustrative of the enthusiasm and *esprit de corps* which the gallant officer succeeded in infusing into his dashing Volunteers, we may refer to the farewell address which they presented to him on his departure from the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Colony. It is scarcely, however, gratifying to dwell too long on the last paragraph, though it is, alas, only too representative of the sentiments universally held. The letter of farewell was as follows :—

"DEAR SIR,

Before leaving the scene of your past labours, we—a remnant of your old Volunteers—are desirous of presenting you with a token of our esteem, and beg your acceptance of the accompanying. It will tend to refresh the memory of the siege of Standerton and events in connection therewith. It is with sad hearts that we look upon your departure and that of the gallant men—our old comrades during the siege. We shall never forget you and the gallant 94th. Sharing dangers forms a bond of brotherhood; that bond is now rudely severed, and we must now say 'Farewell.' Although forsaken and ignored by our country, our hearts will ever warm at the sight of the national uniform, and we all wish the gallant soldiers 'God speed.'"

Lydenburg, Rustenburg, Marabastad, and Wakkerstroom had in their turn to stand the attack of the enemy. It will be remembered that it was while the 94th Regiment was *en route* from Lydenburg to Pretoria that the terrible disaster of Bronker's Spruit took place. The garrison of Potchefstroom consisted of some 213 men who had been despatched there on the outbreak of hostilities, and the actual fighting round the fort commenced on the 16th December. Two days afterwards occurred the fighting which resulted in the capture of Commandant Raaf and two parties of Volunteers who were defending some out-buildings. The following account, describing the usual treatment of Volunteers by the Boers, is interesting as showing that in one sense their position was one of greater danger than that of the regulars. "Commandant Raaf was handcuffed and kept in a damp room with an earthen floor without any bedding or furniture, and without any regard for the ordinary decencies of life. . . . His 'courteous' Boer guards did their best to aggravate his illness by threatening to shoot him from time to time, and by jeering at and taunting him. His Volunteers were also handcuffed and ill-treated. A number of them were brought up before the council of war on a charge of high treason, and after a mock trial, sentenced to various terms of imprisonment with hard labour. They were forced to work in the trenches under fire from our fort, and one of them, William Findlay, was blown to pieces by a shell whilst so engaged. The others thereupon

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

declined to work again, but the Boers compelled them to do so by striking them with the butt-ends of their guns, and by threats of shooting them." Another Volunteer, named Van der Linden, was actually shot as a spy for supplying information before the war had commenced, another colonial, Doctor Woite, being murdered on similar grounds. Seldom does the record of any siege show greater sufferings or more splendid endurance than does that of Potchefstroom. There were women and children who had to be protected, and whose shelter was first a wretched shed some nine feet square, and afterwards a hole in the ground covered by a waggon-sail, which became so riddled with bullets as freely to admit the constant rain. Only one lady, however—Mrs. Sketchley, the wife of the doctor—died. During the truce that was arranged to allow of her interment, the Boers commenced firing before the agreed time had expired. Previously, when the Government offices were surrendered, a truce had been obtained to allow of the retirement. On this occasion, also, did the Boers recommence firing before the stipulated time, and while the white flag was still flying. A very gallant sortie was made on the 23rd of March by Lieutenant Dalrymple Hay, who at the head of ten or eleven men, drove from a position they had seized a party of at least thirty Boers, killing some and taking four prisoners. But starvation was becoming hourly imminent, and the gallant garrison were forced to surrender through a final and characteristic act of treachery on the part of their foes.

Nine Volunteers joined the heroic little garrison of Lydenburg under Lieutenant Long, and one of them shared with Private Whelan of the 94th the gallant and humane task of bringing in from the open the dying Sergeant Cowdy.

At Rustenburg the half-dozen Volunteers under Daniel did good service; at Marabastad there were thirty Volunteers, and, as will be remembered, the garrison were able to defy the Boers till the cessation of hostilities. At Wakkerstroom the civilians to a man were on our side, as was a compact body of Kaffirs. The Volunteers suffered no loss in the numerous small skirmishes which characterised the investment.

So practically ended—save for the wild storm of indignation and disgust which followed—the Transvaal War.* Most of the Volunteer corps were disbanded, the present organization in many cases dating from a few years later. The actual official dates of the various Volunteer Corps are as under, and it may be assumed that such

* As a commentary upon the "peaceful" feelings of the Boers now that they had regained their "rights," may be instanced the fact recorded by Nixon that Captain D'Arcy of the Carabineers was eight times fired upon after formal hostilities had ceased.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

regiments as were in existence during the Zulu and Transvaal wars were, except where mention is made to the contrary, engaged in garrison duty:

Prince Alfred's Own Volunteer Artillery date from August, 1857, the Cape Town Engineers from July, 1879, the Duke of Edinburgh's Own Volunteer Rifles from April, 1878, the Cape Town Highlanders from the 24th April, 1885, the Cape Town Irish Volunteer Rifles from the 30th April, 1885, the Paarl Volunteer Rifles from the 29th of the same month, the Worcester Volunteer Rifles from May, 1885, the Wellington Volunteer Rifles from September, 1885, the Victoria College Volunteer Rifles (formerly the Stellenbosch Cadet Corps) from January, 1888, and the South African College Cadet Corps from January, 1876.

Of the Midland District Regiments, the Diamond Field Horse date from July, 1887, the Graham's Town Volunteer Horse Artillery from May, 1877, the Prince Alfred's Volunteer Guard from December, 1874, the 1st City (Graham's Town) Volunteers from November, 1885, the Highlands Mounted Company of the 1st City from September, 1885, the Knysna Rangers from June, 1885, the Kimberley (Victoria) Rifles from June, 1887, the St. Andrew's College Cadets from October, 1877, and the Graham's Town Public School Cadets from July, 1879. Of the Frontier District Regiments, the King William's Town Volunteer Artillery date from July, 1877, the Kaffrarian Mounted Rifles from May, 1883, the Frontier Mounted Rifles from March, 1886, the East London Rifles from December, 1883, the Queen's Town Rifles from January, 1883, the Queen's Town High School Cadets from October, 1877, the Panmure Public School Cadets from June, 1885, and the King William's Town Cadets from August, 1880.

To the Natal Forces we have before referred; but, as connected with the more recent development of local defence, and as introducing to notice corps which at one time were familiar to all colonists, and to most home-dwelling Englishmen, we propose to sketch shortly the history of the BECHUANALAND BORDER POLICE.

In the short reference that was made above to another regiment, stress was laid on the fact that, given a good leader, the regiment itself is bound to be proportionately excellent. Judged by this criterion, the Bechuanaland Border Police might well adopt as their motto the familiar "Nulli Secundus." For the search would have to be exhaustive and critical indeed that should show any regiment whose chief's record could beat that of Sir Frederick Carrington. Entering the army with a commission in the grand old South Wales Borderers in 1864, he is found eleven years later organizing the Mounted Infantry in the Diamond Fields Expedition, then, in 1877, raising Carrington's

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Horse (the first to bear that familiar and honourable name); then, as we have seen, organizing the Frontier Light Horse, and fighting in the many engagements which occupied our troops till the capture of Sekukuni's fortress. In 1880 and 1881 he commanded the Cape Mounted Rifles, and the foregoing pages bear record to his gallantry and skill.

But the Bechuanaland Border Police, as now constituted, boasts other parentage, scarcely less distinguished. In its composition it includes men who had served in Methuen's Horse, in Carrington's Horse, and in Gough's Horse in the Bechuanaland Expedition of 1884-85.

The name of this expedition is frequently on men's tongues, but the nature of it and the causes which led to it are very unfamiliar. Inasmuch, however, as the workings of local sentiment must be ultimately connected with and causative of the character of a volunteer force, to a great extent locally organized and supplied, it may be well to describe briefly the position of affairs which led to the despatch of the expedition. Discontent, which had been fomented by the disturbances in the territories of Kaffirland and Griqualand, showed in 1878 symptoms of culminating. The natives seemed disposed to proceed to hostilities round the station at Kuruman, and steps were taken at Kimberley to relieve Kuruman and oppose a strong force to the possible attack. Commandant Ford, with some volunteers from Griqualand West and the Barkly West District, marched accordingly, but met with a reverse at a place called Ko, in which Ford and four others were wounded, and four men killed. Sir Charles Warren and Sir W. Owen Lanyon arrived shortly after with a larger force, which included the Diamond Fields Horse before mentioned, and somewhat severe engagements took place at Gamoperi and Litakong. Afterwards, under Colonel Warren, several actions were carried out by the local forces engaged. The occurrences of the next few years belong to the province of political rather than military history, and we will take up the thread of the matter in 1884, when the Imperial Government once more made up its mind to interfere to secure tranquillity and good government. The sentiment which actuated the colonists may be best exemplified by a phrase which occurred in the speech made by the Mayor at a memorable meeting in support of the Imperial intervention at Cape Town. "We intend," he said, "to prove to-night our loyalty to her Majesty the Queen, our loyalty to the flag under which we live, our loyalty to ourselves, and to the constitution under which we are governed."

When the expedition was finally decided on, it was determined that three regiments

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

of Volunteers should be enlisted, and a competent authority gives the following account of the composition of these three regiments:

"Sir Charles Warren had entrusted the selection of the men to be enlisted for the regiment of English Volunteers to Captain J. W. Harrel, late 2nd (Queen's) Regiment, who had also previously served in South Africa, both in Zululand and in Bechuanaland. There were very great difficulties connected with this enlistment, but these were most successfully encountered by Captain Harrel as representing Sir Charles Warren, assisted by Colonel the Hon. P. Methuen, C.B., who also personally inspected and approved of each man, and afterwards commanded the regiment. Its name was the 1st Regiment of Mounted Rifles, but it was more frequently called Methuen's Horse. Six hundred men were selected out of immense numbers who crowded Captain Harrel's office in Leicester Square, London, every day. The work of restoring order in South Africa had evidently stirred the mind of the English people; and several good regiments could have been enrolled instead of one. Owing to some legal difficulty, the enlistment could not be ratified till the men reached Cape Town, and in the meantime they secured their passage free to the Cape. To the honour of the men, and the credit of Colonel Methuen, now in command, as well as of Captain Harrel, who selected them, only one man took advantage of this difficulty, and refused to enrol in Cape Town, and in his case it was only a temporary whim, for he was afterwards found in Bechuanaland enlisted in another regiment. Captain Harrel commenced inspecting Volunteers in London on 14th November, and the regiment of 600 men was in camp north of the Orange River, 570 miles from Capetown, before the end of the year.

"A regiment of Mounted Rifles was raised, by direction of Sir Charles Warren, by Colonel F. Carrington, C.M.G., from the Cape Colony, excluding Griqualand West. This regiment was composed of colonists of all races selected from a large number of applicants. The men were previously examined in riding and shooting. The 2nd Mounted Rifles—or Carrington's Horse, as it was usually called—was a fine body of men, fully acquainted with all the ways of the country. The whole regiment was enlisted at different centres in the Colony, and concentrated to Barkly West on the Vaal River, fully equipped, in the space of six weeks.

"The 3rd Mounted Rifles, or Gough's Horse, was recruited at the Diamond Fields by Colonel H. S. Gough, and consisted largely of an excellent stamp of men who, living in Kimberley and feeling the effects of the anarchy in the neighbouring country of Bechuanaland, were anxious personally to assist in the re-establishment of peace and

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

order so necessary to the prosperity of the Colony. Many of the officers and men had formerly served under Sir Charles Warren."

There were in addition Colonel Knox's regiment of pioneers and a regiment of natives under Captain Kempster. Foremost amongst the colonists who vied with each other to welcome Sir Charles Warren and his expeditionary force were the inhabitants of Kimberley and Griqualand West, whose volunteers had done such good service in the recent Kaffir war. From the authority before quoted we gather the following details as to the uniform and equipment of the newly-raised force.

"The clothing of the Bechuanaland Field Force—regulars and volunteers, officers and men—was made of brown or yellow corduroy, and consisted of tunic and pantaloons, with 'putties' of blue stuff supporting the lower part of the leg, and keeping out the dust. The only men not in cords were the Native Guides, who had been favoured with the old red coats formerly worn by the English infantry, no doubt because they were most easily obtained. Some of the regiments wore helmets, but the Volunteers, officers and men, wide-awake felt hats to match the grey cords—not the handsomest, but the most serviceable and most comfortable head-covering for South Africa. The Guides wore Scotch bonnets. It was a special arrangement in the Bechuanaland Force that all officers and men should carry rifles, artillery officers and men included. The advantages of the uniform selected were considerable. The men were often marching through country exactly the colour of their clothing, so that when stretched on the ground at any distance they could not be distinguished. It did not soon get torn by thorn-bushes, did not soon look dirty, and was easily washed. The only complaint heard about the cords were their strong smells when first unpacked and distributed. After a good washing, this, of course, disappeared. There can be no doubt that even in this matter of the choice of clothing an impression was produced in South Africa. Officers and men dressed alike in the cords so much worn by the Boers themselves — every man a rifleman — routine and red tape had evidently been put aside on this occasion; the force had the appearance of meaning 'business.'"

Space will not allow of our following out the various transactions—more diplomatic than military—which characterized the completion of the Bechuanaland Expedition, nor is this the place to dwell upon the conflicting opinions which were more or less freely expressed as to the wisdom of the steps ultimately taken. Suffice it to say that in the middle of 1885, it was determined to substitute an Armed Police for the Volunteers, who

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

had constituted the Expeditionary Force. But the change was more in name than in fact; as was remarked at the time, "the Imperial Expedition would depart, the Bechuanaland Armed and Mounted Police would remain in their stead. . . . The men, their arms and ammunition, even their uniform, were to be the same." And so terminated the career of the Bechuanaland Volunteers. When the orders for the evacuation of the Colony were carried out they were disbanded, but, as we have said, many re-enrolled in the new organization.

"The new Bechuanaland Police were speedily enrolled under the leadership of Colonel Carrington of the 2nd Mounted Rifles, who was recommended to the High Commissioner by the General Commanding in South Africa, and by Sir Charles Warren.

"The old Bechuanaland Police, under Major Lowe, were disbanded, but any men who chose to enlist under the new conditions were welcome to do so, and nearly all came forward under their commander, Major Lowe, who remained in Bechuanaland."

Since that time nothing has occurred to call for the active service of any of the Volunteers of South Africa. Of the Bechuanaland Police it has been said that their duties have not been onerous, as the Transvaal has respected its western boundary line ever since the arrival of the Bechuanaland Expedition. They would not have done so but for the continued presence of the Imperial Police, hence the necessity for the latter in the country.

Much undoubtedly remains to be written which would be full of interest alike to colonists and those of the mother-country. The management and organization of the various Volunteer regiments, the particular nationality which characterizes individual corps, the more detailed war services of the officers and men, the various artillery and rifle competitions which are held, and the arrangements in vogue for drill and practice —all these might well find a place in a fuller history of a Volunteer force of which the empire may well be proud. Enough, however, has been said, even in this imperfect sketch, to show the worth of these soldiers of the great Colony, whose character and achievements have evoked on all sides praise and admiration, sentiments which find happy expression in the published words of one who himself has played no inconsiderable part in the more recent movements of the Colony. "I see the time come when for loyalty, intelligence, and resource Austral Africa will be held in honour throughout the empire; when, should Imperial need arise, Austral Africans will equal Australasians in physique and in all soldierly qualities—both vying successfully with

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the sons of the colder north, their fellow-subjects in Canada and the Mother Country; while the Bantu regiments from Austral Africa would be unsurpassed by any which could be brought into the field from among the millions of India."*

In considering the military forces of the AUSTRALASIAN COLONIES, we are at once struck by the boundless future possibilities of this enormous "isle of continent." A tendency has shown itself of late years in a certain class of fiction to accept for granted the once seemingly humorous view that the future dominant power of the world will be that vast territory which our fathers knew in its infancy and we ourselves see mighty and vigorous in its adolescence. We have before noted briefly the vast extent of the British Empire. It is not out of place to repeat that in dealing with the military forces of Australasia we are dealing with a force to which—leaving out of sight for the moment the Imperial Army and Navy—is committed the guardianship of an area of three million and seventy-five thousand square miles. To quote from a published authority of great value, this area "is greater than that of continental Europe; excepting Canada, Australia alone is larger than any other territorial division of the British Empire. . . . Victoria is almost equal in area to Turkey and Greece combined, New South Wales is half as large again as France, and the German Empire would not fill a quarter of South Australia."

The very vastness of the subject is prohibitive of anything approaching even a comprehensive view of the military forces, which are held by students of contemporary history to contain the germ of perhaps the foremost army of the future. The several colonies of New South Wales, Victoria, Queensland, South Australia, Western Australia, New Zealand, Tasmania, New Guinea, and Fiji, have more or less organized local military forces of which some may fairly claim to be in the foremost rank. Considering, however, the comparatively few years that have elapsed since the first settlements were made, and bearing in mind that the organization of defensive forces on anything like a regular plan is seldom undertaken till a colony's institutions have advanced fairly forward towards maturity, it will be obvious that few of the regiments whose names appear in the Militia or Volunteer lists can have any history of general interest. But, in pursuance of the plan we have before adopted, the best criterion of the quality and characteristics of the Australasian military forces of to-day will be afforded by recounting what their predecessors have done when occasion has arisen for their services.

* Mackenzie.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Before, however, doing this, we will glance shortly at the present position of the defensive forces of the Colonies in the order we have named them.

In 1854 it was determined to form a Volunteer force for NEW SOUTH WALES, and accordingly one troop of cavalry, one battery of artillery, and five or six companies of infantry were enrolled. The movement, however, languished, and to all intents and purposes came to nothing after two or three years. In 1860, when volunteering was the cry of the hour, another effort was made, this time under better auspices. A troop of mounted rifles was organized, three batteries of artillery, and some twenty companies of infantry. Seven years later a further step towards the improvement of the force was taken by the passing of the enactment providing for compensation by way of land grants to such volunteers as satisfied the stated requirements, a system, however, which was only in force three or four years. In 1871 it was determined to raise some regular troops, the Imperial Forces being withdrawn, and accordingly some artillery and infantry were enrolled. The latter were, however, disbanded after two years, and the former increased from time to time to their present strength. In 1878 the whole of the Volunteer force was established on its present basis. A part of the Volunteers receive a small payment; the remainder, occasionally described as the Reserve, is purely voluntary. The present strength is as follows:

THE REGULAR ARTILLERY.

Volunteers (partially paid)—

The New South Wales Regiment of Volunteer Artillery.

Engineers and Torpedo Corps.

Four Regiments—the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th Regiments of Volunteer Infantry.

Five Cadet Corps of Sydney Grammar School, Newington College, Windsor Grammar School, King's School, Parramatta, and St. Ignatius' College.

RESERVES.

Cavalry—Seven Troops, consisting of the Sydney Lancers, the Illawarra Light Horse, the West Camden Light Horse, the Hunter River Light Horse, the Ulmarra Light Horse, the Upper Clarence Light Horse, and the Grafton Light Horse.

Artillery—Batteries at Balmain, St. Leonards, and Botany.

Infantry—For the Metropolitan and Western Districts, the Fifth Regiment of Infantry (Scottish Rifles), and the Sixth Regiment of Infantry, with the following:—Forbe's Corps, Hunter's Hill, Ashfield, Burwood, New Town, Marrickville, and Dubbo Corps.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

1st BATTALION (WEST MELBOURNE) VICTORIAN INFANTRY.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

For the Southern District, Corps from Braidwood, Albury, Mittagong, Young, Campbelltown, Burrawang, Hay, Moruya, Nowra, Bega, Cooma, Camden, Narrandera, Picton, Joadja Creek, and Queanbeyan.

For the Northern District, the Corps from Murrurundi, Inverell, Tenterfield, Armidale, Gleni Innes, Uralla, Grafton, Quirindi, Narrabri, and Wingham.

The VICTORIA MILITARY strength may be divided into Permanent and Militia, in addition to which there is a very strong contingent of Cadets. Volunteering in Victoria dates as far back as 1854, though the present organization is much more recent. The Melbourne Rifle Regiment was formed in 1854, and two months later the same district equipped a Yeomanry Cavalry corps, while a Rifle corps was about the same time formed at Geelong. The Melbourne Rifle Regiment became, not long after its formation, the Royal Victorian Volunteer Artillery Regiment, and the volunteer establishment remained at the strength of these three corps till 1859. In that year and the following, the all-pervading impulse towards self-defence made itself felt in Victoria as elsewhere, and some four thousand soldiers could be reckoned upon should need arise. Various modifications and improvements, all tending to the developing of the force, were made during the years intervening between 1860 and 1884, when the Volunteer force gave place to the present Militia, all of whom receive a small annual sum by way of payment, or, as the official description denominates it, retaining fee. It will, however, be observed that there is a Permanent force in addition to the Militia. The present Victorian Artillery dates from 1882, and were preceded by a similar force which had been organized in 1870.

The entire force, then, may be thus summarised :—

Permanent.—The Victorian Artillery,* a small Company of Engineers, and a few Mounted Infantry.

Militia :—A Troop of Cavalry,† a Nordenfeldt Battery, a Brigade of Field Artillery, with three Batteries, two Brigades of Garrison Artillery of four Batteries each,* the Corps of Engineers,‡ the Mounted Rifles, and four Battalions of the Victorian Rifles.† In addition to these, there are eleven Battalions of Cadets.

The QUEENSLAND DEFENCE FORCE is divided into Permanent and Volunteers, or to

* The Artillery have a grenade with the motto "Aut pace, aut bello, Victoria," and the badge of the colony.

† The Cavalry and Infantry have the Southern Cross with the same motto.

‡ The Submarine Engineers have a globe surrounded by a laurel wreath on which is the crown. The Field Company have the same badge and motto as the Infantry.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

quote more fully the official description, the divisions may be said to be as follows:—"(1) Permanent Force, who are regularly enlisted as soldiers; (2) Corps of the Defence Force, who are paid while on duty only; (3) Volunteers, armed and clothed by the Government, but receiving no pay; and (4) Rifle Clubs, who receive arms and ammunition from Government slightly under cost price, but no pay."

The Permanent Force consists of:—Two Batteries of Field Artillery, four Troops of Mounted Infantry, five Batteries of Garrison Artillery, and the 1st Queensland or Moreton Regiment of Infantry, the 2nd Queensland or Wide Bay and Burnett Regiment of Infantry, the 3rd Queensland or Kennedy Regiment, and the Infantry Companies of Toowoomba, Dalby, Warwick, and Rockhampton.

The Volunteer Force consists of:—The Queensland Infantry Volunteer Regiment, the Queensland Scottish Volunteer Corps, and the Queensland Irish Volunteer Corps. In addition to these there are six Cadet Corps.

The Military Force of SOUTH AUSTRALIA dates, as at present organized, from 1886, but both the Permanent and Volunteer branches can claim an earlier origin. It would be tedious to go through the various regulations and enactments which from time to time have influenced the military strength of the Colony, and it must content us to note that so early as 1854, statutory power was taken to provide a Defence Force. In 1877 considerable enthusiasm prevailed in the Colony, steps were taken to embody a Permanent Force, while the various local Volunteer Corps became amalgamated into the South Australian Rifle Association. In 1886 the South Australian Militia was duly organized, and the Volunteer Force established as it now exists. Briefly summarised then, the Military Force of South Australia consists of the following:—

Permanent Military Force:—One Battery of Artillery.

Militia Force:—Two Troops of Lancers—the Adelaide Lancers—one Battery Field, one Battery Artillery, Garrison Artillery, and the Regiment of Adelaide Rifles.

The Volunteer Force:—Eleven Companies of Mounted Infantry, four Battalions of Infantry Volunteers, being the Adelaide Volunteers, divided into Districts,* and including, amongst others, the City and Woodville, the Southern Suburban, the Eastern Suburban, the Mount Barkar, the Willunga, the Mount Gambier, the Millicent, the Encounter Bay, the Riverton, the 1st Midland, the Kaduia,

* The 1st Battalion has a dark blue uniform with light blue and scarlet facings. No. 2 District has a grey uniform with rifle green facings. No. 4 has a grey uniform with scarlet and white facings.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the Burra, the Williamstown, the Wallaroo, the Yorkes Peninsula, the Port Augusta, the Gladstone, the Laura, the Terowie, and the Quorn Companies.

The WESTERN AUSTRALIA DEFENCE FORCE is purely voluntary, and dates from 1861, when, following the example set in the Mother Country and in other of the Colonies, Western Australia determined to organize a Volunteer Force. The composition of the Force is as follows:—

Artillery:—The Perth Artillery, one Battery.

Infantry:—The Metropolitan Rifles, the Freemantle Rifles, the Guildford Rifles, the Geraldton Rifles, the Albany Defence Rifles, the Northampton Rifles, and Lady Barker's Own Cadet Corps.

The DEFENSIVE FORCE OF NEW ZEALAND, as may be gathered from the Statistical Report, includes Cavalry, Mounted Infantry, Artillery, Engineers, and Rifles. In addition to these there are, taking the two islands together, some thirty-six Corps of Cadets. It must not be forgotten that the representative of a permanent force in New Zealand is the New Zealand Armed Constabulary, which may be regarded as divided into the Police branch, the Artillery branch, the Engineer branch, the Torpedo branch, and the Field Force branch.

The Militia and Volunteer regiments are more fully as follows:—

Cavalry:—The 1st Regiment (North Island) New Zealand Cavalry Volunteers, comprising the Waiukui Troop Royal Cavalry, the Alexandra Troop, the Wairoa (Patea) Light Horse, the Te Awanutu Cavalry, the Heretanuga (Hutt) Light Horse, and the Rangitikei Cavalry; the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry, the Otago Hussars, the Canterbury Mounted Rifles, the Marlborough Hussars, the South Franklin Mounted Rifles, the North Otago Hussars, the East Coast Hussars.

Artillery:—The New Zealand Regiment of Artillery Volunteers with, in the 1st or North Island Brigade, the Auckland Battery, the Wellington Battery, the Napier Battery, the Nelson Battery, and the Parnell Battery of Garrison Artillery; in the 2nd or South Island Brigade, the Dunedin Battery, the Timaru Battery, the Christchurch Battery, the Inverkargill Battery, the Oamraru Battery, the Port Chalmers Battery, and the Lyttelton Battery.

Engineers:—The Auckland, Canterbury, and Dunedin Engineers.

Infantry:—The 1st Battalion Otago Rifles, comprising the City Guards, the South District Rifles, the North Dunedin Rifles, the Wakari Rifles, the Dunedin City

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Rifles, the Highland Rifles, and the Dunedin Irish Rifles; the 2nd Battalion Otago Rifles comprising the corps from Bruce, East Taieri, Clutba, Waitahuma, Tuapeka, Kaitangata, West Taieri, and the Peninsula Rifles, the 1st Battalion North Otago Rifles composed of the Oamraru Rifles, the Waikonaiti, the Hampden Rifle Rangers, the Otepopo Rifles, the Naseby Rifles, and the Palmerston Rifles; the 1st Battalion Canterbury Rifles comprising the Christchurch City Guards, Christ's College Rifles, Christchurch Rifles, Sydenham Rifles, the Canterbury Scottish, the Richmond Rifles, the Canterbury Irish, and Kaiapoi Rifles; the 2nd Battalion Auckland Rifles comprising the Victoria Rifles, the Auckland City Guards, the Hobson Rifles, and the Onehunga Rifles; the 3rd Battalion Auckland Rifles comprising the Newton Rifles, the Gordon Rifles, and the Royal Irish Rifles; the 1st Battalion Wellington Rifles comprising the Wellington City Rifles, the Wellington Guards, the Wellington Rifles, the Newtown Rifles, the Tearo Rifles, and the Thorndon Rifles; the West Coast (North Island) Battalion comprising the Royal (Rangitikei) Rifles, the Wanganui, the Taranaki, the Palmerston North, the Patea, the Manchester, the Wanganui City, and the Haweri Rifles; the Nelson and Westland Battalion comprising the 1st Westland, the Nelson's City, the Stoke, the Blenheim, the Waimei, the Kumara, the Greyough, the Inangahua, the Blenheim City Rifles, and the Brumerton Rifles; the South Canterbury Battalion comprising the Temuka, the Ashburton, the Geraldine, the Timaru, the Waimate Rifles, and the Ashburton Guards. In addition there are the Honorary Reserve Corps and various Rifle Companies.

The TASMANIAN DEFENCE FORCE dates as far back as 1859, when two batteries of Artillery and twelve companies of Infantry were enrolled. Eight years later, however, the latter were disbanded, the strength of the Artillery establishment being at the same time somewhat increased.

Owing to circumstances, into which it is not necessary to enter, the Colony was for some eight years practically without any Defence Force, the Artillery not being maintained. In 1878, however, the nucleus of the existing Force was formed, the Artillery being again represented by three batteries, and a regiment of Infantry being raised. For some few years these were designated the Local Forces of Tasmania, but in 1885 the present style—The Defence Forces—was adopted, and a small Permanent Force of Artillery enrolled.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The division of the Force is as follows :—

The Tasmanian Permanent Artillery Volunteers—The Tasmanian Engineers, the Launceston Volunteer Artillery, the Southern Tasmanian Volunteer Artillery, the Hobart Town Rifles, the Launceston Rifles—attached to which is the Launceston Cadet Corps, the Hutchins School Cadet Corps, and the Volunteer Reserve Force.

Perhaps one of the most striking features in this brief epitome of the Australasian Forces is the strong show that is made by the Corps of Cadets. The statesman whose memory comes fresh with the primrose of each spring once declared that "the world belongs to the young," and it must be admitted that, looking at the organization and effectiveness of the Australasian Cadets, the world-lordship of the future seems to be well assured. A competent authority writing not long ago on the subject thus expressed himself with regard to these corps. The particular force which he was then considering was the Victorian Cadet Corps, but his remarks may well be taken as explanatory of the sister corps in the other Colonies: "The Volunteer Cadet Corps of Victoria deserves notice. It numbers about 3,000 boys, average age about fourteen years, and is composed of companies (or corps) formed in the many schools which are scattered over the Colony. The members are dressed in regular military uniform, and are armed with a miniature Martini-Henry rifle (the Francotte rifle) manufactured on purpose for them by, I believe, a French or Belgian firm. The school-masters and the elder boys are the officers. The cadets are formed into battalions, made up of companies of schools in the same neighbourhood, and many of the members when they leave school join the Militia. Nothing could bear stronger testimony to the real military spirit throughout Victoria than the formation, appearance, and maintenance of this cadet corps." The interest taken by the Colony generally in the efficiency of the cadet battalions is very marked, and has expressed itself in the foundation of various prizes for competition. Camps of instruction, annual rifle matches, and the presentation of colours to be held by the champion corps, all tend to enhance the value of what has been not inaptly described as the natural nursery of the Colonial Militia. In connection with this fact it may be mentioned that "one cadetship at the Royal Military College, England, is given annually to students of each university in the Australasian Colonies to which a charter by letters patent has been granted."

Any review of the Colonial Forces, taken as a whole, would be incomplete without noticing the valuable services rendered by the late Sir Peter Scratchley, who, as is well

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

known, submitted to the Home Government an elaborate and exhaustive scheme for the complete organization of the defensive forces. As he very rightly observed, no one who is acquainted with Australia can deny that it possesses the best material for establishing in an economical manner a sound system of defence. This opinion is necessarily to be taken in conjunction with the truth (which he fully recognised) that the defence organization of the Colonies must necessarily differ from that of any other country, inasmuch as it may necessarily have to bear the test of war. Peace arrangements fully as much as war requirements must be considered, for the simple reason that the Colonies "while perfectly secure against attack from within, and situated at great distances from any foreign power likely to be at war with the Mother Country, are, nevertheless, exposed to attack as an integral portion of a great empire." Another strongly expressed opinion of the same authority deserves mention both from the value of the lesson it gives and from the fact that its teaching seems to have been taken to heart in great measure by the colonies concerned. "Australia must bear in mind that the attacks she may be called upon to repel will be well considered and determined, while the men employed in these expeditions will no doubt be highly trained, well-seasoned, and disciplined sailors and soldiers. Any half measures are therefore absolutely dangerous, and it would be preferable to abandon all attempts at defence rather than organize the mere semblance of a defensive organization." While on this subject, it may not be out of place to consider the views occasionally urged by those—now a diminishing number—who are opposed to any military organization whatever worthy of the name. The chances of invasion are, they hold, so remote as to render the expenditure, which must of necessity be incurred in the support of a properly organized force, absolutely needless; the conditions of life in this new world of theirs are such as to revive the old traditional dislike of a standing army or any approach to it; hence the service would be unpopular, and its employment as a support to the civil power would be irritating and dangerous, were it possible to conceive of it in that capacity. Another notion frequently aired, is—or perhaps we should say, was—that if the order of things should be so deranged that any hostile power should invade Australasia, the colonists would rise *en masse*, and then and there organize various bodies of sharpshooters and riflemen similar to the kindred Corps in the Franco-German War. The first of these objections may be perhaps best met by the trite aphorism that it is always the unexpected which happens; to the theoretical objections to a standing army may be urged the simple fact that the causes for such objections are long since

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

removed; against the suggested uselessness of the military force may be cited the undoubted service rendered at the Newcastle and Chinique riots; while the "prave orts" about, "rising as one man," have been ably answered by Sir Frederick Weld.

"But unfortunately, a custom prevails of hanging or shooting any person not in the uniform of a regularly enrolled corps who may be taken in arms; and in the French war the Prussians, by no means an uncivilised enemy, in such cases, shot hostages, selected by lot from among the unarmed inhabitants, when they could not, or would not, deliver up those who had fired on them, and they levied extra contributions besides. . . . But putting aside this little inconvenience, the fact remains that undisciplined men, acting on their own devices, might most often be as much or more in the way of friend as of foe; no Government would be justified in entrusting them with arms unless put under strict control in purely defensive positions, and even then it would be a great risk, and very doubtful gain, if any. I doubt not men's bravery, but I would most strongly impress upon volunteers that though our race is a fighting race, and comes of 'fathers of war proof,' it is one singularly impatient of control, perhaps even more so in colonies than at home, and therefore, I say that obedience and strict discipline and respect to officers are the first and most essential requisites. You may shoot well, you may drill well, you may march well, but unless you bring to your work strict discipline, and unquestioning and implicit obedience, you are a powerful piece of machinery under no control, out of gear, with wheels working wildly in different directions, and, consequently, utterly useless."

Considering Australia apart from New Zealand we find that early in the present century it had been found necessary to organize Volunteer or quasi Volunteer Corps for the preservation of order in the Colony. We read of the Governor's Body Guard of Cavalry, of the New South Wales Corps, of the Loyal Associations, and the history of the settlement is replete with interest, dealing as it does with the lawless violence of the convict immigrants, and the courageous and often ill-supported efforts of the Governors to quell them. Governor King had informed the Home Authorities of his intention to enrol bodies of Volunteers to cope with the plots and conspiracies which were afoot, and the reply that he received was in the following words:—"Continue by every means in your power to encourage the Armed Associations in which it is the indispensable duty and obviously the best security of every respectable inhabitant to enrol himself." No very active steps, however, were taken till December, 1803, when a proclamation was made to the effect that the Governor "counting on the zeal and

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

loyalty of all his Majesty's subjects, as well as on the forward disposition of every Briton and Irishman to defend their families and properties against any mistaken attention to this Colony, and to guard against the first effects of any unexpected attack, required all freemen inhabitants of the towns of Sydney, Parramatta, and Green Hills neighbourhood" to come forward and enrol themselves in the Loyal Association. In the following March the discontent gathered to a head, but was promptly suppressed with great credit to the military engaged. In 1825 was raised what Rusden called "the noble Corps of Mounted Police, the terror of evil-doers," and the history of the Colony is full of occurrences in which they proved the accuracy of the appellation. About this time, indeed, the blacks provided plenty of exciting employment for police and settlers alike. They were undoubtedly formidable foes—cunning, numerous, and cruel. Towards the middle of 1837 the residents at Port Philip found it necessary to memorialise the governor, Sir Richard Bourke, for protection. They asserted that "attracted by the expectation of receiving provisions and clothing, which have hitherto been liberally supplied them, an unusual number of natives have for some time past been collecting in this neighbourhood, and there, forsaking their usual modes of procuring food, are depending upon the supplies they obtain either by begging or plunder." They therefore begged for the appointment of a police magistrate, and the despatch of a small body of Mounted Police, whose presence would, they considered, prevent hostilities or at least control their violence. So impressed, indeed, were the memorialists of the need and advantage of this step that they expressed themselves as most ready to defray "the whole cost of such an establishment." A small force was accordingly established at Geelong, which was evidently intended to serve as a nucleus for a local force, as Sir Richard, in his despatch to the Secretary of State on the subject, adds that he has relied "upon the good disposition of the settlers to provide the magistrate with such a force as shall enable him to execute the laws and to preserve peace between them and the aborigines." The expectation of peace was, however, doomed to disappointment. Before long the authorities had to report the committal of "more than one murder in this district," and that an additional body of the Mounted Police had been sent. The following month occurred the tragic occurrence so long remembered as "the murder of the Faithfulls." The official report states that a most furious attack was made on eighteen men of Mr. Wm. Faithful by about three hundred of the aboriginal natives. "It appears that on the morning of the 10th inst., when they were putting their bullocks to, the dash was made, when eight of the white men were unfortunately slain,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

and property, I believe considerable, destroyed. Mr. George Faithfull was on his way to this party when he fell in with one of the mangled corpses of the white men; several were found and buried." Nor was this by any means the only instance of the kind. During April, May, and June in that year (1838), numerous farms were attacked, sheep driven off, and not seldom lives taken. The force of police was increased, and the local military force organized on a more efficient scale. The following account from the letter of a settler gives a fairly accurate idea of the sort of warfare the Colonists, both Police and Militia, had in those days to wage. The blacks were besieging a farmer, who had fortunately been able to apprise the Mounted Police of his danger, and thus to obtain a welcome and valuable reinforcement to his small garrison. "Daylight came," he wrote, "and in the distance we could see their dusky figures crossing the lagoon to our side. They had only three canoes, so that it was a considerable time before all were landed. They then gathered together in a clump in dead silence, and held a council of war, thinking themselves unobserved all the time. At sunrise they slowly approached, and only those of us whom they expected to see showed out to them, and without arms; they appeared to have no other arms than their tomahawks, but every man of them was dragging a large jagged spear with his toes through the long grass. When, by the way, one of these spears enters a man's body it is impossible to get it out again, except by cutting the flesh all round it, or pushing it right through to the other side. As they advanced nearer they spoke, and continued talking to us all the time in the most friendly strain, until within about twenty yards, when just as they (at a signal given by one of them) were stooping to pick up their spears to make a rush, the men in the hut let drive through loopholes right among them; and we all made a simultaneous rush and put them to rout in a manner that would have given the old Duke intense satisfaction had he been looking on."

In 1839 the Border Police was created and were also actively engaged in the troubles with the natives. From time to time, as occasion demanded, various Volunteer Corps were enrolled to meet the dangers threatened by the frequent outbursts of political excitement which occurred before the new Colony could settle down.

Perhaps no period was more fraught with possible danger, as well for the Colony itself as to the *entente* between it and the Mother Country, as that in which the famous discovery of gold was made. To say that people lost their heads is to employ an expression which conveys but a feeble idea of the actual condition of affairs. First one neighbourhood and then another became inflicted with the craze. The roads to the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

earliest discovered mines were filled "with a motley crowd of men, women, and children, trooping with laborious haste to the goldfields. . . . There were fears lest all ordinary labour should be abandoned." A local paper thus described the state of affairs at Bathurst.

"Bathurst is mad again. The delirium of golden fever has returned with increased intensity. Men meet together, stare stupidly at each other, talk incoherent nonsense, and wonder what will happen next. . . . Since the affair was blazoned to the world several gentlemen of our acquaintance have shown undoubted symptoms of temporary insanity. . . . Should the effect be at all proportionate in Sydney to its population, the inmates of Bedlam Point may be fairly reckoned an integral portion of the community."

Were it possible to idealize the picture, the red gold might be depicted as the lovely luring fairy of legend, to follow whom all men were fain, and ready in the pursuit to peril "limb and life, and child and wife," honour, faith, and self-respect, could they but win to the sweet prize that she carried. Gold was indeed—

"The end of every man's desire."

In the fevered crowd which streamed after this dazzling earth meteor that had arisen were to be seen priests, schoolmasters, religious ministers, aristocrats, and plebeians, hustling each other in the frantic press. Nor was it only those at odds with fortune that sought with reckless ardour to mingle with the votaries of the—

"Visible god
That solders close impossibilities
And makes them kiss."

Barristers, attorneys, medical men, merchants, shopkeepers, artisans, brick-makers, labourers, and sailors mingled in the throng. It must be confessed that there was explanation enough of the excitement. The reports published in the papers appeared scarcely credible; it seemed almost as if place and time had passed beneath some enchanter's wand, which had changed the Australia of emigrants and convicts into an Arcadian Eldorado, and the present time of prosaic realities to a new Saturnian period of illimitable wealth. One old shepherd was almost daily picking up pieces of gold which lay scattered over the pasturage; it was remembered that in 1849 another shepherd had offered a Melbourne jeweller a lump of quartz containing over one pound weight of gold; in August, 1851, some more quartz was found on the surface, of which, in a lump of seventy-five pounds, four-fifths were solid gold. "To find quartz," wrote

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The Australian and New Zealand Gazette, "is to find gold. It is found thirty-two feet from the surface in plenty. Gold is actually oozing from the earth." Perhaps, however, it was the nuggets that were found "promiscuous like" by lucky travellers which exercised the greatest sway over the imagination. A morning's walk might reveal these delicious objects, in value from a dozen ounces to twice as many pounds. In Louisa Creek a single quartz nugget brought the happy finder over £1,100. "One person," writes another local paper, "left Melbourne on Saturday, and returned on the Monday week following bringing fourteen pounds weight in gold, dug up by himself. Another man, after working ten days, brought twenty-two pounds weight. Another, a gentleman who only went to see, was anxious to try his luck, and begged a dishful of earth to have, as he thought, a few grains to take home with him; a few minutes' washing gave him nearly two ounces of gold." It was soon found that there would arise absolute necessity for a strong force of law-abiding emigrants to assist the executive in enforcing its claims. It was not likely that the Government could allow this vast excess of wealth to be enjoyed by individuals alone. The State obviously had its rights, and these rights it was resolved to enforce by requiring all of those mining for gold to take out licences permitting them so to do. It must be remembered that a very considerable fraction of the populace at that time was drawn—to employ a trite expression—from the criminal classes; and these naturally resented any interference, especially from the authorities. An opinion, moreover, seems to have obtained, amongst even the law-abiding settlers, that the land and all that it contained was theirs, free from any claim whatever on the part of the State. Consequently the enforcement of the licensing regulation was difficult, and the authorities had to choose between rescinding their enactment or enforcing it. So far as the latter course was adopted the services of the then existing Police were at once called into requisition. "It may seem strange," writes the historian before quoted, "that any men could be found to act as constables amid the excitement of the gold fields. Yet, while enrichment beyond the bounds of former dreams was grasped by the fortunate, a sergeant received (with provisions) only three shillings and ninepence and a trooper three shillings and threepence a day, while thousands of eager diggers were moiling in the dirt which yielded gold. It is true that being on the spot they saw the miserable failures of the unlucky; but it was not that alone which made them loyal. There was a sense of honour. Some of them had served in the fine body of men who, when drafted from regiments of the line, formed the Mounted Police of the Colony . . . the terror of evil-doers and the

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

welcome guests of all honest men." And evil-doers there were in plenty. "From California came wild men, the waifs of societies which had submitted to or practised the lynch law. The social festers of France, Italy, and Germany shed exfoliations upon Australia. The rebellious element of Ireland was there. The disappointed crew who thought to fright the British Isles from their propriety in 1848 were represented in some strength. The convict element in Australia completed the vile ingredients."

At this time the Police and various local forces were busily and almost universally engaged in the suppression of those numerous gangs of bushrangers whose deeds of violence and effrontery have created almost a literature of their own. Truth to say there was but little romance, and of redeeming qualities none save a dogged courage, in this favourite hero of street arab story-books. Perhaps what our French neighbours would call "extenuating circumstances," may be found in the utter derangement into which all classes in the Colony had fallen. With educated demagogues preaching to willing ears the righteousness of sedition; with an executive, unready for the weight of responsibility suddenly thrown on it; with gold diggers paying a pound for a shave, ten pounds for a day's cab drive, sometimes even "in the very drunkenness of enjoyment of their wealth" lighting their clay pipes with a bank note—it is perhaps not to be wondered at that the transported convict for mere commonplace old country crimes, should have thought that the aspect of things in general was something more than favourable to the exercise of his vocation. Parties of successful diggers returning with their "pile" would be attacked in ambush by a party of bushrangers, and after a short but unequal fight would be driven off, leaving their gold in the hands of the robbers, and some of their number dead in the bush. It might fairly be said of the Colony that:

> "The law
> Relaxed its hold upon them, and the ways
> Were filled with rapine."

A letter, written from Melbourne at this time and subsequently published, gives a vivid picture of the state of affairs. "The streets at night are filled with prowling desperadoes, ticket-of-leave holders, expirees, or escaped convicts from Van Diemen's Land, while the roads to the mines swarm with mounted ruffians of the same class, who, under the name of bushrangers, emulate in Australia the doughty deeds of the Dick Turpins and Claude Duvals, who in former times took the road on our English heaths and highways. Murders, robberies, and outrages of every kind are so fearfully prevalent as to have become wearisome in their constant repetition. . . . A party of five or six

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

armed bushrangers on a fine sunshiny afternoon took possession of the public road leading from Melbourne to St. Kilda and Brighton, *within three miles of the metropolis*, and for upwards of two hours robbed every individual, upwards of thirty, who passed up and down the road, taking them afterwards into the bush, tying them together and detaining them as prisoners." It must not, of course, be supposed that these miscreants were always victorious; the men from whom the various bodies of local Police and Militia have been since raised were not likely to remain quiet under this oppression. Even individuals, to whom resistance meant almost certain death, preferred to "take it fighting," and not unfrequently before they bit the dust had rid the Colony of one or two of these pests. But the only effectual way of doing this was to combine, and to call into force the constitutional provisions for the public safety. The pressure had been too sudden for the Government at once to be fully prepared for all emergencies, and while the orthodox weapons of State procedure were being hunted out and refurbished, property was being plundered and lives taken. Escorts therefore had to be organized, and when the Police were numerically too weak to satisfy all the demands made on them for this purpose, auxiliary bands of loyal settlers joined in the duty. Labilliere, in his "Early History of Victoria," tells us that "a distinct body of gentlemen was enrolled as a mounted force, styled Cadets," and the force which may be said to be the *nominal* forerunner of the numerous Cadet Corps now in the Colony, and the actual parent of the well known Victoria Mounted Rifles, offered many inducements to many young men of the higher classes whom their ill-fortune had disgusted with gold hunting.* It is true that these men were not, strictly speaking, in all cases "Militia or Volunteers," but they may fairly be taken as representative in their way of the military material of the Colony, and, happily for Australia, no more serious call has been made upon her fighting strength than these fierce skirmishes with the desperadoes. At one time, however, it seemed almost certain that the opposition to the question of gold licences would culminate in an organized riot. Mass meetings were held; the usual commonplace about "rising in their thousands," was shrieked by agitators; it was discovered that even the magisterial bench was not above bribery; turbulent meetings were held; a military detachment was only saved from possible annihilation by some Colonial troopers; the disaffected press openly admitted that they proposed to change the dynasty of the country. At the end of November, 1854, the authorities determined to bring matters to a crisis. Instructions were issued that the licences should be inspected according to

* This "Cadet" force did not have a very long existence, being disbanded in a year or two

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

custom, but on arriving at the appointed place the Commissioner and his escort were pelted. On this reinforcements were sent for, the Riot Act was read, and the Police, supported by the military, dispersed the crowd. The insurgents began to organize. Hundreds were sworn in; drilling was immediately commenced; "the Commander-in-Chief of the diggers under arms" was stated to have advised those who were unable to obtain fire-arms to get pikes, which, needless to say, were to be employed "to pierce the tyrants' hearts." A formal demand was made that the prisoners taken at the recent riotous meeting should be given up. This was, of course, refused. Captain Thomas, in command of the military—"one of those able, courteous and determined men who maintain the character of their country wherever its flag is waved"—was practically besieged in his camp. When it came to this it became time to act, and this Captain Thomas decided to do. Before daybreak on the 4th December, a compact body, of whom one hundred and twenty-four were Colonials and one hundred and fifty-two men of the 12th and 40th Regiments, was assembled to attack the rebel camp at Bakery Hill. We subjoin Mr. Rusden's account of the fight. At 3 A.M. there left the camp "this small band of two hundred and seventy-six men who went forth against overwhelming numbers. Straggling shots in the distance indicated that the rioters had kept watch and were giving signals. Silently the little band moved on, and in about half an hour reached the stockade. The left flank and rear of the place were threatened by part of the Mounted Force thrown forward for the purpose. The remainder with the Foot Police were kept in reserve, while the 12th and 40th detachments were extended in skirmishing order, with supports, in front of the entrenchment and of a barrier of ropes, slabs, stakes, and overturned carts. The signal shots had not been in vain. A hundred and fifty yards distant a sharp fire without previous challenge rattled amongst the soldiers. The bugle to commence firing was sounded by order of Thomas; the troops advanced, giving and receiving a brisk fire; Thomas brought up the supports with the words 'Come on, 40th,' the entrenchment was carried with wild hurrahs, and a body of men with pikes was immolated under the eye of the commander before the bugle to cease firing recalled the soldiers from the work to which they had been provoked. The rebel flag was pulled down with wild shouts. All persons found within the entrenchment were captured, and some of the many fugitives were intercepted by the cavalry." We have before had occasion to notice in connection with the Fenian insurrections in Canada, the invariable habit of rebel leaders to shrink from personal danger. On this occasion amongst the prisoners taken was one Seekamp,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

who, as editor of the *Ballarat Times*, had made himself conspicuous by the virulence of his attacks on the soldiers and Colonials. They were brutal, cowardly, and would be crushed by the offended diggers rising in their might, &c. He, too, it was who had promulgated the grandiloquent phrase about changing the dynasty of the country. This heroic individual narrowly escaped the fate he so richly deserved at the hands of the infuriated military, a fate which only the unbounded influence of Captain Thomas was able to arrest. We read that he displayed such abject terror that his comrades shrunk from him in disgust.

The insurrection at Ballarat was crushed, but only to rear its head at Melbourne. Forthwith special constables were enrolled and a corps of mounted gentlemen volunteers was organized to meet the outbreak which unfortunately received some support, though not in an overtly rebellious manner, from the populace. But the determined action of Captain Thomas may be said to have given the wholesome lesson that the Government was able to check any attempt to inaugurate a reign of terror.

Throughout the other Colonies the Militia and other local forces were from time to time called upon to adopt similar measures. In Tasmania, again, what is known as the "Black War" in Van Diemen's Land, provided many opportunities for the services of the local levies, which were, moreover, frequently employed in checking the turbulent outbreak of the population of this Colony, that under its earlier name of Van Diemen's Land had been with many people for long a synonym for lawlessness and criminality.

The growth of the military forces of Australasia, according to the official statistics, has been before referred to; and from what we have said it will be evident that no more detailed history of the several corps—excluding, as we necessarily must, the various interesting details that might be given dealing with their internal organization—can be here given, inasmuch as they are happy enough to have no war within their borders to record.* It will, perhaps, emphasize this if we quote the statement made, not many years ago, by Captain Gretton in an interesting paper he contributed to *Colburn's United Service Magazine:* "Under no obligation to the Imperial Government to protect themselves, bound by no tie of federation to inter-colonial uniformity of action, and imbued with a touching belief in the ubiquity and omnipotence of the British fleet, the different Australian governments drifted on vaguely for several years. Some raised paid Volunteer Corps, others relied on small batteries of Permanent Gunners, with unpaid

* We, of course, except New Zealand, the history of the war in which is given below.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Volunteers in second line, while South Australia was content to entrust her honour and safety to the handful of Policemen who kept order in her law-abiding capital."

As has been said, this state of apathy was happily dispelled by "the gloom of imminent war," which, in 1877, lowered over Great Britain. On a sudden the truth seemed to flash into the minds of the various colonies that, for weal or woe the Empire was one; that, as has been well expressed, "war once declared by or against Great Britain—from the Dominion of Canada and the Empire of India down to the most insignificant little West Indian Crown Colony—all are at war with the enemy of the Mother Country, and thus exposed, at any moment, to his attacks and depredations."

It is true that at the time of the New Zealand war the other Australian colonies, notably Victoria, showed practical sympathy with their sister colony; but not till the able organization of Sir Peter Scratchley, Sir William Jervois, and others, had raised the various defence forces into a capable army, did it become evident that in the far south there had arisen a factor in Imperial strength, which claimed and deserved consideration. During the continuance of the Transvaal war, the loyalist feeling in Australasia was very marked. The chronicle of the war with its changing episodes was eagerly followed; it is said that more than one instance occurred of individual colonists going, of their own initiative, to England to seek permission to serve in the Imperial ranks. The writer before quoted refers to one instance of what he rightly describes as the remarkable loyalty and affection of the old country which pervades all the Australasian troops. "Within four hours of the arrival in Adelaide of the news of our defeat at Majuba Hill, three hundred men from the small defence force of South Australia had volunteered for active service in the Transvaal, 'to help our chaps against the Boers.' The offer had hardly been telegraphed home, when the other colonies hearing of it, instantly began to follow suit, and in twenty-four hours 2,000 sturdy Australians had placed themselves, too, at the service of the Home Government, eager to help avenge the honour of the British Flag."

The offer was not accepted, but the first voice had made itself heard of that mighty cry for Imperial Federation, which is now ringing throughout the length and breadth of the Empire.

But though they were spared the humiliations of the Transvaal War, the time was nigh at hand when the Australasian forces would seek, and that successfully, to share the warfare of the Mother Country. Much has been written about the participation of the New South Wales Contingent in the Egyptian Campaign, and we have, in preceding

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

pages, referred at some length to the various incidents which characterised that campaign. It will be our province in this place to refer simply to the circumstance, attending the despatch of the Contingent, and perhaps it may be well here to mention that though the New South Wales Contingent was the only one which actually took part in the campaign, others of the colonies made similar offers of assistance to the Imperial Government. Volunteers crowded to enrol their names, declares Froude in his "Oceana." "Patriotic citizens gave contributions of money on a scale which showed that little need be feared for the taxpayer. Archbishop Moran, the Roman Catholic Primate, gave a hundred pounds as an example and instruction to the Irish; others, the wealthy ones, gave a thousand." When the tidings came that the offer was accepted, the enthusiasm is described as irresistible. "To be allowed to share in the perils and glories of the battlefield as part of a British army," writes the same eloquent author, "was regarded at once as a distinction of which Australia might be proud, and as a guarantee of their future position as British subjects. The help which they were now giving might be slight, but Australia in a few years would number ten millions of men, and this small body was an earnest of what they might do hereafter. If ever England herself was threatened . . . they would risk life, fortune—all they had—as willingly as they were sending their present contingent. It was a practical demonstration in favour of Imperial unity." As to the rights and the wrongs of the immediate question at issue between England and Arabi, the Australians contemptuously declined to admit that even if there were any "question" the fact could possibly have anything to do with them. They had not yet arrived at that stage of drivelling cosmopolitanism which assumes that we must always be in the wrong, and, acting on that assumption, is prepared on all occasions to apologise and eat the leek. With the Australians, as with their cousins of the Stars and Stripes, the sentiment was, "Our country! in her quarrels with other powers may she always be in the right, but—our country, right or wrong!" "Many causes combined to induce them to welcome the opportunity of being of use. There was a genuine feeling for Gordon. . . . Gordon was theirs as well as ours. He was the last of the race of heroes who had won for England her proud position amongst the nations; he had been left to neglect and death, and the national glory was sullied. . . . It would have a further effect which would be felt all the world over. In their estimate of the strength, present and future, of Great Britain, the great powers had left the colonies unconsidered. . . . They had taken the political economists as the exponents of the national sentiment. They had

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

assumed that if war came the colonies would immediately fall off. In this spontaneous act of the Australians the great powers would see that they would have to reckon not with a small island whose relative consequence was decreasing daily, but with a mighty empire with a capacity for unbounded expansion, her naval fortunes duly supported in the four quarters of the globe, a new England growing daily in population and in wealth with incredible speed, and all parts of it combined in a passion of patriotism, with the natural cord of affinity to which the strongest political confederacy was as a rope of straw. A contingent of seven hundred men was nothing in itself, but it was a specimen from an inexhaustible mine." Such are the sentiments with which Mr. Froude credits the Australians in connection with the Soudan contingent, and it would be difficult more truly or forcibly to summarise them. Various communications passed between the various Colonies and the Imperial Government. Details had to be arranged; before the offer was circumstantially made it was necessary to ascertain whether the principle would be agreed to. The various discussions and despatches resulted at last in the sending of the following telegram to the Secretary of State:—"This Government offer Her Majesty's Government two batteries of field artillery, with one battalion of infantry, to be transported by Orient steamer, and undertake to land force at Suakim within thirty days after embarkation."

This was speedily acted on, and the Australian Contingent formed a valuable addition to the British Forces. They were commanded by Major-General Richardson,* the Brigade-Major being Lieutenant-Colonel Mackenzie.* Amongst the other officers were Sergeant-Major Williams, Major Blanchard, Lieutenant-Colonel Bingham, Majors Bartlett,* Spalding,* Murphy, Airey,* Paul,* Norris,* Gascoigne, Lieutenant-Colonel Wells,* Captains H. P. Airey and C. B. Airey, George, Bennett, Mulpolland, Nathan,* Parrott, Boam, and Milward, Lieutenants Kingdun, Shipway,* and Sparrow,* most of whom, with their men, took part in the advance on Tamai.

The parting words of Lord Wolseley may be justly quoted as showing the estimation in which, not only he, but all those whose opinion was of worth, regarded the Australian Contingent. In his farewell inspection, after expressing the great pride he had felt in commanding them, he went on to say that "he considered that their work, bearing, and behaviour, had been deserving of the highest praise. The fact of New South Wales being able to send such troops would probably deter any power from hastily entering upon war with Britain. The Australians had, individually and collectively, deserved

* Mentioned in despatches.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

the esteem of their comrades in arms, and took with them the best wishes of the whole troops." Naturally, the colony itself was proud of its representatives. In the words of one of its statesmen: —"The little noble band is but the advance guard of a glorious Imperial Federation. They will go on, and men will know what force is behind and is upon its march to the front."

It is, perhaps, somewhat difficult to realise the fact that this action on the part of the colony was opposed as unconstitutional, as ill-advised, by some local politicians. It was urged that the Ministry, in sending the Contingent, were acting beyond their powers; that the precedent was a bad one, and that no real necessity had been shown. Moreover was it from a prudential point of view a wise step? Possibly so long as they kept out of the quarrels of the Mother Country, her foes might leave them unmolested. It was the more necessary to consider these things, as just then there were rumours that Russia was showing signs of forcing a quarrel with Great Britain. The Colonies had best remember the Hudibrastic axiom:—

"Those who in quarrels interpose
Most often wipe a bloody nose."

"To put themselves forward unasked was to challenge attack, and was quixotic and absurd. They might wake up some morning to find the Russian ironclads at the Bluff, with Sydney at their mercy." Into the merits of the question we are not concerned to enter. Granted for a moment that it was unconstitutional, and that the strictly prudent course would have been to have obtained a fuller sanction—it may still be doubted whether any Ministry could have taken a step more in accord with the real feeling of the people. Some of us may remember the lines written about another "imprudent" act which resulted in the freeing of a wretched horde of slaves by the action of half-a-dozen Englishmen; and the concluding verse not inaptly describes the general sentiment felt for similar deeds.

"A glorious gift is Prudence,
And they are useful friends
Who never make beginnings,
Till they can see the ends:
But give us now and then a man,
That we may make him king,
Just to scorn the consequence,
And just to DO the thing."

This is what the Stuart Ministry had done, and if apology was needed, it must be admitted that no better one could have been made than that offered by the Attorney-General in a speech he made on the subject.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"Gentlemen," he said, "in sending military assistance to England in a foreign country, we were perfectly well aware that we were straining the powers of local provisions made for our own defence; but we resolved that, as members of the Empire, we were defending ourselves and all most dear to us just as much in Egypt as if the common enemy menaced us in this Colony. (Cheers.) The Queen's enemies were ours wherever they were; and this lesson, which we are now teaching those who are incapable of appreciating it, they may some day understand in their own persons.

"Who are against us? Those, in the first place, who would have disposed of their souls (if purchasers for such extremely damaged articles could have been obtained in an over-stocked market of such commodities) for the conception of our idea, and the means of giving it effect; those who hate a generous action, and those who see and feel in a nobler and purer public spirit the death-blow given to factions and intrigues; these are our enemies; but they are those also of the Empire. They deride our brave Australian troops, but they would mock also the chivalry of the Guards. They hold up our service to scorn, and ourselves to insult. Gentlemen, their day is past—(hear, hear)—and a brighter and more auspicious one is dawning for peace, and freedom, and glory."

The military forces of VICTORIA, as distinct from what has been said about those of the Australasian colonies generally, call for a passing notice. No effort has been spared to render them as efficient as excellent organization, well considered plans of defence, untiring practice, and frequent competitions of all arms can do. The general division is between Garrison and Field Forces, the former including the Garrison Artillery, the Permanent Corps of Engineers, the Submarine Mining Engineers, and some of the Infantry—the latter consisting of the Mounted Corps, the Field Batteries, and the remainder of the Engineers and Infantry. To quote the description given by the late Commandant,* "the Garrison Artillery is all told off to stations in the various forts and batteries where the necessary camp equipment for the numbers required at each place is kept in readiness, a proportion of regular Artillery being told off to each work in the Port Philip defences, the officers of the regular Artillery acting as staff officers in addition to their regimental duty. The Submarine Miners in like manner with the Garrison Artillery are told off to stations in conjunction with the permanent section of Engineers, which, during peace time, has charge of the submarine mining depôt, electric lights at the various forts, &c., the mines for each mine-field being kept loaded, and

* Major Disney, R.A.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

VICTORIAN MOUNTED RIFLES

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

with all the stores pertaining to them ready for immediate laying. All that has to be done then when the forts have to be manned is to ration them, to send the allotted proportion of regular Artillery to each fort, the detachments in peace time being kept small, so as to have as many men as possible at the headquarters of the corps, to muster the various Militia Corps (none of which connected with the defence of Port Philip are more than four hours by rail from the Heads) and to despatch them to their destinations. The whole of the Field Force and the Infantry attached to the garrison force has a complete field equipment. The camp equipage of the County Corps is kept in their respective stores, that of Metropolitan Corps in ordnance charge at Melbourne. The necessary carriage could, in case of emergency, be obtained by the Assistant-Commissary-General in a few hours; special carts and waggons, such as small-arm carts, artillery, engineer, and ambulance waggons, forges, &c., are kept in ordnance or in store charge."

From the same authority we learn that on any sudden alarm of invasion or other serious occurrence, twenty-four hours would suffice to see the whole force at the various stations assigned to each component corps. Very great value is attached by the authorities to the Victorian Rifle Association which, by the number and value of the prizes it offers, greatly stimulates efficiency in marksmanship, while many of the wealthy colonists give prizes on their own account open to all branches of the service.

The VICTORIA MOUNTED RIFLES are, as has been before observed, a purely voluntary body. "They are divided into nine companies, each company being formed of a group of detachments, varying in strength from about ten to thirty men, the detachments being scattered all over the colony, and the headquarters of each company being fixed as nearly as possible in the centre of each group of detachments." They are an eminently serviceable corps, and it is satisfactory to hear that there is a prospect that within the present year (1891) their fellow subjects in the Mother Country will have an opportunity of appreciating their capabilities in competition with Imperial troops. The Commanding Officer of the Mounted Rifles and the Adjutant are on the permanent staff. Some idea of the pains taken to ensure the high efficiency of the corps may be gathered from the fact that every member is required to belong to one or other of the numerous rifle corps, at the range belonging to which he carries out his annual course of musketry, in addition to which, in order to be classed as effective, he must attend twelve daylight drills in each year. This however is a very small proportion of the work actually done in most detachments. "The Mounted Rifles, I venture to maintain," writes another

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

authority,* "should receive every possible care and encouragement. It is singularly suitable for, and should be a speciality in, Australia, where there are long distances to travel over indifferent roads or tracts; good horses and plenty of them, thousands of strong, active young men whose daily occupation and course of life makes them good riders and good shots. All they want to make them model Mounted Infantry is a certain amount of organization and discipline, and to be periodically mustered and assembled together a few times in the year in order to accustom them to act in masses.† I do not mean serried masses like cavalry; they may be as extended as necessary, but the action to be in concert. The present force of Victorian Mounted Rifles is very popular and a decided success. . . . They are armed with rifle and sword; they are serviceably dressed in khaki-coloured uniform, breeches, gaiters, tunic, and a soft broad-brimmed hat with a feather in it. The corps itself is destined to be a feather in the cap of Australia."

Any mention of the Victorian Artillery would be incomplete which omitted notice of the Nordenfeldt Battery, which owes its origin, and much of its support, to Sir William Clarke. "It is armed with three Nordenfeldt ten barrel rifle calibre guns, drawn by four horses each: the officer, Sergeant-Major, numbers one, and trumpeter being mounted, and three members per gun carried on the carriages. The whole equipment is supplied by Government, the Battery forms a complete unit; it usually encamps with the cavalry, and works during manœuvres with cavalry or mounted rifles. The men are armed with swords, carried as in the R.H.A., and two carbines per subdivision are also carried on the limbers." The Field Artillery, "about the most popular corps in the Militia," is also possessed of a very complete equipment. Each Battery has six twelve-pounder breach loading guns, powerfully horsed, and with waggons, &c., complete. The Batteries are armed as in the Royal Artillery, the uniform and horse appointments closely following the same pattern.

"As regards ideas and habits of military discipline," writes Colonel Elias, "the men of the Victorian Militia are about on a par with our Volunteers in England. Like them, they do not habitually live together in any military organization; like them, they are intelligent, and amenable to reason; but unlike the English Volunteer, the Victorian Militiaman is paid for each parade that he attends."

What has been said relative to the Victorian Forces may well serve as representative of the other Colonial troops, and the following remarks might to all intents and purposes have been written of the Australasian Forces as a whole.

* Colonel Elias.

† It will be observed that this is now to a great extent assured.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

VICTORIAN ARTILLERY.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"All through the Militia the men and officers make great sacrifices of time and money in their zeal for the defence of their country. A very striking instance of this was afforded by the Garrison Battery (in South Australia), who almost to a man during one year attended ninety voluntary and unpaid drills, in addition to eight compulsory and paid parades. . . . Soldiering is very popular. There is a steady, and ever-increasing flow of recruits into the ranks of the Militia, so that, notwithstanding a severe medical examination, the inevitable waste is amply provided for. About thirty per cent. of the time-expired men rejoin for a second term of three years, for which they receive £1 bounty. Many more enrol in the reserve, where they annually attend twelve drills, and fire through their classes to keep up the knowledge acquired with the colours."

A few words may be said as to the structural defences of the Colony, about which so much is heard from time to time. New South Wales has devoted very considerable care and cost to the protection of part at least of the coastline which includes the splendid harbour of Sydney, which has been described as the future Imperial and Naval Arsenal and Dock Yard for the whole of Australasia. Port Jackson and Botany Bay are amply defended by forts and submarine mines on the plan laid down by Sir. W. Jervois, while a strong battery is in position at Newcastle. In Queensland, Brisbane, Maryborough, and Rockhampton have batteries and torpedo defences; in Victoria, the Heads Channel, Portland, Warruambool, and Belfast are all protected with strong batteries, forts, and mines; South Australia has erected two strong forts commanding the approach to Adelaide; Hobart and Launceston in Tasmania are protected by batteries of considerable strength. The defences of Western Australia are still comparatively insufficient.

With regard to what the undertakings which we have called the "structural defences" have effected in the way of completeness, an idea will have been gained by the description given above of the Victorian batteries. It will be seen that recently steps have been taken to facilitate the concentration, which would of course become necessary in the event of an enemy effecting a landing in force. It may, indeed, be stated generally that the opinion expressed by Major Disney of the capabilities of the Victorian batteries and forts, holds good with more or less exactness of the other Colonies, subject to the qualifications above mentioned. In his opinion the Victorian works could all be held against assault by their own garrisons supported by the Infantry already referred to as forming part of the Garrison Forces. Moreover, in estimating the strength of the defensive works, the fact must not be lost sight of that the greatest possible attention is paid to exercise, gun practice, and every means of acquiring experience and knowledge.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

"There is an annual course of gunnery between the 1st August and the 1st January in every year attended by all gunners and non-commissioned officers under the rank of staff-sergeant; at its conclusion there is an examination, theoretical and practical . . . while similar courses are held in the Militia Artillery." In addition, what we may call the domestic arrangements of all the corps, especially, perhaps, those chiefly responsible for coast defences, are very excellent and, while they testify to the pride taken by the Colonies in their Military Forces, conduce not a little to the pride and *esprit de corps* which is to so great an extent a characteristic of the Australian Army.

The NEW ZEALAND colonial troops have this advantage over the rest of the Australasian colonies—if we except Tasmania—that within the present generation they have taken part in warfare within their own borders, warfare which, at one time, threatened to assume serious proportions. It will, perhaps, add to our just appreciation of the circumstances which led to the disturbance, if we give a few of the more important dates, which serve as landmarks in the history of the British occupation. Passing over the earlier period which elapsed after the discovery of the island, we find that, in 1839, the New Zealand Company set on foot a scheme for the systematic and extensive acquisition of land. The method in which this scheme was carried out, and the opposition it aroused amongst the natives, caused the Crown to interfere, and the first Governor, Captain Hobson, was appointed. Five years later the natives, under a chief named Heke, attacked and destroyed the town of Kororareka, on which occasion, it is worthy of remark, that "nothing like a savage or bloodthirsty disposition was evinced by the Maoris. On the contrary they restored, uninjured, to their parents a number of children who had been left behind in the hurry of the flight." Measures were taken to punish Heke, but the first efforts were not successful. Renewed endeavours, however, compelled the chief to sue for pardon. In 1848 there was some fighting in Wanganui. Maketu at the head of a strong body of natives made a raid on the farm occupied by some settlers named Gifillan, and so far departed from the chivalrous conduct which characterised their proceedings at Kororareka as to murder the whole family. The Europeans who had settled in the neighbourhood were driven in, and the Maories were actually bold enough and strong enough to occupy a portion of the town, despite the fact that it was garrisoned by the 65th regiment of Imperial troops, who, to their astonishment, found themselves actually besieged by their underrated foe. In connection with this siege, the following anecdote is told of a well-known settler named M'Gregor. It appears that by some mischance some of his cattle strayed, and were discovered by

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

him to have found their way to the opposite side of the river. It did not seem a particularly dangerous task to retrieve them, and this M'Gregor set himself to do. He crossed the river, "and was ascending Shakespeare's cliff, when an ambush of Maories, from a ti-tree scrub, suddenly rose and pursued him. He turned and fled for his life, and as he looked round at his pursuers they fired. A ball entered his mouth and passed out of his cheek without displacing a tooth. Finding himself hard pressed, John M'Gregor leaped over the cliff on to the beach below—some say a height of fifty feet—and so escaped." Comparative quiet—disturbed, it is true, by occasional outbreaks—pervaded the colony till 1860, when the Taranaki War broke out, the cause of which, put briefly, was the refusal of the chief king to allow of the sale of land—to which he himself had no claim—to the British. The district of Taranaki was placed under martial law, and Colonel Gold took command of the regular and militia troops. The first engagement took place at Omata, a place near New Plymouth, and on this occasion it is recorded that "the Militia and Volunteers particularly distinguished themselves, and inflicted considerable loss on the enemy." The behaviour of the Militia in this stage of the war may be gathered from the following extract from a reliable writer.

"The first engagement in which the New Zealand Militia and Volunteers distinguished themselves took place on the 28th of March, 1860, during the early part of the Taranaki war, with a most creditable result to the small body of untried men engaged, few of whom had previously met an enemy in the field, and who were for the most part armed with the old Brown Bess musket, a weapon inferior in every respect to the double-barrelled shot guns of the Maoris. . . . At noon on the 28th, Lieutenant-Colonel Murray, 65th Regiment, marched from town with three hundred men, one hundred and twenty of whom were Militia and Volunteers. The latter corps, under command of Captains Browne and Stapp, were detached with orders to march by the sandhills, take the enemy in rear, and rescue the Rev. Mr. Brown's family and the others; while Colonel Murray, with the main body, was to march by way of the Omata village to attack the enemy's position on the Waireka Hill, and so draw their attention from the flank movement. Meanwhile the Maoris, from their commanding position, had noted the march of each column, and thoroughly understood its significance. The settlers on their way up from the beach were allowed to cross, without molestation, two deep ravines, which were immediately occupied by the enemy. Their retreat was thus cut off, both in front and from the ravines on their left flank; and on arriving at the crest of the plateau our

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

men suddenly found themselves engaged by upwards of four hundred of the enemy's best men." The position was, undoubtedly, serious, and Colonel Murray despatched a few men of the 65th Regiment to the support of the settlers; but, probably from some misapprehension of the exact position, the succouring party were shortly withdrawn, with the exception of about a dozen. Captain Stapp, of the Taranaki Militia, proved himself equal to the crisis: he fortified a farmhouse, held it till nightfall, and then marched out with fixed bayonets, and, very much to the astonishment of himself and his men, succeeded in making good his retreat, with a total loss of only one killed and eight wounded.

In June an attack made on a pa in which King had entrenched himself failed, Colonel Gold left the colony, and Major-General Pratt arrived to take command, bringing with him considerable reinforcements from Australia. At this time the New Zealand Militia and Volunteers in Taranaki—of whom it is said that they probably fought more and suffered more than any other men in New Zealand—were rather under six hundred. And now commenced a war which Sir J. E. Alexander designates "a series of combats against an enterprising, active, and cunning foe, armed with double and single barrelled guns, tomahawks, and 'merés' or flat clubs, fighting under every advantage in their native fastnesses and fern-clad plains, and, when worsted or tired, retreating into their entangled forests." The Maori combatants and our regular soldiers, the Naval Brigade, also the Militia and Volunteers, did their best for victory, dug trenches, constructed stockades, and plied the rifle, and our artillery their terrible great guns, for twelve months. The danger was considerable, and the work was hard. A great deal of foolish talk was indulged in about the difficulty our soldiers experienced in subduing "a lot of savages"; comparisons were drawn between the success of our troops in China, and the unsatisfactory conclusion of the New Zealand War. The number of the Maoris was stated—for the purpose of pointing the moral—never to have exceeded six hundred, their weapons were "wretched flint and steel muskets and tomahawks," and a great deal more to the same effect. It is necessary, therefore, in order to appreciate the services rendered by the troops, of whom so considerable a number were Colonials, to state more accurately the actual conditions of the war. "The arms generally used by the Maoris," declared Captain Pasley, R.E., "are double barrelled guns (not 'wretched flint and steel muskets,' as stated by *The Times*, but good percussion guns), and, for close quarters, tomahawks with long flexible handles, which

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

enable them to reach an adversary's head over his guard. They are not ignorant of the value of the rifle, which is used by some of their marksmen, but as a general rule they prefer the double-barrelled sporting gun to any other arm. . . . One of the most fallacious opinions ever entertained by reasonable men, is, that because savages have often been able to offer a serious resistance to regular troops, under favourable circumstances, therefore any other force, no matter what, Colonists, sailors, gold-diggers from Australia or California, men of any kind in short, provided they have not been trained as soldiers, would be much more efficient, owing to some imaginary power that every man *not* brought up as a soldier seems to be supposed to possess of getting through dense scrub and supple jack, and of doing without supplies of provisions, clothing, and ammunition. In short, discipline is imagined to be a mistake, and organized movements worse than useless. Nothing can be more unfounded than such a notion. The Maoris are infinitely more formidable enemies than the North American Indians, or any other savages with whom the English nation has had to deal, with the single exception of the Kaffirs, because they possess discipline and military organization in a very high degree." Then, too, in order to understand the success of the natives in their style of fighting, the character of the country—"broken and mountainous, intersected by swamps, for the most part covered with dense forest, and entirely destitute of roads or tracks practicable for wheeled carriages of any kind"—must be taken into consideration. The Maoris, therefore, "trust to the closeness and rapidity of their fire rather than to accuracy at a distance, and their plan usually is to invite and await an attack in rifle-pits, covered from distant fire and protected in front either by natural obstacles or by the double stockade of a pa.

"Against an attack by *vive force*, probably no system of defence and no kind of arms could be more thoroughly effective than those adopted by the Maoris. It is exceedingly difficult to make a serious breach in the stockades of a pa by artillery fire, even at a short range; and any attempt to climb over or cut them down must be made at a distance of only a few feet from the muzzles of the guns of the defenders, who, being themselves well under cover, are able to overwhelm the storming party by a close and destructive fire, to which no effectual reply can be given. Owing to the rapidity with which they can be loaded and fired, double-barrelled guns are much more effective at close quarters than rifles."*

* It must be remembered that the above was written before the days of magazine and repeating rifles.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

The Militia were divided as follows: At New Plymouth there were about four hundred and thirty, at Waitara some fifteen rank and file were brigaded with the 40th under Major Nelson of that regiment, at Bell Block a couple of lieutenants commanded a compact little body of about fifty, and the same number, without any regular troops, defended Omata.* Various skirmishes of varying importance occurred, and in November a decided success was won by the British troops at Mahoetahi. Two columns were ordered to attack. The first, from New Plymouth under General Pratt, including a hundred and thirty Militia, and some twenty of the newly-organized Mounted Corps; the second column, from Waitara under Colonel Mould, was to be employed in cutting off any fugitives. It does not seem as though any Militia accompanied this column. Efforts were at first made to drive the enemy from their position by a sharp fire from the Artillery; this proving unsuccessful, some of the 65th and the Taranaki Militia were ordered to storm, which they did in good style. There was never any question as to the courage of the Maoris, and on this occasion they gave additional proof of it. They obstinately stood their ground for some time, pouring in a fire which caused some loss to our force, but before long they were driven off at the point of the bayonet. They attempted to conceal themselves in the dry grass about the swamp, but this was effectually prevented by the Militia, who set fire to it, causing the Maoris to make a final dart for escape. The well-chosen positions of the troops prevented all hope of this being achieved, and they were eventually entirely defeated with heavy loss in killed, wounded and prisoners. On our side only four were killed, of whom two were Volunteers, and sixteen wounded. A few of the Mounted Corps took part in the capture of the Matarorikoriko Pa in the following December, and on the return of the troops which had been sent to Auckland, many of the other Militia took part in the closing incidents of the war, which practically terminated in January, 1861. The mounted Corps above mentioned had, in a very short time, acquired a high character. Colonel Carey, who is certainly not given to indiscriminate eulogy where the Militia are concerned, has nothing but praise for the Taranaki Mounted Volunteers, a corps about thirty strong, who under the command of Captain De Vœux, "did most valuable service. They were badly armed, and badly clothed, but they were well mounted, plucky and always ready. Even in the most dangerous times they rode long distances, carrying orders day or night, alone or in twos. It was with these mounted men that the communication with New Plymouth and Kahihi was kept up, as it afterwards was between the Waitara and the redoubts, where, anxious

* The actual effective number in each district was probably less.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

to work and ever fearless of danger, they were invaluable. One of them, Mr. Mace, an excellent rider, was the pluckiest fellow I ever met." When hostilities recommenced in 1863, we find the Militia and Volunteers in a very much more advanced state of organization. We meet names still familiar to those acquainted with the military history of the Colony. The Taranaki Mounted Volunteers and the Taranaki Militia have been already noticed; amongst the corps which now claim our attention are the Forest Rangers, the Wellington Rangers, the Wellington Rifles, the Patea Cavalry and Rifles, the Auckland Militia, the Waeroa Rifles and others, with the Cavalry troops known as the Colonial Defence Force. In the earlier part of 1863, skirmishes occurred at various places, including Wairoa Stream, Katikara, Stone Depot, Cameron Town, Pukekohe and elsewhere, in which the Forest Rangers and Defence Corps proved of the greatest service. Of these Bush Rangers it was said that they were more dreaded by the Maories than any two British regiments. Used to bush life they scoured the country far and near, swooping upon the enemy at all sorts of unexpected places and times, threading the thickest bush and suddenly appearing in their midst, when the Maories fancied them miles away. In fact, they fought the natives after their own fashion, keeping them "in such a constant state of alarm that they dared not even sleep in their pas."

On the 23rd of October the Militia had a smart fight to themselves, in which they had rather the worst of it. Lieutenants Lusk and Percival, who were in command at the Mauku Stockade, determined to attack a strong marauding party of the enemy who were making a raid in the neighbourhood. The Maoris were in very superior numbers and forced our men to retreat after some desperate fighting. Lieutenants Percival and Norman with six rank and file were killed, and four wounded.

As illustrative of the peculiar style of Maori welfare, a more detailed account of this action will not be out of place. The total number of our men engaged was about sixty, the advance guard being led by Lieutenant Percival. At the first impact he was for a time repulsed and driven back on the main body, "and the firing on both sides became very heavy, but our men advanced and drove the enemy back into some open ground. Here, Maori-like, they wheeled round the left flank of the Militia, and taking cover behind some fallen timber, opened such a heavy fire that Lieutenant Lusk was obliged to withdraw his men. No sooner was this movement observed by the enemy than they charged out, and for some minutes there was rather close firing, in which both parties suffered despite the excellent cover afforded by the logs and stumps. The superior numbers of the Maories now enabled them to outflank the Militia on both sides, and our

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

men were forced back into the forest, where they reformed," expecting a fresh attack, which, however, never came.

But in the following December, the Forest Rangers under Captain Jackson gave the enemy a generous return in kind. With a force of under thirty men he surprised a party of some fifty Maoris, and dispersed them with considerable loss. Not long after, at Rangiawhia, the Rangers and other Militia were again actively engaged, Captain Heaphy gaining a Victoria Cross for his very distinguished gallantry. The incident is thus described by Alexander:—

"Captain Heaphy, of the Auckland Volunteers, took charge of a party and ably directed it, and Captain Jackson, with twenty men of the Forest Rangers, was of great assistance. Captain Von Tempski of the same corps relieved the soldiers who had been skirmishing for four hours. Captain Heaphy, in gallantly assisting a soldier of the 40th, who had fallen wounded into a hollow, became a target for a volley from the Maoris, at short range. His clothes were riddled with balls, and he was wounded in three places. He was recommended for and obtained the Victoria Cross, having continued to aid the wounded till the end of the day."

General Cameron said that the Colonial Defence Force, under the command of Colonel Nixon, had attained a high state of discipline and efficiency, and they displayed the greatest spirit and gallantry on this occasion. Unfortunately their brave leader was killed, and in the furious attempt to avenge his death, many of his troopers met with a similar fate. A few hours afterwards, however, a reconnoitring party under Captain McDonnell attacked a considerable number of the enemy, inflicting severe punishment.

In March a force was organized to attack the enemy's position at Ahu Ahu, an elevated stronghold of considerable strength. The regulars consisted of the 57th, divided into two parties, under Captains Russell and Schomberg, who were supported by Captains Carthew and Mackellar, of the Taranaki Militia. "The two parties meeting at the top of the ascent, a sharp fire was opened on them by about twenty or thirty Maoris, from a bush-covered hillock on the right of the pa. Two men were wounded, and the horse of Captain Mace of the Taranaki Militia, whilst the soldiers proceeded to cut down the stockade and make a passage into the interior, when the Maoris made a rapid retreat up a steep and wooded hill in the rear."

On the following day, it was determined to assault Kaitake. "It was arranged that Captain Atkinson, with one hundred and fifty men of the Taranaki Rifle Volunteers,

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

should gain the enemy's rear by a bush path; that Captain Corbett, with sixty men of the Taranaki Militia, should advance on the left; Captain Schomberg, 57th, and Captain Page, Taranaki Militia, should threaten on the right with one hundred men, whilst Captain Russell, 57th, Captain Wright, 70th, and Mackellar, Taranaki Militia, with twenty-five men each, in support of Captain Lloyd, proceeded up several small spurs on the left, to take in reverse the rifle-pits in front of two pas which crowned the crest of the hill."

In March, of the same year, occurred an incident which gained for Sir J. McNeill (one of her Majesty's equerries in ordinary) his Victoria Cross, and in which two of the Colonial Defence Force, Troopers Vosper and Gibson, were most creditably engaged. The two men were acting as escort to Lieutenant-Colonel McNeill—as he then was—on some duty which took him to a place called Te Awamatu. On returning, and when near the camp of some of the 40th at Ohanpu, they were surprised by about a hundred Maoris. Gibson was despatched for assistance, but before it could arrive Colonel McNeill saw that "there was nothing for it but flight." Scarcely had they started on their race for dear life, when Vosper's horse fell, throwing his rider, towards whom the enemy immediately rushed. Colonel McNeill returned, caught Vosper's horse, and assisted the gallant fellow to mount, the while that a heavy fire was being poured on them almost at pistol range. Fortunately both escaped.

On the occasion of the storming of Orakau, Major Hurford, of the Militia, distinguished himself. He held a salient and important position throughout the siege, repulsing many an attack which, if successful, would have entirely ruined our prospect of victory. When the general assault was ordered, he led his men amongst the advanced troops and was desperately wounded. In this brilliant affair the Colonials had five killed and eight wounded. In April, the 3rd Waikato Militia, under Major Colville, had a skirmish with the enemy, previous to which the Major had a narrow escape of capture by an ambushed party. The Military Settlers were enrolled early in April, 1864, and experienced a fierce *baptême de feu* a few months later at Ahu Ahu. Captains Lloyd and Page, with whom was Lieutenant Cox, were in command of a detachment of the Settlers and H.M. 57th regiment, engaged in foraging and destroying the enemy's crops, when they were suddenly surrounded by a strong force of Maories. The retreat that followed was, to put it euphemistically, hurried to the last degree. Captain Lloyd stood his ground, "and was killed fighting bravely." Captain Page made his way with a few men to the redoubt at Poutuku. Lieutenant Cox, who had been

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

absent when the attack was made, managed to elude the enemy by taking to the bush, and thence reached Taranaki, where he gave the alarm. "The Forest Rangers under Major Atkinson, always ready, were ordered to the scene of action," and were able to gather together the scattered members of the party. Our loss in killed and wounded was nineteen. The Forest Rangers are heard of again at a place called Te Matata, where, under Majors Hay and McDonnell, they utterly routed a body of the enemy, inflicting a loss of several killed, and an unknown number wounded.

What Gudgeon designates "the last engagement in which the Colonial Forces took part under General Cameron's command," occurred in March, 1865. Two companies of Rangers, with whom were some of the Waikato Militia, were detailed to act as scouts, and to meet the Maoris with their own tactics. While acting in this capacity, Major Tempsky discovered an approach to the village of Kakaramea, which was occupied by the enemy in some strength. The track led up the face of a steep cliff, and was facilitated by ladders which the natives had placed in the most precipitous parts of the ascent. Only seventy men were taken, Major Tempsky leading in person, and of this number twenty were left at the foot of the cliff to cover a retreat should such be necessary. So difficult was the path that it was broad daylight when the gallant band reached the village, which they found deserted, though it was ascertained that the Maoris were not far off. Tempsky determined to attack them, and directed his men to scale a barricade which had been hastily erected. While doing this they were seen by the enemy, who immediately fired, killing an officer named Whitfield, and another trooper, and wounding Captain George. An attempt to carry the position was made by Lieutenant Woolrup, but owing to the configuration of the clearing, it failed, and Major Tempsky determined to retreat. The losses on each side are believed to have been about equal. In the following July the Forest Rangers, under Majors Rookes and McDonnell, attacked the Areiahi village, which was taken without bloodshed, a similar good fortune attending the operations against the Weraroa.

The next episode of interest was the defence of Pipiriki by Captain Brassey, and its relief by Captain McDonnell. The garrison consisted of some two hundred Colonists, the Taranaki Military Settlers, and the relieving force was composed of the Forest Rangers, the Wanganui Bush Rangers, and some friendly natives. The siege was an exciting one for those engaged. On the 19th of July Lieutenant Chapman, an officer of the corps of Bush Rangers in the garrison, while strolling towards the enemy's pickets, was surprised by a party of the enemy lying in ambush, who gave chase, fortunately

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

abstaining from firing, knowing that the report would put the garrison on the alert. He distanced his pursuers, and then it became evident that the enemy meant mischief. They established themselves at several points of vantage, and made such good practice with their firearms that Captain Newland, in command of the Bush Rangers, had to sally out and dislodge them. When it came to close quarters the enemy gave way, and Newland had no difficulty in making good his position. A similar success attended Lieutenant Clery, who, at the head of forty men, dislodged the besiegers from a strong position they had taken up on the Cemetery Hill, overlooking our main redoubt, though in the sortie the Lieutenant was wounded.

In September what is known as the Opotiki Expedition to avenge the cruel murder of Mr. Volckner was resolved on, the Colonial forces engaged in which were the Military Settlers, the Bush Rangers, the Wanganui Cavalry, and the Patea Rangers. The Opotiki village, described as the largest Maori settlement in New Zealand, was captured without loss, though several hairbreadth escapes are recorded. Ensign Northcroft was hit on the buckle of his belt, and one of the men "had a bullet pass between his foot and the sole of his boot. . . . McDonnell had a bullet enter his cartridge box which knocked all his cartridges to pieces, and passed out over his hip, unpleasantly near, but without wounding him." An attack was subsequently made on one of the Pua pas, in which Major McDonnell, Major George, Captain Percy of the Yeoman Cavalry, and Lieutenant Gudgeon were engaged. Owing to some misunderstanding nothing was achieved, though Captain Percy was somewhat sericusly wounded. Shortly afterwards an attack was made on another pa, and some sharp fighting took place. Major McDonnell had another narrow escape, his rifle being struck in his hand. At first he had only taken about forty men, and the numbers of the enemy began to threaten them seriously, when the Yeoman Cavalry, followed by Captain Ross with the Patea and Wanganui Rangers, came up, and soon put a different complexion on the state of affairs. Presently, too, a company of the Military Settlers arrived, and it was determined to take the pa by *coup de main* on the following day. A somewhat amusing incident—which, however, might well have terminated more seriously—is described by Lieutenant Gudgeon, who it will be remembered was one of the officers engaged. "About 8 o'clock in the evening a voice was heard from the pa asking whether McDonnell was present; the Major answered it himself. The speaker then said that they wished to give in, and asked what terms would be given them; the major answered, 'Unconditional surrender; those men who have been implicated in Volckner's murder would be tried, those who have not

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

will be simply prisoners of war.' Feeling as they must that they were all more or less guilty, the reply rather frightened them, and they requested an hour to deliberate thereon. This was granted, and hostilities ceased for a time. It is an old saying that a little learning is a dangerous thing, and the truth of it was experienced on this occasion, for one of the junior officers, understanding a little Maori, heard them talking about peace and concluded that a sort of millennium had arrived; so he left his post, went up to the pa, and shook hands most affectionately with many of the enemy. He even allowed them to pull down some of the palisades, so that they might come out to their Pakeha friends. It did not strike this too confiding officer that the narrow gateway of the pa was wide enough to allow them to come out as prisoners, but not wide enough for them to charge out as foes. No sooner was the opening finished than they fired a volley and charged out through the breach they had made, knocking down the dupe of an officer, and rushed upon some twenty men of the Patea Rangers who, having a youthful officer of anything but a confiding disposition, were busy entrenching their portion of the lines. The suddenness of the attack allowed no time for consideration, carbines, revolvers, and spades alike proved useful, and although the twenty men were knocked down and trampled upon, they hit hard, and left fifteen of the enemy dead in a very small space, while they themselves escaped with a few severe wounds."* The following morning, when all was ready for an attack, the pa was found deserted.

Passing over for the present the occurrences of the next few months, we will take up our narrative of the New Zealand forces in 1868, when they were engaged at Poverty Bay. Majors Biggs and Fraser and Lieutenant Wilson with the Defence Force, the Military Settlers, the Forest Rangers, and other Colonial corps, were ordered to attack Kereopa, who was inciting the natives to murder Bishop Williams. Lieutenant Wilson, with a party of the Military Settlers, had a desperate fight, being surprised by a strong force of the enemy from behind while another threatened him on the flank. He gave the order to "fix bayonets and charge," and dashed across the face of the pa, exposed to a heavy fire and closely pursued. It was running the gauntlet with a vengeance, but it was his only chance. The loss was heavy, six men were killed and five wounded, rather more than a third of the detachment. Amongst the killed was Sergeant Doonan. In the result the enemy were utterly defeated with very trifling loss to the Colonial troops. About this time, too, Sergeant Walsh of the Defence Force gained for

* "Reminiscences of the War in New Zealand," T. W. Gudgeon—a valuable work to which the writer is indebted for much interesting information.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

himself a name for courage which is yet scarcely forgotten. He and a friend were doing a little private prospecting for petroleum, when they were surprised by a body of the enemy. Their carbines and horses they had left in charge of a boy who had been seen by the natives and forced to fly. Walsh and his friend, Espie, had only their revolvers with them when attacked by the enemy, who first made their presence known by a volley, which wounded Walsh in the forehead and hand, and broke Espie's arm. Soon Walsh received another wound and then two more. "As a climax, a fellow armed with a short fowling-piece ran close to him and fired, the muzzle almost touching his chest. To Walsh's astonishment the only effect was a nasty burn; the bullet must have fallen out." He thereupon closed with his enemy and knocked him down with the butt end of his revolver. This evidence of vigour in a man who had at least five bullet wounds proved, as Gudgeon puts it, too much for Maori philosophy, and the enemy were seized with a panic and fled, leaving their horses and their prostrate comrade. Walsh and Espie thereupon tied a rope round their prisoner, and set off for camp, which they eventually reached. As the historian well puts it, this was "a wonderful instance of courage and endurance, eclipsing everything in the Maori war," and, indeed, reminding us of some of the heroic encounters fought, single-handed, by officers and men in the Indian Mutiny. Walsh, it must be remembered, was wounded badly in five places; notwithstanding this he beat off nine men, took one prisoner, and, exhausted as he was. dragged him a distance of thirty miles to camp.

Going back somewhat in point of date we will now glance at the achievements of the Colonists in the operations against the West Coast tribes. Early in January, 1866, the Forest Rangers were attached to General Chute's column before Te Putahi. The fight was a severe one. Major McDonnell was wounded, and not long after the Forest Rangers, under Von Tempsky, had a brisk skirmish with the enemy, in which there were a good many lives lost on both sides. Then, again, there was the fighting between the Rivers Waitotara and Waingongoro, in which the Patea and Wanganui Bush-Rangers, the Yeomanry Cavalry, and two companies of the Military Settlers from Taranaki were engaged under Colonel Macdonald. In this place we may note that a very few months later the Colonial forces lost one of the best of their regiments, namely the Patea Rangers. The cause of their resignation was a disagreement with Government as to remuneration. In the summary we have before given of the Australian regiments generally, mention has been made of the fact that grants of land were made as inducement or reward to the Militia. The grievance of the Patea Rangers arose from a

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

misunderstanding—to use a somewhat mild term—on the part of the Government. The facts are thus put by the author before quoted:—"At this period our force consisted almost entirely of Military Settlers, who had engaged to serve for a term of three years, at the expiration of which they were to receive a grant of land. Three of the best of these companies were with Macdonald; they had served the period for which they had enlisted, and considered that they were entitled to a further grant of land if they continued to serve. They accordingly asked for a further grant of ten acres for each year served over and above the period agreed upon. This demand was not exorbitant, the more so that Government had failed on their part to give the men possession of the land to which they were entitled. Yet the Government not only refused to do anything for the men, but replied that they might leave the service if they did not choose to wait until the land was ready for them." As a consequence the Patea Rangers, probably, says Gudgeon, the best corps ever raised in New Zealand, resigned in a body.

Some of the Forest Rangers were engaged under Captain Newland in the important capture of the village of Te Pungarehu, in which Ensign Northcroft particularly distinguished himself, as did Privates Rushton and White, who had been non-commissioned officers in the Patea Rangers, and though like the rest of that corps, they had resigned as a protest against the action of the Government, remained with Macdonald's column as volunteers. Meanwhile, other Militia and Volunteers, with whom were the Constabulary, were engaged on the East Coast, and the records of the war make mention of the services rendered by the Opotiki Rangers who formed part of the force under Colonel St. John. Other disturbances took place at Napier, where Colonel Whitmore received orders to organize the Militia and Volunteers who, at Omaruni, contributed to the victory gained, the Volunteer Cavalry under Captain Gordon being specially prominent. Perhaps one of the severest struggles throughout the war, took place at Turu Turu Mokai in July, 1868, in which the Forest Rangers and the Wellington Rifles were engaged. Captain Ross, one of the best officers in the Colony, was killed, as were two non-commissioned officers, Macfaden and Blake, and seven others, several being badly wounded, and the whole party would have been slaughtered, had not Von Tempsky arrived with his men in the nick of time. The next important fight in which the Colonial troops were engaged was in the attack on Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu, where the Constabulary and the Rangers and Rifles from Wellington were engaged. In the second attack on this position our loss was very severe; Tempsky, Palmer, Hastings, Hunter, Buck, and many others were

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

killed, and it is regrettable to have to state, some of the Volunteers gave way to panic. The Armed Constabulary, however, under Captain Robert, and Volunteers Livingstone, Pope, and Blake behaved most gallantly.

In the attack on Moturura the Patea Rifles and Cavalry were engaged, together with companies of the Armed Constabulary, and it is recorded that, though the result was not satisfactory to our arms, the behaviour of the force was beyond all praise. The Kaiiwai Cavalry under Captain Newland, and the Wanganui Cavalry under Captain Fennimore, took part in some sharp skirmishing near Wanganui. The latter corps were the heroes of an unfortunate encounter near the enemy's fort at Tauranga-a-hika. The advanced guard very rashly galloped right up to the palisades, and fired their revolvers in the faces of the enemy. The reply was a volley by which Sergeant Maxwell who was in command was killed, and the others escaped with the utmost difficulty. Three horses were shot, one of them falling on his rider, Trooper Wright, but his brother seeing his peril, rode back, and after extricating him, took off the saddle and bridle and rode away with him. Trooper Lingard also distinguished himself by riding up to the palisades and cutting loose a Maori horse which was tethered to them, thus providing for a comrade the means of escape; for this action he received the New Zealand Cross.

We soon come across mention of the Poverty Bay Volunteers, in connection with the unfortunate fight at Ruakituri, but inasmuch as considerable blame was attached to the course they adopted on that occasion it cannot be said that this period of the war added much to their credit. Here, as in numerous other places, the Mounted Constabulary were the real backbone of the Colonial forces. In the attack on Ngatapa this fine body particularly distinguished themselves, two of their number, Constables Biddle and Black, having gained the New Zealand Cross.

Slowly but surely the opposition of the natives was being quelled, though much yet remained to do, in which the Armed Constabulary, the Patea Volunteers, and Kaiiwai Cavalry were employed. The turbulent Te Kooti was reduced for a time to submission, but other tribes still remained rebellious, and in the operations against these the principal forces employed on our side were the Armed Constabulary and the friendly natives. At Opepe in June, 1869, several troopers of the Bay of Plenty Cavalry were killed by subtilty; others of the local corps took part in what is known as the Patarea Campaign, with which campaign the services of the Militia and the Volunteers may be said to have terminated, what remained to be done towards the final and

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

complete pacification of the country being achieved by means of the friendly levies, of course under European guidance.*

Space unfortunately prevents us dwelling on the various corps of Volunteers and Militia which are possessed by other parts of our Colonial Empire. It would be possible and of interest to describe the growth and condition of such forces as the Cavalry and Artillery of ANTIGUA, the Georgetown Militia and Rifle Volunteers of BRITISH GUIANA, the well-known Light Infantry of CEYLON, the Kingston, Portland, Trelawny, St. Catherine, St. Elizabeth and St. Mary Corps—including Mounted Troops and Artillery—of JAMAICA, the Artillery of HONG KONG, the Militia and Volunteers of ST. CHRISTOPHER and SINGAPORE, the TRINIDAD Rifles, and last but not least—seeing that they are borne on the Imperial Establishment—the Royal Artillery and Militia of MALTA. Of these last, indeed, much might be written.

The Royal Malta Fencible Artillery have the distinction of "Egypt, 1882," in commemoration of their service in Egypt during the months of August, September, and October of that year. In 1806 there was raised for local purposes a corps of "Maltese Artificers" which consisted of three companies. Of these two were disbanded in 1815, and the remaining one two years later. The Maltese Cross on the helmet reminds us irresistibly of the once famous knights whose power—formerly felt through all lands—is now represented by an honourable order of chivalry, the Grand Master of which is appointed by His Holiness the Pope. Doubtless they had a history to be proud of, these old knights who of yore held sway in their feudal pride where the Fencible Artillery of to-day keeps watch and ward for England. Even so comparatively recently as the commencement of the seventeenth century the Grand Master, as a Sovereign Power, had warred against the Algerians; Jerusalem, Acre, Rhodes owned their sway. In the Church of St. John "were hung the shields of four thousand knights, its marble floor was covered with the achievements of those who had gone, its dome was filled with the captured trophies of the infidels, while the unsullied banner of the order waved from the ramparts of Sant' Elmo and on the land were its warriors and on the sea floated its galleys."

The familiar eight limbs of the cross, are—so heralds tell us—commemorative of the Eight Beatitudes, and of the eight nations or languages which constituted the Order. These were originally Provence, Auvergne, France, Italy, Aragon, England,

* The writer desires to acknowledge the ready and courteous assistance given by the Librarian to the Royal Colonial Institute, and by the Librarian and Officials at the Royal United Service Institute.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Germany, and Castile, and, on the suppression of the English branch, the Anglo-Bavarian. The British possession of Malta dates from the heroic days of Nelson, when the inhabitants begged Captain Ball, one of Nelson's officers, to assume the civil and military government of the island. This he consented to do, and was confirmed in his position by the King of Sicily and Lord Nelson. The annals of that time record the fact that the Knights of Malta were still a recognised force amongst the enemies of France. Picturesque warriors, too, they must have been with "the dark mantle of their order, having on the left shoulder the eight-pointed cross sewn in white velvet upon black cloth, the same sacred badge on the housings of their horses, in silver on their epaulettes, in red on the forage cap, in scarlet cloth on the tops of their white leather gauntlets." During the siege of Valetta, which was held by the French, Major Weir, of the Royal Marines, raised a Maltese regiment, "which he brought to a high state of discipline," and which served until General Pigot effected the entire reduction of the island. To some extent this gallant band may be considered as the predecessors of the present local forces of Malta.

With these we have completed our account, all too slight and insufficient, of the Colonial Forces of Her Majesty's Army. As in old days of adventure and exploration some rude lines on a makeshift chart, some daub of barbarous character on driftwood or boulder, led the searchers to explore the treasures of which it gave indication, so it is hoped this bare outline of the regiments which make good the boast that the Queen's morning drum is heard around the world, may stimulate interest in the annals of their history and achievements. Prone though the age is to deny sentiment and to sneer at faiths, the most thoroughgoing utilitarian can scarcely dismiss the consideration of Her Majesty's Colonial Forces without the conviction that their existence and efficiency make mightily for the greatest good of the greatest number. To some it is something more than a dream that, somewhen in the years to come, there shall arise one vast federated Power of liegemen to the crown of Great Britain, embraced by name as in fact in its sovereign sway, a Power whose strength shall suffice to bid wars to cease, to check the tyrant and free the oppressed, whose right none may question for none shall avail to resist her might, a Power that shall

> "Serve as model to the mighty world
> And be the fair beginning of a time."

The cry for this is heard from beneath diverse skies, in varying vigour, and differing tones, but the burden of it is waxing stronger and stronger with the passage of the years.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

True it is that amongst ourselves, within our own borders, are those who still stammer forth "craven fears of being great," or strive by flippant cynicism to sneer away the growing wish, but the vain shriekings of such are being lost in the solemn voice of the Past, the imperious cry of the Present, the swelling, prophetic murmur of the Future. A well-known writer tells in dainty verse how once, in his fancied world, there rose from the sea marge the wail

> "There was a loved one,
> But cruel is she!
> She left lonely for ever
> The Kings of the Sea."

Our forefathers, veritable Kings of the Sea, wooed and won the "loved one," the fair maiden Honour, with her dower of pride and place and lands and wealth, by their strong arms and stronger will, by loyalty and consciousness of power and mission to rule; we have entered into their labours. Strong and self-reliant, we shall keep them ours for ever, and not lightly should word or measure be condoned which should estrange from us that winsome maiden, fair in the fearless old-fashion, whom our fathers sought

> "And worshipped her by years of noble deeds,
> Until they won her."

Surety against the possibility of this, a reproof to those who would belittle our greatness, a menace to all who would attack it, are, the IMPERIAL AND COLONIAL FORCES OF HER MAJESTY'S ARMY.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

INDEX.

Aden Cavalry, 172
Africa South, Military Forces of, 287, 288
Africa, South, Early History of, 285
Akber, 89
Alberta Mounted Rifles, 231
Alexandra Rifles, 304
Aliwal, 49
Amboor, Regiment of, 152
American Sympathy with Fenians, 211
Antigua Military Forces, 369
Arcot, Heroism of Sepoys at, 28
Artillery, Bengal, 83
Artillery, Bengal, Services of, 85
Artillery, Bombay Native, 172
Artillery, Madras, 136
Artillery Militia, Canada, 246—249
Artillery, Punjaub Frontier Force, 86
Artillery, Regt. of Canadian, 243
Ashanti War, 12
Assam Light Infantry, 115
Assaye, Indian Cavalry at, 24
Atkinson, Major, Forest Rangers, 363
Australia, Early Volunteers of, 339
Australasian Cadets, 337
Australasian Colonies, 331

Baddiboo, 10
Baker's Horse, 303
Bakery Hill, Battle of, 346
Ballarat, Disturbances in, 346
Barrackpore, 49
Bathurst, Excitement during Gold Fever, 342
Batoche, 228
Battleford Rifles, 227
Battye's Goorkhas, 118
Bay of Plenty Cavalry, New Zealand, 369
Beauharnois Militia, 206
Bechuanaland Border Police, 326, 330
Bechuanaland Field Force, Uniform of, 329
Beloochees, 187, 188
Belooch Horse, 171
Bengal Army, 32—39
Bengal Army, Composition of, 46
Bengal Army, History of, 42—127
Bengal Artillery, 83
Bengal Cavalry, Uniform of, 50
Bengal Engineers, 86
Bengal Infantry, 87
Bengal Sappers and Miners, 86
Bettington's Horse, 301
Bheer Bhut, Sepoy, 20th B.N.I., 182
Bhopaul Battalion, 126
Biddle, Constable, New Zealand Constabulary, 369
Bird, Lieut. (former), 37th B.N.I., 95
Black Corps of Dragoons, Pioneers, and Artificers, 7
Black, Cnsotable, New Zealand Constabulary, 369
" Blue Puggarees " (Nourse's Horse), 321
Body Guard at Maharajpore, 49
Body Guard, Governor-General's, India, 48
Boers Firing on Flags of Truce, 325
Bombay Army, 164
Bombay Cavalry, 166—172
Bombay Governor's Body Guard, 165
Bombay Native Army, oath of, 181
Bombay Native Artillery, 172
Bombay Sappers and Miners, 173
Bombay Sepoys at Mangalore, 24
Boulton's Scouts, 220
Bourbon Fort, 1st West Indian at, 8
Briar Creek, 6
British Honduras, 11
Brock, Col., Death of, 200
Broon-ka-Pultan, 98
Brown, Trooper, C.M.R., 297
Bushrangers, 344, 345
Bushire, 20th Bomb. Nat.I., at, 182
Bussy, M., 91
Buxarries, 90

Cadets, Australasian, 337
Cadets, Gentlemen, Victoria, 345
Cadets, Victoria, 337
Cadets, Victorian, 337, 345
Camel Corps, First, of Modern Warfare, 55
Campbell, Lieut., 19th M.N.I., 156
Canada, 189—238
Canada, Constitution of Force, 193
Canada, Defences of, 192, 193
Canada, General List of Regiments, 239—241
Canada, Governor-General's Body Guard of, 220
Canada, Imperial Troops in, 242
Canada, Uniforms and Colours, 236
Canadian Cavalry, 245, 246
Canadian Cavalry, Opinion on, 243
Canadian Engineers, 249, 250
Canadian Infantry Militia, 250—282
Canadian Militia Artillery, 246—249
Canadian Rebellion of 1837, 208
Canadian Regiment of Artillery, 243
Canadian War of 1812, 198—208
Cape Mounted Police, 295
Cape Mounted Rifles, 288, 289
Cape Regiments, 326
Cape, The History of, 283—287
Carrington, Sir F., 295, 300, 326, 328
Carrington's Horse, 295, 301, 302, 328
Cashmere Gate, Bengal Engineers at, 87
Cavalry, Indian, Achievements of, 41
Cavalry, Madras, 131—136
Central Indian Horse, 81, 82
Ceylon, 5
Ceylon Regiments, 40, 369
Channer, Major, 1st Goorkhas, 117
Charasiah, Goorkhas at, 119
Charrie Yarie Battalion, 98
Chasseurs Canadiens, 256
Chateauguay, Battle of, 206
Cheetoo, 48
Clark, Miss, Pretoria, 317
Clarke Walpole, 2nd B.N.I., 175
Clery, Lieut., Forest Rangers, 365
Clive, Robert, taken Prisoner, 129
Coke's Rifles, 123
Colonial Assistance to the Empire, 40, 348—352
Colonial Defence Force, New Zealand, 360, 361
Colonial Empire, 4
Cook, Captain, 5th Goorkhas, 126
Constabulary, Armed, New Zealand, 335, 368, 369
Craun-ka-Pultan, 103
Cross, Maltese, Significance of, 370
Cubitt, Lieut., Regiment of Lucknow, 108
Cullen, Ensign, 1st West Indian Regt., 11
Cureton's Horse, 68
Cut Knife Hill, Battle of, 226

Daly, Lieut., 1st Punjaub Cavalry, 77
Danagher, Trooper, Nourse's Horse, 322
D'Arcy's Horse, 301, 317
Daunt, Lieut., 11th B.N.I., 105
Defences, Australasian, 355
Deolee Irregular Force, 82, 126
Disney, Major, on Victorian Forces, 352
Dominica, 5
Downie, Capt. H., 1st West Indian Regt., 8
Dubrai, Defence of, 181
Duck Lake, 218
Dufferin, Lord, on Canada, 282
Dupleix, M., 91
Durban Mounted Rifles, 304

Eccles Hill, 255
Egyptian Campaign, Australian Participation in, 348—352
Egyptian War, Australian Contingent, 350
Eighteenth (Alipore) Bengal Native Infantry, 109
Eighteenth Bengal Lancers, 70
Eighth Bengal Cavalry, 58
Eighth Bengal Native Infantry, 103
Eighth Bombay Native Infantry, 178
Eighth Madras Native Infantry, 148
Eleventh Bengal Native Infantry, 104
Eleventh Madras Native Infantry, 152
Eleventh (Prince of Wales' Own) Bengal Cavalry, 63
Engineers, Bengal, 86
Engineers, Canada, 249, 250
Erinpoorah Irregular Force, 82, 126

Faithfull Family, Murder of, 340
Fane's Horse, 70
Fenian Invasion of Canada, 251
Fereira's Horse, 301
Ferozeshah, 49
Ferozepore Sikhs, 106
Fifteenth Bengal Cavalry (Cureton's Mooltanees), 68
Fifteenth Bengal Native Infantry, 107
Fifteenth Madras Native Infantry, 155
Fifth Bengal Cavalry, 56
Fifth Bengal Native Light Infantry, 100
Fifth Bombay Cavalry (Jacob-ka-Risala), 171
Fifth Bombay Native Light Infantry, 177
Fifth Goorkha Regiment, 125
Fifth Madras Native Infantry, 146
Fifth Punjaub Infantry, 125
Fifth Punjaub Cavalry, 81

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Fifty-sixth Bengal Native Infantry (former), 96
First Bengal Cavalry, 50
First Bengal Native Infantry, 92, 96
First Bengal Native Infantry (former), 90
First Bengal Native Infantry (former), Services of, 92
First Bombay Lancers, 166
First Bombay Native Infantry (Grenadiers), 173
First Goorkha Regiment, 117
First Madras Lancers, 134
First Madras Native Infantry and Pioneers, 142
First Punjaub Cavalry, 77
First Punjaub Infantry, 122
First Sikh Cavalry, 63
First Sikh Infantry, 121
First West Indian Regiment, 6
Fish Creek, 223
Fitzgerald, Capt., 12th B.N.I., 179
Fitz-Herbert, Humphrey, claims Cape, 283
Flint, Lieut., 14th M.N.I., 154
Florida, 5
Forest Rangers, 361
Fort Pitt, 231
Fortieth (Shahjehanpore) Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Forty-fifth Bengal Native Infantry, 116
Forty-fourth Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Forty-second Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Forty-third Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Fosberry, Lieut., 1st P.I., 123
Fourteenth Bengal Cavalry, 67
Fourteenth Bengal Native Infantry, 106
Fourteenth Bombay Native Infantry, 180
Fourteenth Madras Native Infantry (Wahab), 153
Fourth Bengal Cavalry, 55
Fourth Bengal Native Infantry, 98
Fourth Bombay Cavalry, 169
Fourth Bombay Native Infantry Rifle Corps, 176
Fourth Goorkhas, 119
Fourth (Madras) Light Cavalry (Prince of Wales' Own), 136
Fourth Madras Native Infantry, 146
Fourth Punjaub Infantry, 124
Fourth Sikhs, 122
France, Wars with, 5
Frog Lake, Massacre at, 231
Frontier Armed and Mounted Police, (Cape) 290, 291
Frontier Light Horse, 301, 302, 311
Frontier Light Horse, Officers of, 303
Fusiliers of London, Canada, 220

Gandier, Trooper, Weatherley's Horse, 310
Gibraltar, 5
Gibson, Trooper, Colonial Defence Force, New Zealand, 362
Gifillan Family, Murder of the, 356
Gill, Sergeant, 15th B.N.I., 107
Gillis-ka-Pultan, 90
Glengarries, The, 203
Gold Coast Artillery Corps, 40
Gold, Discovery of, Australia, 341—344
Goorkha Regiments, 117—119
Goorkha Light Infantry, 116
Goorkhas, The, 36
Gough's Horse, 301, 328
Governor's Body Guard, Bombay, 165
Governor-General's Body Guard, India, 48
Governor's Body Guard, Madras, 131
Governor-General's Foot Guards, Canada, 250
Grenada, 5
Griqualand West, Operations in, 327
Guadana, Battle of, 293
Guiana British Military Forces, 369
Guides March to Delhi, 74
Guides (Queen's Own), Corps of, 73
Guttrie-ka-Pultan, 98

Halifax Artillery, 220
Halifax Battalion of Rifles, 269—271
Hall, Volunteer, Mounted Rifles, 323
Hamilton Volunteers, 212
Harrel, Capt., Bechuanaland Volunteers, 328
Hartley, Surgeon-Major, C.M.R., 296
Hazara Goorkhas, 125.
Heaphy, Capt., Auckland Volunteers, 361
Herchmer, Col., N.W. Mounted Police, 281
Hilliard-ka-Pultan, 99
Hills, Lieut., B.H.A., 85
Hodson, Major, 61, 62
Hodson's Horse, 58—63
Hong Kong Military Forces, 369
Horse Artillery, Bengal, 84
Huntingdon Borderers, Canada, 265
Hurford, Major, Taranaki Militia, 362
Hyderabad Contingent, 128
Hyderabad Cavalry Contingent, 82

Ibeka, 293
Inderbir Lama, 2nd Goorkhas, N.S.
India, British acquisition of, 13—17
Indian Army, Achievements of, 23—32
Indian Army, Composition of, 18—22
Indian Cavalry, 41, 42
Indian Regiment, Cavalry, Establishment of, 22
Indian Regiment, Infantry, Establishment of, 22
Infantry School Corps, Canada, 244
Inhlobane, Battle of, 307
Inns, Lieut., Bengal Engineers, 87
Irregulars, Indian, 31

Jacob's Rifles, 188
Jamaica Military Forces, 369
Jamaica, Rebellion in, 11
Jansin-kee-Pultun, 100
Jâts, The, 37
Jellalabad, Heroism of Sepoys at, 95

Kaffrarian Rifles, 314
Kaiiwai Cavalry, 369
Kaitake, 362
Kaffir Police, 289
Kemaoon Battalion, 118
Khelat i-Ghilzie Regiment, 105
King, Mr.; his Ride, 286
Kingston Artillery, 220
Kingston Military College, 234
Kirkee, 13th Bomb.N.I. at, 179
Kororareka, Capture of, 355
Kyne-ke-Daheena Pultan, 101

Lal Kahn, 3rd Bombay Cavalry, 168
Lal Pultan (Red) Regiment, 90
Lincoln Battalion, Canada, 262
Lincoln Regiment, 205
Lingard, Trooper, Wanganui Cavalry, 368
Longton, Beauharnois Militia, 206
Lonsdale's Horse, 301, 311
Loodianah Sikhs, 107
Lower Canadian Rebellion, 208
Loyal Association, 341
Lucknow, Defence of, 108
Lucknow, Regiment of, 108
Lundy's Lane, Battle of, 207

Macgregor, Lieut., Fane's Horse, 71
Macgregor's Leap, 356
Madras Army, 127
Madras Army, History of, 127—142
Madras Artillery, 136
Madras Cavalry, 131—136
Madras, Governor's Body Guard, 131
Madras Infantry, 139—142
Mahomed Shereef, Subadar-Major, 20th B.N.I., 182
Mahoetahi, Battle of, 360
Mahratta Horse, 70
Malagrah, Disastrous Expedition of West India Regiment against, 9
Malcolmson, Lieut., 3rd Bombay C., 168
Malcolm's Royal Rangers, 6
Malta, Knights of, 369, 370
Malta Military Forces, 369
Malwah Bheel Corps, 126
Malta, 5
Mangalore, Bombay Sepoys at, 24
Maories, Arms of, 358
Marie-Galante, Isle of, 1st West Indian at, 8
Marine Battalion, Bombay, 182
Matthews-ka-Pultan, Services of, 94
Matthews-ka-Pultan, 92
Mauki Stockade, Fight at, 360, 361
Meer Munsoor, Madras Sepoy, 122
Melbourne Rifle Regiment, 333
Methuen's Horse, 301
Meywah Bheel Corps, 126
Mhaiwana Battalion, 127
Midland Battalion, 220
Military Settlers, New Zealand, 363
Minorca, 5
Mira's Regiment of Foot, 12
Moodkee, 49
Moore, Lieut., 3rd Bombay C., 167
Morosi's Mountain, 298
Moose Mountain Scouts, 220
Morris, Surgeon, 1st West Indian Regt., 11
Montreal Garrison Artillery, 220
Mounted Infantry, Canada, 244
Mounted Police, Australia, 343
Mounted Police, Frontier Armed and, 290
Mounted Police, North-West of Canada, 279—281
Mounted Rifles, Victoria, 353
Mount Royal Rifles, 220, 272
Murray's Jât Cavalry, 67
Mutiny, Indian, 18
Mutiny, Indian, Origin of, 34

Napier of Magdala, Lord, Bengal Engineers, 87
Napier, Sir C., Comparison of European and Indian Cavalry, 38
Natal, Annexation of, 287
Natal Carabineers, 304, 305, 311
Natal Hussars, 304
Natal Light Horse, 303
Natal Military Forces, 288
Natal Native Horse, 305
National Debt, 4
Neelwur-ka-Pultan, 92
New Brunswick, 5
Newfoundland Company, 40
Newfoundland, 5
New South Wales Contingent, 350
New South Wales Contingent; Action of Colonial Government, 351, 352
New South Wales Military Force, 332
New Zealand Forces, 355
New Zealand Forces at Poverty Bay, 366
New Zealand Military Force, 335
Ngapata, 369
Nineteenth Bengal Cavalry, 70
Nineteenth Bengal Infantry (former), 49
Nineteenth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 109
Nineteenth Bombay Native Infantry, 180
Nineteenth Bomb.N.I. in Afghanistan, 181
Nineteenth Madras Native Infantry, 156

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

" Ninety-six " Fort, 7
Ninth Bengal Cavalry, 58
Ninth Bengal Native Infantry, 104
Ninth Bombay Native Infantry, 178
Ninth Madras Native Infantry, 150
Nixon, Col., Colonial Defence Force, 362
Nordenfeldt Battery, Victoria, 354
Northcroft, Ensign, Forest Rangers, 367
North-West Rebellion, Canada, 217
Nourse's Horse, 301, 315, 320
Nova Scotia, 5
Nunn, Major, 1st West Indian Regt., 7

Ochterlony-ka-Pultan, 96
O'Connell, Captain, 1st West Indian Regt., 3
O'Neil, The Fenian, 212—217
Ontario Rifles, 213
Opotiki Rangers, 368
Orange Walk, Gallantry of 1st West Indian at, 11, 12

Papineau, Louis, 208
Patea Bush Rangers, 367
Pathans, The, 37
Peacock Throne, The, 15
Pelletier, Lieut., Voltigeurs de Quebec, 259
Peons, Madras, 131
Perambancan, 23
Permanent Corps, Canada, 235
Persia, Gulf of, Operations in, 183
Plassey, 23
Police, Bechuanaland, 326, 330
Police, Border, Australia, 341
Police, Frontier Armed and Mounted, (Cape), 290—300
Police, Indian, 35
Police, Mounted, Australia, 340
Police, North-West Mounted, Canada, 279
Police, North-West Mounted, Composition of, 279
Poona Horse, 169
Portland Island Company, 40
Precedence of Regiments, Canada, 236
Pretoria Rifles, 315
Pretoria Carabineers, 315, 319
Probyn, Dighton, 63
Probyn's Sikhs, 63, 64
Punjaub Cavalry, Description of, 79
Punjaub Cavalry, 73
Punjaub Frontier Force, 119—126
Punjaub Frontier Artillery, 86
Punjaub Infantry, 109—115

Quebec Artillery, 220
Quebec Cavalry School Corps, 243
Quebec Rifles, 213
Quebec School of Cavalry, 220
Queen's Own Rifles, Canada, 220, 251
Queensland Military Force, 333
Queenstown Heights, 199

Raaf, Commandant, 324
Rachpal Singh, 4th Sikhs, 122
Rajpoots, The, 36
Rattray's Sikhs, 116
Red River Expedition, 212—217
Rennie, Col., Bengal Artillery, 85
Ridgeway, Battle of, 251
Riel, Rebellion of, 215—217
Rifles, Mounted, Victoria, 353
Roberts, Sir F. S., Bengal Artillery, 85
Rocky Mountain Rangers, 220
Royal Canadian Rifle Regiment, 237
Royal Canadians, 237
Royal Grenadiers, Canada, 220, 259
Royal Scots of Canada, 257
Ruakatura, 369
Runjeet Singh, Havildar 3rd Bombay C., 168
Rushton, Private, Forest Rangers, 367

Salaberry, Colonel De, 205
Sanctuary, Capt., Pret. Carabineers, 322
Sampson, Capt., Nourse's Horse, 318
Sappers and Miners, Bengal, 86
Sappers and Miners, Bombay, 173
Sappers and Miners (Madras) (the Queen's Own), 138
Sappers and Miners, Madras, Description of, 139
School of Cavalry, Quebec, 235
School of Infantry, Canada, 220
Scott, Capt., 4th Sikhs, 122
Scott, Murder of, 215
Scott, Sergeant, C.M.R., 297
Scratchley, Sir Peter; Scheme of Defence, 338
Second Bengal Cavalry, 51
Second Bengal Native Infantry (former), Gallantry of Native Officer in, 94
Second (The Queen's Own) Bengal Native Infantry, 97
Second Bombay Lancers, 166
Second Bombay Native Infantry (Prince of Wales' Own Grenadiers), 173
Second (Prince of Wales' Own) Goorkha Regiment, 118
Second Madras Lancers (Stevenson Pater), 134
Second Madras Native Infantry, 143
Second Punjaub Cavalry, 80, 81
Second Punjaub Infantry, 123
Second Sikh Cavalry, 65
Second (Hill) Sikh Infantry, 121
Second West Indian Regiment, 12
Secord, Mrs., Service rendered by, 205
Seetabuldee, Madras Body-Guard at, 132
Sepoy Army, 16—18
Seringapatam, Sepoys at, 24
Seventeenth Bengal Cavalry, 70
Seventeenth (Loyal Poorbeah) Bengal Native Infantry, 109
Seventeenth Bombay Native Infantry, 180
Seventeenth Madras Native Infantry, 156
Seventh Bengal Cavalry, 58
Seventh Bombay Cavalry, 171
Seventh (Duke of Connaught's Own) Bengal Native Infantry, 103
Seventh Bombay Native Infantry, 177
Seventh Madras Native Infantry (Cooke), 148
Seven Years' War, 5
Shah Jehan, 86
Shekhawattee Battalion, 106
Shilling, Andreas, Claims Cape, 283
Short, Major, Canadian Artillery, 244
Sikh Infantry, First, 121
Sikh Regiments, 151
Sikhs, The, 36
Simcoe Rangers, 220
Singapore Military Forces, 369
Sirmoor Battalion, 118
Sixteenth Bengal Cavalry, 70
Sixteenth (The Lucknow) Bengal Native Infantry, 108
Sixteenth Bombay Native Infantry, 180
Sixteenth Madras Native Infantry (Lane), 156
Sixth (Prince of Wales') Bengal Cavalry, 57
Sixth Bengal Cavalry, Capture of Zagazig by, 58
Sixth Bengal Native Light Infantry, 101
Sixth Bombay Cavalry (Jacob-ka-Risala), 171
Sixth Bombay Native Infantry, 177
Sixth Madras Native Infantry (Mackenzie), 147
Sixth Punjaub Infantry, 125
Sleitenkvon, Capt. Von, Frontier Horse, 308
Smyth, American General, 202
South Australia Military Force, 334
South Carolina Regiment, 6
Stanger Rifles, 304
Stapp, Captain, Taranaki Militia, 357
St. Charles, Defeat of Rebels at, 210
St. Christopher Military Forces, 369
St. Eustache, Defeat of Rebels at, 210
St. Helena Regiment, 40
Stono Ferry, 6
St. Vincent, 5
Sylhet Light Infantry, 115

Taranaki Militia, 357—362
Taranaki Mounted Volunteers, 360
Taranaki War, 1850, 356
Tasmanian Forces, 337
Tasmanian Military Force, 336
Te Matata, 363
Tempsky, Col., Death of, 368
Tenth Bengal Cavalry, 58
Tenth Bengal Native Infantry, 104
Tenth Bombay Native Light Infantry, 178
Tenth Madras Native Infantry, 151
Te Putahi, 367
Thackeray, Lieut., Bengal Engineers, 87
Third Bengal Cavalry, 52
Third Bengal Cavalry, Loyalty of, in Mutiny, 52, 53
Third Bengal Native Infantry, 98
Third Bombay Lancers (Queen's Own), 166
Third Bombay Native Light Infantry, 176
Third Goorkhas, 118
Third (Madras) Light Cavalry (Murray), 135
Third Madras (or Palmacottah) Light Infantry, 144
Third Punjaub Cavalry, 80, 81
Third Sikh Infantry, 121
Thirteenth (Duke of Connaught's) Bengal Cavalry, 66
Thirteenth Bengal Native Infantry, 106
Thirteenth Bombay Native Infantry, 179
Thirteenth Madras Native Infantry (Allock), 153
Thirtieth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 114
Thirtieth Bengal Native Infantry, (former), 95
Thirtieth Bombay Native Infantry (3rd Belooch Battalion), 188
Thirtieth Madras Native Infantry, 162
Thirty-eighth (The Agra) Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Thirty-fifth Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Thirty-fifth Bengal Native Infantry (former), 95
Thirty-first (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 114
Thirty-first Madras (or Trichinopoly) Light Infantry (Jeannerett), 163
Thirty-fourth Bengal Native Infantry (Pioneers), 115
Thirty-ninth (Allygurh) Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Thirty-second Madras Native Infantry (Dyce), 163
Thirty-second (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry (Pioneers), 115
Thirty-seventh Bengal Native Infantry (former), 95
Thirty-seventh Bengal Native Infantry (The Dogras), 115
Thirty-sixth Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Thirty-third (Allahabad) Bengal Native Infantry, 115
Thirty-third Madras Native Infantry (Wahab), 163
Tobago, 5

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Tomason, Capt., on the Cape Irregulars, 302
Tombs, Major, B.H.A., 85
Topasses and Mistices, 127
Toronto, Queen's Own, 212
Transvaal Rangers, 311, 313
Transvaal War, Australian offers of Service, 348
Trinidad, 5
Trinidad Rifles, 369
Trout River, 265
Turu Turu Mokai, 368
Twelfth Bengal Cavalry, 65
Twelfth Bengal Native Infantry, 105
Twelfth Bombay Native Light Infantry, 178
Twelfth Madras Native Infantry, 153
Twentieth Bombay Native Infantry, 181
Twentieth (Duke of Cambridge's Own) (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 110
Twentieth Madras Native Infantry, 157
Twenty-eighth Bombay Native Infantry, 187
Twenty-eighth Madras Native Infantry (Martin), 162
Twenty-eighth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 114
Twenty-fifth Bombay Native Light Infantry, 185
Twenty-fifth Madras Native Infantry (Kenny), 160
Twenty-fifth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 113
Twenty-first Bombay Native Infantry, 182
Twenty-first Bomb.N.I., Loyalty of at Kurachi, 184
Twenty-first Madras Native Infantry, 158
Twenty-first (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 110
Twenty-fourth Bombay Native Infantry 185
Twenty-fourth Madras Native Infantry (Macdonald), 160
Twenty-fourth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 113
Twenty-ninth (Duke of Connaught's Own) B. N. I. (2nd Belooch Regiment), 187
Twenty-ninth Madras Native Infantry, (Macloud), 162
Twenty-ninth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 114
Twenty-second Bombay Native Infantry, 184
Twenty-second Madras Native Infantry (Dalrymple), 159
Twenty-second (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 111
Twenty-seventh Bengal Native Infantry (former), 94
Twenty-seventh Bombay Native Light Infantry (1st Belooch Regiment), 186
Twenty-seventh Madras Native Infantry (Lindsay), 161
Twenty-seventh (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 114
Twenty-sixth Bombay Native Infantry, 186
Twenty-sixth Madras Native Infantry (Innes), 161
Twenty-sixth (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 113
Twenty-third Bombay Native Infantry, 184
Twenty-third Madras (or Wallajahbad) Native Infantry, 159
Twenty-third (Punjaub) Bengal Native Infantry, 112

Ulundi, Advance on, 312
Uys, Piet, Death of, 309

Victoria Cadets, 337
Victoria Military Force, 333
Victoria Mounted Rifles, 353
Victorian Forces, 352
Victorian Royal Volunteer Artillery Regiment, 333
Victoria Rifles (Cape), 304
Victoria Rifles of Canada, 255
Voltigeurs de Chateauguay, 274
Voltigeurs, 205
Vosper, Trooper, Colonial Defence Force, New Zealand, 362
Vousden, Maj., 1st Punjaub Cavalry, 79

Waikato Militia, 363
Wakkerstroom, 316
Walsh, Sergt., Defence Force, New Zealand, 366
Wandiwash, Battle of, 141
Wanganui Bush Rangers, 367
Warren, Sir C., 327
Waterkloof, The, 290
Watson, Lieut., 1st Punj. Cav., 77, 78
Weatherley, Col., 307, 309
Weld, Sir Frederick, on Unorganised Defence, 339
Wellesley-ka-Pultan, 149
Wellington Rifles, 368
Wells, Lieut., at Umzuitzani, 294
West Coast Operations, New Zealand, 367
Western Australia Military Force, 335
West Indian Regiment, 6
West Indian Regiments, Heroism of, at Baddiboo, 11
West Indian Regiment, 1st, Trophies of, 8
White, Private, Forest Rangers, 367
Wilson, Lieut., Military Settlers, New Zealand, 366
Winnipeg Light Infantry, 220
Winnipeg Rifles, 276—278
Wolseley, Lord, on New South Wales Contingent, 350
Woudley, Major, 19th Bomb.N.I., 181
Wright, Trooper, Wanganui Cavalry, 368

York and Caledonian Volunteers, 212
York Rangers, 220
York Volunteers, Canada, 200
Younge's Horse, 136

THE END.

PRINTED BY J. S. VIRTUE AND CO., LIMITED, CITY ROAD, LONDON.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

SOLD TO SUBSCRIBERS ONLY.

Complete in Six Volumes, cloth gilt, red burnished edges, at 12s 6d. each.

THE ILLUSTRATED
GLOBE ENCYCLOPÆDIA

NEW EDITION, REVISED AND CORRECTED.

WITH SEVENTY-TWO FULL-PAGE STEEL AND COLOURED PLATES, &c.

EDITED BY

JOHN M. ROSS, LL.D.

LATE SENIOR MASTER OF ENGLISH LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE, HIGH SCHOOL OF EDINBURGH.

THE ILLUSTRATED GLOBE ENCYCLOPÆDIA, revised up to date, claims to be a standard work of Universal Knowledge, combining accuracy of information with the highest literary excellence, and, without in any way sacrificing the number of articles or extent of information, at a price far below that of any other existing Encyclopædia.

The favourable reception with which the work has been received, both by the public and the press, is the best possible assurance that it meets a much-felt want.

It is scarcely possible, nowadays, for any person, whatever his position in life, to dispense with an Encyclopædia. The professional man, the teacher, the merchant, the manufacturer, the tradesman, the clerk, the working-man, each requires a book which will give information on the multifarious subjects that are continually arising in the course of reading the daily paper or in ordinary literature; and since even the best informed may be said to be familiar with only an extremely limited range of subjects, a work of such wide scope and comprehensive character must be invaluable to all alike, in shedding light upon the many hard problems in every branch of human knowledge.

To many, however, the chief obstacle to the possession of an Encyclopædia has been the great cost of such works; and, although all classes of literature are now readily accessible in the form of cheap re-issues, no attempt has hitherto been made to offer to the public a high-class work of general information at a low price, so as to bring it within the reach of all classes, however moderate their means. The present work claims to supply this need.

The articles in the various departments have been contributed by writers familiar with the results of learned research, scientific investigation, and literary culture. Subscribers to "THE ILLUSTRATED GLOBE ENCYCLOPÆDIA" may therefore feel satisfied that they will be possessors of a work that will give them accurate information upon every imaginable subject; and should they wish to follow up the subject more fully, particulars are given as to the best authorities for this purpose.

Subjects treated in the articles include—

Agriculture.	Ethnology.	Literature.	Natural History.
Antiquities.	Finance.	Logic.	Natural Philosophy.
Architecture.	Geography.	Mathematics.	Navigation.
Astronomy.	Geology.	Mechanics.	Philosophy.
Biography.	History.	Medicine.	Politics.
Botany.	Industries.	Metaphysics.	Statistics.
Chemistry.	Language.	Meteorology.	Theology.
Engineering.	Law.	Music & Painting.	Trade.

And the Common Objects and Institutions of everyday life.

CONDITIONS OF PUBLICATION.

THE ILLUSTRATED GLOBE ENCYCLOPÆDIA of Universal Knowledge is published in Six Volumes of 600 pp. each, handsomely bound in cloth, red edges, at 12s. 6d. each.

The whole work contains about 3,620 pages of Letterpress, and 72 full-page Plates.

The size of the Work is Demy Quarto. **The issue is sold to Subscribers only.**

LONDON: J. S. VIRTUE & CO., LIMITED, 294, CITY ROAD.

G.E.—I.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

SUPPLIED TO SUBSCRIBERS ONLY.

In Two Vols., Quarto, at 21s. each; or in Four Divisions, cloth gilt, gilt edges, at 10s. 6d. each or in Fifteen Parts at 2s. each.

HER MAJESTY'S ARMY.

A DESCRIPTIVE ACCOUNT

OF THE

VARIOUS REGIMENTS NOW COMPRISING THE QUEEN'S BRITISH REGULAR AND VOLUNTEER FORCES, FROM THEIR FIRST ESTABLISHMENT TO THE PRESENT DATE.

By WALTER RICHARDS.

Illustrated with a Series of Coloured Plates

FROM PICTURES PAINTED SPECIALLY FOR THIS WORK BY WELL-KNOWN MILITARY ARTISTS.

AT the present time, when the country's warlike capacities are being discussed by newspapers, politicians, and the military profession, an account at once popular and authentic of the forces which go to make up our "Second Line of Defence," cannot but prove of interest. Beyond the fact that the Army is roughly divided into Cavalry, Artillery, and Infantry, that the three branches are divided into regiments, and that some of these regiments have magnificent and picturesque uniforms, it is doubtful whether the general public knows much about the Army of which it is so proud.

In issuing the present work, the Publishers believe it will supply a long-felt want of a Regimental History at once authentic and popular, and which to service men and civilians will be valuable as an interesting and reliable work of reference.

Each regiment has its individuality, its history, its traditions, its legends; and it is the consciousness of this inheritance that has often turned impending defeat into brilliant victory, and made the—

"Facing fearful odds"

the usual conditions under which British troops fight—and conquer. These histories, legends, and traditions will form an attractive feature in this work on "HER MAJESTY'S ARMY."

A considerable portion of the work will be devoted to the Auxiliary Forces of the Crown. An account of the origin and progress of the Volunteer movement, with the history of each of the regiments which compose our Citizen Army, will be given, and some of the more important of the suggestions which the present movement of public opinion has called forth will be recorded.

The coloured plates with which the work is illustrated will delineate the uniforms and general appearance of the officers and men of the regular and auxiliary forces of the present time, and the name of the artist is a sufficient guarantee that these illustrations will *not* be of the conventional kind painfully familiar to all, but will be of intrinsic merit, not only as works of art, but as absolutely faithful representations of the subjects they portray.

It is difficult to single out any class as the one to which such a work as "HER MAJESTY'S ARMY" most forcibly appeals. To all who personally or through relatives are more directly interested its usefulness is obvious. To the student of politics who sees at work giant forces—as yet but dimly visible—of whose force and tendency none can be certain, this history of what strong leaders of men have done by means of organized forces in troublous days of old will be invaluable. To all who are proud of their country and its history, and who believe that in the records of the past can be read the promise of the future, it is impossible to mention any work that will appeal with greater force than "HER MAJESTY'S ARMY."

CONDITIONS OF PUBLICATION.

The Work is complete in Fifteen Parts at 2s. each; or in Five Divisions at 6s. each; or in Four Divisions at 10s. 6d. each; or in Two Vols. at 21s. each.

Each Part contains Forty-eight Pages of Letterpress, and Two Coloured Illustrations. Each 6s. Division contains One Hundred and Forty-four Pages, and Six Coloured Illustrations. Each 10s. 6d. Division, One Hundred and Seventy-six Pages, and Eight Coloured Illustrations. Each Volume, Three Hundred and Sixty Pages and Fifteen Coloured Illustrations.

The size of the Work is Demy 4to. The issue is sold to Subscribers only.

NO ORDER WILL BE RECEIVED FOR LESS THAN THE ENTIRE SET.

LONDON: J. S. VIRTUE & CO., LIMITED, 294, CITY ROAD.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

SUPPLEMENTARY VOLUME TO HER MAJESTY'S ARMY.

In 8 Parts, Quarto, at 2s. each; or in 2 Divisions, cloth, gilt edges, at 10s. 6d. each; or in one Volume, cloth gilt, gilt edges, at 21s.

HER MAJESTY'S ARMY:

INDIAN AND COLONIAL FORCES.

A DESCRIPTIVE ACCOUNT

OF THE

VARIOUS REGIMENTS NOW COMPRISING THE QUEEN'S FORCES IN INDIA AND THE COLONIES.

By WALTER RICHARDS.

Illustrated with a Series of Coloured Plates

FROM PICTURES PAINTED FOR THIS WORK BY CAPTAIN H. BUNNETT.

THE phrases "Greater Britain," "Imperial Federation," and their synonyms come glibly to men's tongues, especially now, when throughout the length and breadth of Her Majesty's Empire is there a movement—here strong, here tentative—towards the consolidation of the Defensive Forces of the vast possession. The truism, for example, that Her Majesty, the "Defender of the Faith," is a mighty Mohammedan potentate, is familiar from having been made a verbal shuttlecock of sectarian politics, but other claims might with equal right be adduced: myriads who erst acknowledged the tyrannical sway of the Lords of Delhi, now devote their allegiance to the Empress of India; Cypriote, Boer, the fierce Maori, the warlike Zulu, are amongst the feudatories of the Queen of Great Britain. And in far climes—in "that isle of continent," beneath "the loyal pines of Canada" and the burning sun of Africa, have sons of Britain seized and held territories, which could contain our island a dozen times. Over all floats the Flag of England, and everywhere around that flag have been, and still are, grouped stalwart defenders, sprung from the soil of the daughter nations or tributary realms. Some of these defenders have annals gloriously familiar to all—the forces of Australia, of Canada, of Cape Town, the splendid Indian regiments, the highly-trained local corps which have from time to time proved their value and efficiency in many a distant province of the realm—these have each and all their history, which must needs be of most genuine interest.

It is proposed to give an account of these "Indian and Colonial Forces of Her Majesty's Army." As the biography of a statesman throws clearer light on the political history of his time, as the life of a great warrior brings into more defined relief the conduct of his campaigns and the methods of his victories—so, it is believed, will the annals of the local Forces of Her Majesty's dominions awaken redoubled interest and pride in our heritage—the most magnificent and far-stretching empire the world has ever known.

The work, which will be illustrated by an artist exceptionally well qualified for the task, will be completed in eight parts, and will, it is believed, be unique in the chronicles of the time. The question of Imperial Federation is becoming daily more urgent; a knowledge of the military history, in its *individual* and *personal* aspect, of the various colonies and dependencies, must of necessity be of incalculable value to a correct appreciation of the principles involved.

CONDITIONS OF PUBLICATION.

The Work will be completed in Eight Parts at 2s. each.; or in Two Divisions, cloth gilt, gilt edges, at 10s. 6d. each; or in One Volume, cloth gilt, gilt edges, at 21s.

Each Part will contain Forty-eight Pages of Letterpress, and Two Coloured Illustrations. Each 10s. 6d. Division will contain One Hundred and Eighty Pages, and Eight Coloured Illustrations. The volume, Three Hundred and Sixty Pages, and Sixteen Coloured Illustrations.

The size of the Work is Demy 4to.

The issue is sold to Subscribers only.

☞ NO ORDER WILL BE RECEIVED FOR LESS THAN THE ENTIRE SET.

LONDON: J. S. VIRTUE & CO., LIMITED, 294, CITY ROAD

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

SOLD TO SUBSCRIBERS ONLY.

DEDICATED, BY PERMISSION, TO THE WORSHIPFUL COMPANY OF FRUITERERS.

In Six Divisions, cloth, gilt edges, at 10*s.* 6*d. each; or in Three Volumes at* 21*s. each.*

THE FRUIT GROWER'S GUIDE.

By JOHN WRIGHT, F.R.H.S.

WITH COLOURED ILLUSTRATIONS BY MISS MAY RIVERS.

A PRACTICAL work, containing all the requisite details for the successful cultivation of the various kinds of fruit that are grown in this country, both under glass and in the open air, has become a necessity of the times.

The Fruit Grower's Guide will be serviceable to all persons who have an interest in the production of Fruit; including, amongst others, proprietors of estates, farmers, and gardeners, to whom sound knowledge on the subject is essential; amateurs of various grades and with differing means; owners or occupiers of suburban and country gardens large and small; tradesmen who have land, allotment holders, &c.; in fact, to all growers of fruit either for home use or commercial purposes.

The work will be embellished with forty-three Coloured Plates and three Vignettes, in which upwards of one hundred of the choicest and most useful varieties of fruit will be faithfully and artistically portrayed by Miss May Rivers. These will embrace selections of apples, apricots, cherries, currants, grapes, figs, gooseberries, oranges, melons, nuts, nectarines, peaches, pears, plums, raspberries, strawberries, &c.

The work will further contain about two hundred diagram Illustrations by Mr. Worthington G. Smith and Mr. George Shayler, representing: (*a*) The structure of roots, leaves, flowers, and fruit; (*b*) The draining of land and formation of borders; (*c*) Plans of fruit gardens and orchards; (*d*) Methods of raising trees by cuttings, layers, budding, and grafting; (*e*) Planting, protecting, and supporting trees; (*f*) Pruning, summer and winter, root and branch; (*g*) Training and shaping trees; (*h*) Plans of various glass structures, showing approved methods of heating and ventilation; (*i*) Fruit rooms and stores; (*j*) Thinning, preserving, and packing fruit; (*k*) The insect and fungoid enemies of trees and fruit; and all other essential details for enabling the important subject of fruit culture and distribution to be understood even by the inexperienced.

Particulars will be given on the Soil—its preparation and improvement; Manures—their uses and application, including surface dressings, liquid manure, and mulching; climatic conditions in respect of frost, dew, light, temperatures, ventilating, syringing, &c.; sites and shelter for gardens and orchards, with instructions for their formation; also the renovation of old gardens and orchards, descriptive particulars of planting, shaping, and training from the maiden to the fruiting tree; protecting buds, blossom, and fruit, also its thinning, gathering, and storing; selections of fruits for various soils and districts, with the forcing of all kinds of fruit, so as to maintain an unbroken succession for home use, or for meeting the ever-growing demands of the great centres of population.

The descriptive routine operations will be founded on experience, based on scientific principles, and therefore will guide safely and to a successful issue all who are favourably circumstanced for growing fruit, and who carry out the instructions intelligently.

Every care has been taken by the Publishers to make the Fruit Grower's Guide the most comprehensive and complete practical work on the subject that has hitherto been published.

CONDITIONS OF PUBLICATION.

The Work will be completed in Six Divisions, cloth, gilt edges, at 10s. 6d. each; or in Three Volumes at 21s. each.

Each Division will contain One Hundred and Seventy-six pages of Letterpress and about Eight Coloured Illustrations. Each Volume, Three Hundred and Sixty pages and Fifteen Coloured Illustrations.

The size of the Work is Demy 4to. The issue is confined to Subscribers, and supplied by the Publishers' Agents only.

LONDON: J. S. VIRTUE & CO., Limited, 294, CITY ROAD.

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain
Digitized by UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
Original from UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

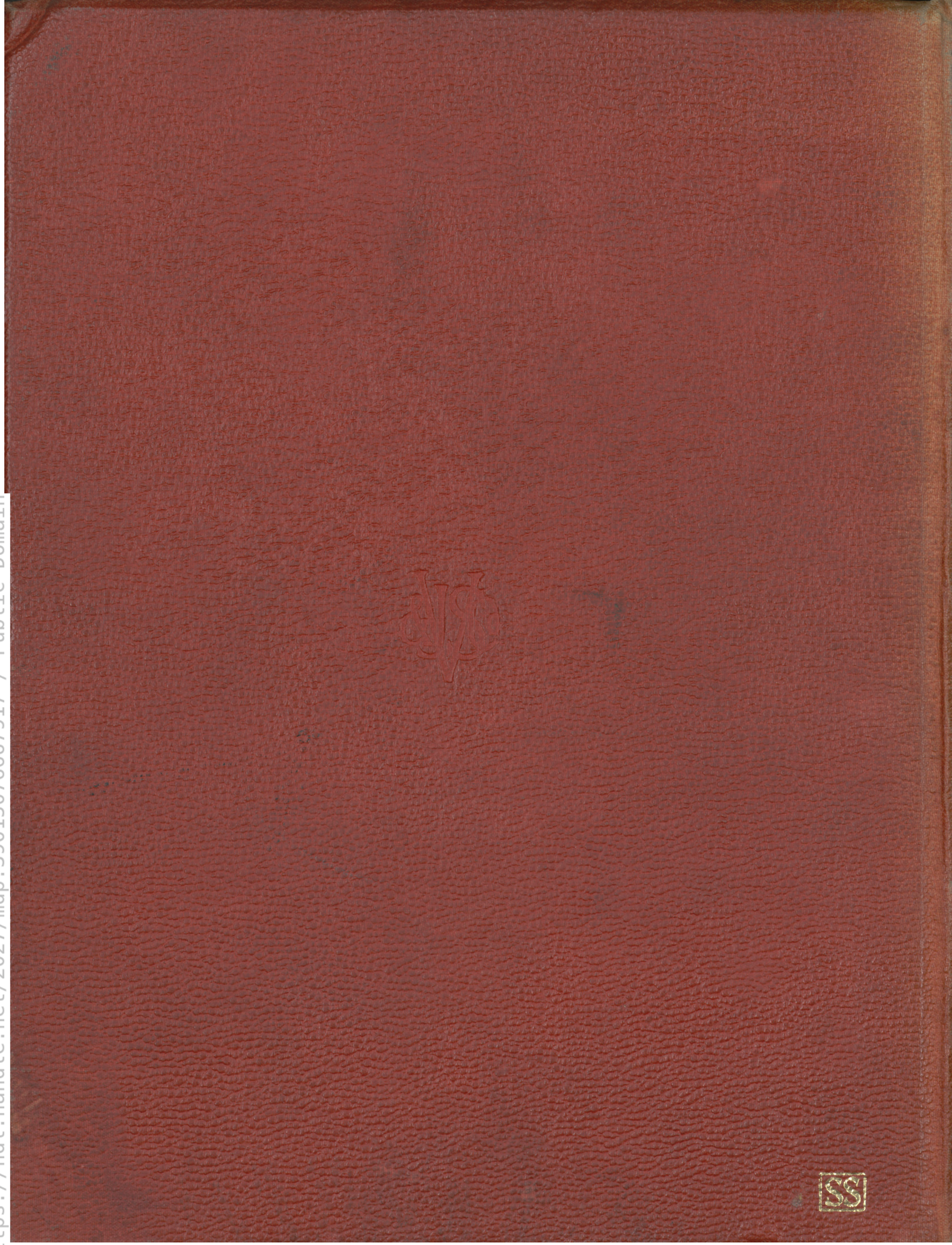
Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
3 9015 07666 7917

Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN



Generated through HathiTrust on 2025-12-20 09:25 GMT
https://hdl.handle.net/2027/mdp.39015076667917 / Public Domain

Digitized by
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

Original from
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN